



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



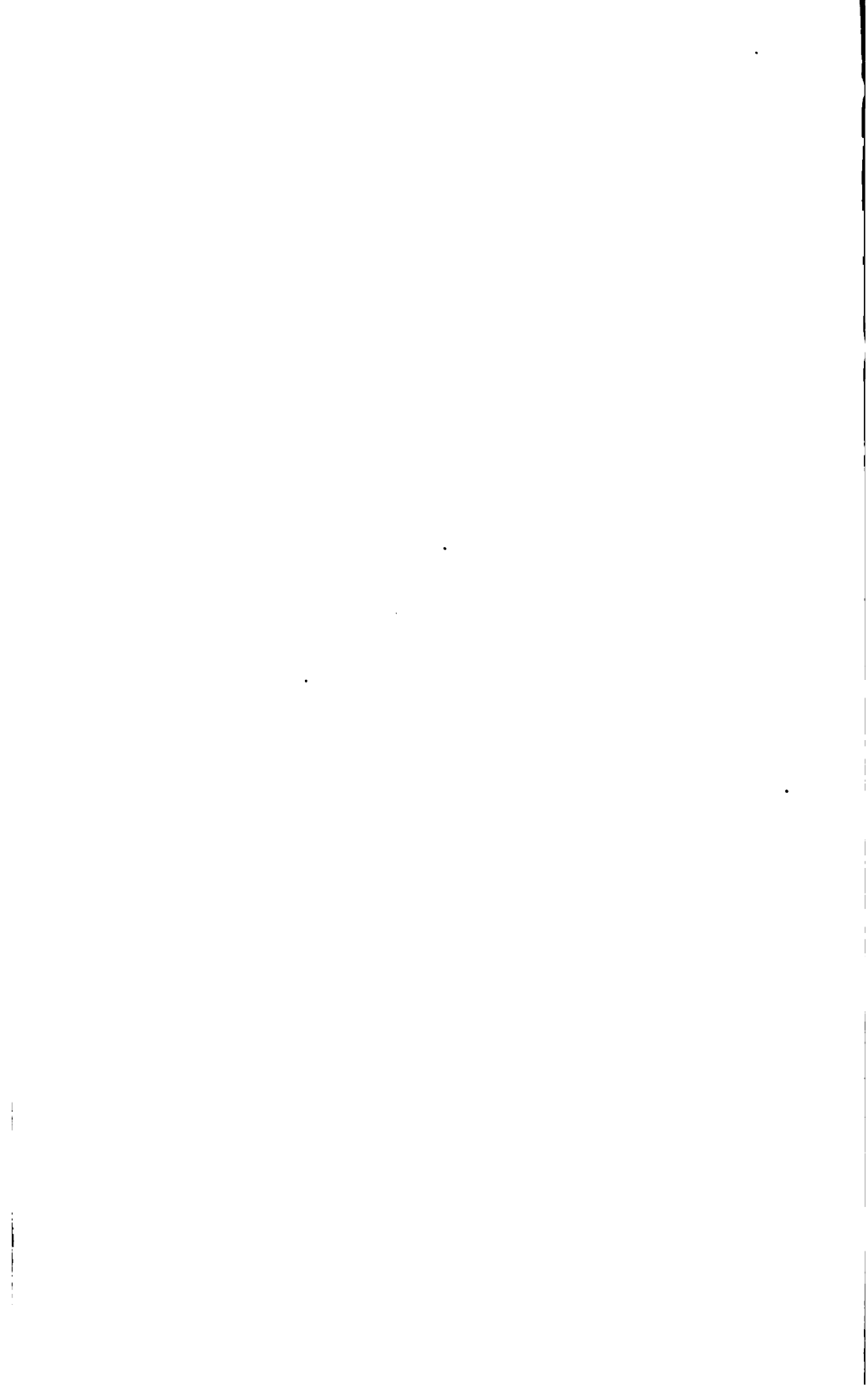












**DRAMATISTS OF THE RESTORATION.**

---

**D'AVENANT.**

*Printed for Subscribers only.*

450 copies Small Paper.

150 „ Large Paper.

30 „ Whatman's Paper.

4 „ Vellum.

---

Whatman Paper, No.

THE ~~DRAMATIC~~  
WORKS OF WILLIAM D'AVENANT.

WITH PREFATORY MEMOIR AND NOTES.

11338

VOLUME THE FIFTH.



MDCCCLXXIV.

EDINBURGH: WILLIAM PATERSON.  
LONDON: H. SOTHERAN & CO.



## CONTENTS.

	Page
THE MAN'S THE MASTER, . . .	1
THE LAW AGAINST LOVERS, . . .	109
THE RIVALS, . . . . .	213
MACBETH, . . . . .	295
THE TEMPEST, . . . . .	395
ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA, . . .	523





**THE MAN'S THE MASTER.**

**v.**

**A**

*The Man's the Master; A comedy, written by Sir William D'Avenant, Knight. In the Savoy; Printed for Henry Herringham, at the Blew Anchor, in the Lower Walk of the New Exchange. 1669, 4to.*

*The same in the folio edition of Sir William D'Avenant's works. 1678.*

*The Man's the Master; A Comedy, in Five Acts, as now performed at the Theatre-Royal, Covent Garden; written by Sir William D'Avenant. London: Printed for T. Evans, in the Strand, near York Buildings. 1775. 8vo.*

This play was acted in our author's lifetime, with great applause, though not published till after his decease. The design and a portion of the language is borrowed (without hope of return, as is usual in such cases) from Scarron's "Jodelet, ou le Maistre Valet," and part from his "L'Heritier ridicule."

The materièl of which this piece is composed has been variously used by Le Sage, Colley Cibber, and latterly by O'Keefe in his *Castle of Andalusia*.

It was first produced at Lincoln's-Inn-Fields on the 26th March 1668, and was the last new play performed there, as well as being the last play Sir William D'Avenant ever wrote, "he dying presently after, and was buried in Westminster Abbey, near Mr Chaucer's monument, our whole company attending his funeral. The comedy in general was very well performed, especially the Master by Mr Harris."—*Downes*. Harris acted Don John, and Underhill Jodelet. The epilogue was sung by Harris and Sandford as two street ballad singers. Geneste remarks—"This is a good comedy by D'Avenant. It was revived at Lincoln's-Inn-Fields 15th July 1726, and at Covent Garden 3d November 1775. It is the only one of D'Avenant's sixteen plays which has been acted for years."

"15th July 1726.—Not acted twelve years, 'Man's the Master.' Don John by Milward; Loveworth, Chapman; Belinda, Mrs Grace from Dublin. Acted four times."

On the production of this piece at Covent Garden on 3d November 1775, some slight alterations were made, it is believed by Woodward. These appear as footnotes in the present edition. The following version of the song was substituted for that of Don John towards the end of the third act, and was sung by Bettria, Mrs Mattocks.

The comedy, which was thus cast, was again acted four times:—

Don John, Mr Lewis; Jodelet (his servant) Mr Woodward; Don Lewis, Mr Wroughton; Stephano (his servant), Mr Lee Lewis; Don Ferdinand, Mr Dunstall;

Sancho (his steward), Mr Quick ; Isabella, (daughter to Don Ferdinand), Miss Leeson,\* her first appearance there ; Bettris (her woman), Mrs Mattocks ; Lucilla (sister to Don John), Mrs Bulkley.

## SONG.

BETTRIS.

I.

The bread is bak'd,  
The embers are rak'd,  
And the lads and the lasses are cooing ;  
Let us laugh and carouse,  
For none in the house  
Can disturb us in what we are doing.  
Then let us have posset, and posset again,  
And hey for the maids, and ho for the men !

II.

The cloister-bells ring !  
Sad dirges they sing,  
Whilst we spend the night in laughter and love ;  
Our time we employ  
In mirth and in joy,  
Leave discord and care to our betters above.  
Then let us have posset, and posset again,  
And hey for the maids, and ho for the men !

III

Dispatch it away  
Before it be day,  
'Twill quickly grow early when it is late ;  
A health then to thee,  
To him and to me,  
And all who love beauty and business hate.  
Then let us have posset, and posset again,  
And hey for the maids, and ho for the men !

In connection with one of the earlier performances of "The Man's the Master," Downes has this note :—"Mr

\* Subsequently married to Mr Lewis, who acted her lover in this piece.

Cademan in this play, not long after our company began in Dorset Garden, his part being to fight with Mr Harris, was unfortunately, with a sharp foil, pierced near the eye; which so maim'd both his hand and his speech, that he can make but little use of either; for which mischance he has received a pension ever since 1673, being 35 years ago." Cademan, it is supposed, was also a bookseller.

Of Harris and Sandford, the original representatives of Don John and Don Lewis, notices will be found in the introduction to "Juliana," in the first volume of Crowne's Works in the present series. Cave Underhill, the original Jodelet, was, according to Colley Cibber's account, "a correct and natural comedian." His peculiar excellence was in stiff, heavy, stupid characters, such as Obediah in the "Committee," and Lolpoop in "The Squire of Alsatia." In ridiculous parts, Sir Sampson Legend, and Justice Clodpole, in "Epsom Wells," for instance, he met with great favour, and his Gravedigger in "Hamlet" was much applauded.

Underhill's last performance in London was on 12th May 1710, when he took a benefit. The play was D'avenant and Dryden's alteration of the *Tempest*, in which he played Duke Trincalo, his original character. He acted again and for the last time, at Greenwich, on 26th August in the same year, under the management of Pinkethman. The play was the *Rover*: "Ned Blunt, by the famous true comedian, Cave Underhill, to oblige Pinkethman's friends; with an Epilogue by Pinkethman on an ass."

There is a letter from Leigh to Underhill, and one from Underhill to Leigh among Toun Brown's *Letters from the Dead to the Living*.

Although Cibber and Downes assert that Underhill was a good actor, Anthony Aston, says of him, that he was more admired by the actors than the audience, that his few good parts were: The Gravedigger, in *Hamlet*; Sancho Panca, in the 1st part of *Don Quixote*; Ned Blunt the Host in the Villain; and more especially Lolpoop. Aston further observes, "he was six feet high and corpulent, his face long and broad, his nose flattish and short, his upper lip thick, his mouth wide, and his chin short, his voice was churlish and his action awkward. He would

often leap up with both legs at a time when he conceived anything waggish; and afterwards hug himself at the thought. Tho' he was much cried up in his time, yet he was so stupid as not to know why."

Downes in 1708 says: "Sir William D'Avenant, 40 years ago, judged Underhill the truest comedian in his company."—Underhill performed Sir Morglay Thwack, and subsequently Cutter in the Wita.

The folio edition of "The Man's the Master" is a reprint of the 4to. edition, slightly abbreviated.

PROLOGUE.

---

1.

No country lady ever yet did ask  
Such shrewd advice before a ball or masque,  
When curious dressing is the court's great task,

2.

As now young poets do, in this nice age,  
To gain the froward lovers of the stage ;  
Whose heat of humours nothing can assuage.

3.

The Muse, disdain'd, does as fond women do ;  
Instead of being courted she courts you :  
But women are less valu'd when they woo.

4.

And as young poets, like young ladies, fear  
A concourse, great as this assembly here,  
Till they seek counsel how they should appear,

5.

So all old poets, like old ladies, may  
Be more afraid to venture the survey  
Of many apt to censure their decay.

6.

Both know they have been out of fashion long ;  
And, ere they come before a shining throng,  
Would dress themselves by patterns of the young.

7.

Well, our old poet hopes this comedie  
Will somewhat in the fine new fashion be ;  
But, if all gay, 'twould not with age agree.



8.

A little he was fain to moralize  
That he might serve your minds as well as eyes :  
The proverb says, "Be merry and be wise."

9.

This, gentlemen, is all he bad me say  
Of his important trifle, call'd a play ;  
For which, he does confess, you dearly pay.

10.

But he did fear that he could hardly make  
A prologue so in fashion as might take,  
For he does much of too much boldness lack.

11.

He never durst, nor ever thought it fit,  
To censure those who judges are of wit.  
Now you expect the rhyme will end in pit.

THE PERSONS REPRESENTED.

DON FERDINAND, *Father to Isabella.*  
DON JOHN, *Suitor to Isabella.*  
DON LEWIS, *his Rival.*  
SANCHO, *Steward to Don Ferdinand.*  
JODELET, *Servant to Don John.*  
STEPHANO, *Servant to Don Lewis.*  
ISABELLA, *Daughter to Don Ferdinand.*  
LUCILLA, *Sister to Don John.*  
BETTRIS, *Isabella's maid.*  
LAURA, *Lucilla's maid.*

*The Scene—MADRID.*

*And in one House.*



## THE MAN'S THE MASTER.

---

### ACT I. SCENE I.

*Enter LUCILLA, and LAURA with a dark lanthorn.*

LUC. You have served me but two days, and are you weary already?

LAU. Pray add the nights to the days; for I have not slept since I came into your service.

LUC. Love has ordain'd us for these journeys; and will, I hope, bring us at last where we may rest quietly.

LAU. Yes, to the last inn of all travellers, where we shall meet worms instead of fleas. Lovers never rest quietly till they lodge at the sign of the grave.

LUC. Prithee be patient, Laura.

LAU. If I had been waiting-woman to Will of the Wisp, I could not have wander'd with so much uncertainty as when I follow a mistress led about by love.

LUC. But, Laura, I follow you now.

LAU. You may with ease enough, when I'm so tir'd that I can go no further. This is the pretty foot belonging to a leg, which, though I say't, was fit to lead a dance in Hymen's hall.

LUC. And does it limp now, and grow weary of the errands of two days?

LAU. You have little reason to blame that leg which has been so nimble in your service; but the other will follow it no further. Methinks it has got a shackle instead of a garter. [*She limps a little.*]

*Enter SANCHO with a dark lanthorn.*

LUC. Take heed, Laura ! I see light.

LAU. Why, what would you see—darkness ? Are not your eyes made for the light ?

LUC. 'Tis a man ! he seems to seek somebody with a lanthorn.

LAU. He seeks me here by appointment.

LUC. I'll retire to this portico.

LAU. Do, whilst I accost him.

LUC. What is he ?

LAU. 'Tis Sancho, Don Ferdinando's steward ! he was my sworn brother over a posset ; he is, by the length of his beard and the heat of his constitution, a very goat.

LUC. For heaven's sake lose no time !

LAU. You need not fear his loss of time ; I use to call him my brother Brevity ; he is so thrifty of his speech, that his tongue does seldom allow his thoughts above two words to express them.

SAN. Laura !

LAU. Are not you my brother Sancho ?

SAN. I am.

LAU. Have you contriv'd a way to conceal my lady in your master's house ?

SAN. Yes.

LAU. Can you admit her now ?

SAN. No.

LAU. May it be to-morrow ?

SAN. It may.

LAU. I'll attend you in the morning.

SAN. Do.

LAU. Pray name the hour.

SAN. Nine.

LAU. My mistress is very sensible of your care, and would know if I may have leave to give you this gold ?

SAN. You may.

LAU. I hope you hate not me, nor the present.

SAN. Neither.

LAU. Are we both acceptable?

SAN. Both. [*He looks on the gold.*]

LAU. 'Tis very gold! and Signior Sancho you shall find me to be as true metal as it.

SAN. I'll try.— [*Offers to kiss her.*]

LAU. Not so soon, good Signior Sancho. Bring me to the wedding night, and then try, if, like gold, I can endure the touch.

SAN. Humph!

LAU. Lovers may pretend to have true metal, but marriage is the touch-stone.

SAN. Of fools. [*Aside.*]

LAU. Hands off, good Signior Sancho. You want sleep. Good night! Pray let me go!

SAN. Pass! [*Exit Sancho.*]

LAU. Come, madam, we may hasten home. Nine is the appointed hour when you shall have admittance.

LUC. After I have sought opportunity, I am afraid to find it.

LAU. Madam, I do not yet understand your intrigues of love. You are afraid to find the opportunity you seek, and I, poor wretch, seek more opportunities than I fear I shall find.

LUC. Lord help thee! thou dost want a great deal of sorrow to make thee a little wise. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter DON JOHN and JUDELET.*

JOD. Sir, by your favour, you are either mad, or the devil is malicious to bring you to Madrid, at so unseasonable an hour, after riding post, or rather flying, without meat or drink, as empty as wild hawks, and as uncertain of your quarry.

D. JOHN. I confess thou may'st be tir'd all over

all but thy tongue, and that can never be weary. The street where we are now is that which I have sought.

JOD. What will you do here ? Go, see Don Ferdinand when 'tis past midnight !

D. JOHN. Yes, and this very night I'll visit Isabella.

JOD. 'Tis ill to have an empty stomach, but worse to have an empty head.

D. JOHN. Jodelet ! I know you are hungry, but hunger makes you fitter for watching. I'll not stir out of this street till I see my mistress.

JOD. Remember 'tis past one, a season when Don Ferdinando's gates are always shut. We have ridden this morning from Burgos. I know no kind of lovers but owls would have chosen the night for a journey.

D. JOHN. To love nothing but sleep, and eating, is to be a beast in the habit of a serving-man.

JOD. How I hate raillery !

D. JOHN. And I eating and sleep, in comparison of this picture of Isabella.

JOD. You are one of those who are fill'd with wild-fire at sight of a cold picture ; and if Master Painter has luckily drawn a snout of ivory and a mouth of coral, which perhaps does inclose an ill tongue and worse teeth ; then he makes you mad of a mistress. Will a picture reveal whether her crooked body be arm'd with a coat of mail, or whether she be some skeleton whose beauties lye at night upon her dressing-cloth ? you'll not be much pitied if men find you ill provided of a woman, since you'll be gull'd with one before you have seen her.

D. JOHN. Thou art as froward at this time o' th' night as a wak'd child.

JOD. Wou'd any man keep patience about him

when he must run in the dark from street to street, and grope out his way like a blind man without a dog? or stand so long under a balcony (lifting himself upon one leg to stare higher about him)\*, till he shift his feet as often as a stork?

D. JOHN. Jodelet!

JOD. Don John!

D. JOHN. My picture was rarely drawn; and sure it could not chuse but please my mistress.

JOD. I know the contrary.

D. JOHN. What say'st thou?

JOD. I tell you it has rather displeas'd her.

D. JOHN. How the devil can'st thou know that?

JOD. Alas! I know it too well.

D. JOHN. Ha! tell me how?

JOD. Good sir, have patience! Instead of your picture, she received mine.

D. JOHN. Traitor! 'tis well thou dost not use to speak truth, for else I should search for thy life in the very bottom of thy bowels.†

JOD. You may, sir, and begin at my throat; but in piercing my body, I pray spare my doublet, for I made it new at Burgos.

D. JOHN. Pox of your raillery! Tell me what thou hast done?

JOD. Sir, put your anger up first.

D. JOHN. I never had so much cause to let it out. But speak! and let not fear fright truth from thee.

JOD. Sir, when we left Flanders——

D. JOHN. Well, proceed!

JOD. You having your brother kill'd, and a sister carried away by stealth, not knowing where, nor

\* This sentence in brackets is in the edition of 1775 put in italics, as though it were a stage direction.

† This altered, in same edition, to "In every atom of thy vile carcass."



how, nor wherefore, nor by whom—you rode so fast that you left all your judgement a great way behind you.

D. JOHN. To what purpose, villain, dost thou open these two wounds? Proceed apace to thy picture.

JOD. Sir, I go as fast as I can; but your anger interrupts me so, that I'm fain sometimes to go back to recover my tongue, though I have nothing within me but what is much to the purpose.

D. JOHN. Why dost thou not render it in few words?

JOD. I cannot, sir, for I always speak things in order, but for your picture which I had e'en forgot—

D. JOHN. Was ever man so tir'd with the tedious length of nothing?

JOD. We were but newly return'd to Castile when Don Ferdinand de Rochas propos'd his daughter to you in marriage: her picture was made a present to you, and the offer of twenty thousand crowns in portion, and then you, t'enchanted her with your own picture as much as you were charm'd by hers, made haste to send her it: and so, as the proverb says, put an old cat to an old rat. It was a lover's stratagem, and villanously subtle. But Heav'n, not always a friend to lovers, ordain'd a success in spite of expectation.\*

D. JOHN. Art thou about the history of the world: and wilt thou not finish it till the world ends?

JOD. Yes, sir! but I must refresh my memory, for it is almost weary.

D. JOHN. I would thy tongue were so too.

JOD. You remember that your painter, in thankfulness for the great reward you gave him, would,

\* In folio—"Contrary to your expectation."

after he had drawn your picture, take a little pains about mine.

D. JOHN. I know that : but proceed !

JOD. Then you likewise know it cost me nothing. Well, that Fleming's a brave man. None of your Jan Van Lievens, nor your Elshamers, nor your Brauwars, nor your Joos Van Winghens ever drew like him. Then give him but a rummer, over a pickled herring, and he will drink so kindly, as if he had the heart of a whale.

D. JOHN. Wilt thou never conclude ? Hast thou sold, burnt, eat, or drank my picture ? Have I it yet, or was it sent to Isabella ? Speak and be quick !

JOD. If you have not patience to stay awhile rather than hear ill news, but will needs ride post to overtake the devil, I will leave Flanders and go the nearest way to the purpose.

D. JOHN. Still wilt thou be tedious ?

JOD. Nay, sir, since you love unwelcome brevity, know when I was to send away the last packet, I would, being a little curious, compare the workmanship of my picture with yours. I set them opposite to one another, turning my eyes often from this to that, and, being call'd for in haste by the post-boy, I put my little picture in the packet instead of yours.

D. JOHN. How ? yours instead of mine ?

JOD. Sir, your picture had the happy laziness to stay here ; but mine was destin'd to ride post with the devil to your mistress.

D. JOHN. Canst thou live, or I either, after I have heard this ?

JOD. Good sir, make use of patience as I did. Time, which wears out sorrows as well as joys, has since th'unhappy accident given me a few quiet nights, and I have ceas'd to grieve for fear of being sick.

D. JOHN. Dog ! What will she say of thy horn-face, and of thy badger's nose ?

JOD. Alas, Sir ! she will not think you very handsome, I mean in my picture ; but if we were both our own painters we should not want beauty.

*Enter STEPHANO.*

D. JOHN. Peace ! there comes one who perhaps knows Don Ferdinand's house ; Go, ask him !

JOD. But sir——

D. JOHN. Well, speak low !

JOD. Perhaps he'll expect a reward if he tells us. In Madrid you must hold out your money if you do but ask what's a clock.

D. JOHN. Unlucky rogue, would he would cudgel thee.

JOD. He has not leisure to do it ; he seems in haste.

STEPH. Who goes there ?

JOD. Not to displease you, sir, where dwells. Don Ferdinand ?

STEPH. This is his house.

JOD. Are we in the right already ? For this bout my master has reason, the father-in-law is found ; and the son-in-law-elect has nothing to do but to knock.

STEPH. I begin to find myself a fool for having shew'd them where my master is secretly entered, and wheuce I expect he'll presently come forth. I must find some expedient.

JOD. Does he dwell here ?

STEPH. Yes, but he is sick, and does not love noise. What are you ?

JOD. We, sir, are night-walkers ; or rather men of Norway, a northern-country where he is curs'd who does not sleep continually. For my part I

never sleep. And that's my master, sir, the greatest waker in the world.

STEPH. Or rather the greatest robber. He shall give me satisfaction for what he lately took from me; I know him well enough, and you were with him.

JOD. You are very choleric, and I think somewhat mad. If I were so too, you would have little safety but in flying. Sir, as sober as I am, I can scarce keep my hand from my hilt. (*To Don John.*) Sir! Sir! advance a little! I begin to grow soft, and, were it not dark, I should appear somewhat pale too.

D. JOHN (*to Steph.*) Approach, Sir! Come on towards me. I'll make you civil!

STEPH. How, Don of the dark, are you so brisk but I shall take the pains to drive you a mile hence: for though you are two—would I were rid of 'em—, if you dare follow me as fast as I'll lead the way, ye shall come to a better place for fighting.

D. JOHN. Say you so, Sir! I'll follow you! Stay! I hear a noise. It seems to be above us.

JOD. Pox on this choleric cur! if his barking had not frightened me, I had, perhaps, without any danger, broke his very bones. But whence the devil comes that other devil!

[*D. Lewis descends from the balcony.*]

D. LEWIS. Stephano!

JOD. They are going.

D. JOHN. Sure that's his man whom he calls: he who gets way before us.

D. LEWIS. Either I am much cousen'd, or I am watch'd. But the noise of a quarrel will fright Isabella. In care of her I must neglect my honour. Let's steal away, since it must be so!

[*Exeunt Don Lewis, Stephano.*]

D. JOHN (*to Jod.*) Stay, or thou art dead! Stay but one thrust!

JOD. My master has mettle, but I'm no touchstone to try it on.

D. JOHN. Give me thy name, or I'll take thy life !

JOD. I am Don Jodelet of Segovia.

D. JOHN. Three curses on thee, and a thousand on him that leapt from the balcony. What's become of him ?

JOD. He flew through the dark like lightning, and I, like a furious fool, followed him like thunder, till the invisible rogue threaded a lane as narrow as a needle's eye. Well ! I'm the Hercules whom you always expose against two. You are a little prompt, but by your leave, Master, is it the custom of Madrid to scape thus out of a window ?

D. JOHN. Did'st thou perfectly discern him ?

JOD. Yes !

D. JOHN. I am amaz'd !

JOD. And I, if it were possible, am quite confounded !

D. JOHN. I must not here take up a quarrel at the first bound.

JOD. Methinks your mind is a little troubled.

D. JOHN. It is ! and I have much cause, but let's consult upon't.

JOD. That's well said ; I never found my self so much inclin'd to reasoning, and, if you please, let's consult soundly.

D. JOHN. I was born at Burgos ; left poor. But of a long\* race exempted, even as far as my self, from all disgraces.

JOD. Very well !

D. JOHN. At my return from the war to Burgos, I found my self attack'd with two different evils : I had a brother murder'd, and was rob'd of a sister ; though she was bred with all the cares of

\* In folio—" Noble."

honour. And this makes me exceeding cholerick.

JOD. That's ill ! very ill ! exceeding ill !

D. JOHN. Don Ferdinand chose me for a husband to Isabella ; and she has receiv'd thy picture instead of mine.

JOD. That's not very ill !

D. JOHN. We treated of this business in secret ; and I took horse for Madrid, where I now arrive late at night.

JOD. That's a little ill !

D. JOHN. Without seeking out a lodging my love leads me directly hither.

JOD. That's a little too soon !

D. JOHN. I met before Don Ferdinand's house a serving-man who thrusts me, by design, upon an Almain quarrel.

JOD. That's very true ! But somewhat unwillingly, like a coward as he is.

D. JOHN. Perhaps 'twas for fear of scandal ; for he did not approach us like a coward.

JOD. How did the unlucky thief come then ?

D. JOHN. He came on like the lover of Isabella.

JOD. That's very ill !

D. JOHN. 'Tis that which will wound my head more than his sword.

JOD. Let's fall to to reasoning again.

D. JOHN. Ah ! no more reasoning, when reason grows superfluous. But, prithee, mark the counsel which love suggests to me. My hope lies in thee. To-morrow, my dear Jodelet, thou must pass for my master, and I for thy man. Thy picture is to work miracles. What ail'st thou ? Dost thou shake thy ears ?

JOD. These kind of disguises smell too much of the cudgel. I'd rather proceed to reasoning again. For what will the world say ? Don John is grown the man, and Jodelet the master, and by ill fortune

too ; for perhaps, at last, your mistress may love me, and I her.

D. JOHN. Fear not that ; for then the mischief will be mine : but I, being Jodelet, may get acquainted with my rival's man. I'll be a lover from the kitchen to the garret ; and my presents shall open the locks of every bosom : whilst thou shalt shine in gold chains like the king of Peru, without having any share of my sorrows.

JOD. I begin to like the invention.

D. JOHN. Thou shalt be feasted and cramm'd at Don Ferdinand's, whilst I am chok'd with my jealousies.

JOD. But may I not, to represent Don John the better, give your shoulders now and then a taste of the cudgel ?

D. JOHN. Yes, when we are all alone, without witnesses.

JOD. Well ! Vermechulli shall my palate please,  
Serv'd in with bisques, ragouts, and entermeta.  
Wait close upon Don Jodelet thy master ;  
And thou mayst be my carver, or my taster,  
If thou dost fetch me girls, and watch, and trudge  
well,

Thou shalt have food, if not, thou shalt have cudgel.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II. SCENE I.

*Enter ISABELLA, BETTRIS.*

ISAB. Bettris, make up your packet,\* without thinking to reconcile me by long tattle. I'll have no more of you.

BET. Truly, Mistress, I'm ignorant of the cause of your anger.

\* "Pack."—In folio.

ISAB. You know it not?

BET. If I do, may I never be haunted again by men of honour.

ISAB. 'Tis no matter! I dismiss you.

BERT. Well, my conscience is clear. But if I have ever failed to serve you, may I burst like a boil'd pudding for want of pricking. But let flatterers go fine while truth must be shut out o' doors and walk naked.

ISAB. Yes, Dame Bettris, you are innocent? you have not opened my balcony to-night, nor have walkt bare-footed to make less noise?

BET. Alas! is that it? I left your lac'd linen drying on a line, and went into the garden for fear some body should steal it.

ISAB. Yes, and you discourst with my linen: my ears deceiv'd me, I did not hear you talk?

BET. Perhaps I was at prayers.

ISAB. What, so loud?

BET. Yes, that Heav'n might hear me.

ISAB. And 'twas no man, but my linen, that leapt down from my balcony.

BET. Pray do not believe it.

ISAB. I saw it, Bettris!

BET. Ah, my dear mistress, it is true. But Don Lewis——

ISAB. O Heaven! how that name hurts me! Was it Don Lewis?

BET. Yes, madam, your fair cousin.

ISAB. My fair cousin! Thou black wretch! for what design had he admittance?

BET. If 'tis a great sin to be charitable you have cause to be angry. But if you will but hear me speak——

ISAB. You may speak long enough before I believe you.

BET. 'Twas last night when that delicate Don



Lewis came to see you, and because it rain'd I let him into the hall ; and much against my will, for I am tender of scandal : but the poor man, being impatient, went up, and presently after I heard your father Don Ferdinand spit aloud, for he always coughs when he spits, and will be heard far enough. I'll warrant him as sound as any man of Madrid.

ISAB. Well, proceed to the ill purpose !

BET. At this noise Don Lewis sav'd himself in your balcony, which he found half open, and I lockt him in till you arrived with the old man ; with whom you discours't too long, and made Don Lewis impatient again.

ISAB. Troth we were very uncivil to him.

BET. I stay'd till you were a-bed ; and then, being in my nature always inclin'd to charitable deeds, I went to free him from his imprisonment.

ISAB. Good heart !

BET. He said he must needs speak with you one moment, but, I warrant you, I was sharp enough, and told him plainly that your curtains were drawn.

ISAB. That was severe indeed !

BET. I saw tears fall from his eyes, and at the same time felt a few pistoles drop into my hand. He conjur'd me with such sweet words ; calling me, my heart, my dear Bettris, and then put on my finger a diamond-ring ; which did so vex me, that I was ready to fly in's face.

ISAB. That had been too cruel !

BET. Nay, not but that his suff rings wrought me again into pity ; for truly I cannot hate the man. But in your int'rest I know no body.

ISAB. I thank you, good Mistress Bettris !

BET. But when he saw I was so much in earnest, that my face was all fire——

ISAB. He saw the flushing of your anger though

it were dark ; but indeed all kind of fire is most visible at night.

BET. He leapt from the balcony into the street ; where I heard them cry, kill ! kill ! and this is the notable cause of your putting me away.

ISAB. Well, you'll forgive me, if I must needs be to blame.

BET. I built my happiness upon your marriage. But if my zeal to serve you were known to Don John, who they say is come to town, I should hope for as ill success as I have now.

ISAB. How ? Don John, too ? the man I fear and most abhor. After my rage against Don Lewis do you think to assuage me with the mention of Don John ? Fare you well, maid of honour ! let me see you no more.

BET. Let the devil take Don Lewis who is the cause of this. *[Exit Isabella.]*

*Enter DON FERDINAND at the other door.*

FERD. What's the matter Bettris ? are you weeping ?

BET. Your daughter, Sir, has dismissed me from her service ; and for nothing, Sir, but for wishing her favourable opinion of Don John, because he deserves it, and you desire it.

D. FERD. That's a small cause for your dismissal ; but I'll endeavour to reconcile you. Bid your mistress come hither. *[Exit Bettris.]* They have often little quarrels ; sometimes for a curl disordered, or a black patch mis-placed ; and more often they differ in expounding of dreams ; but this is no time for expulsion of servants. If Don John D' Alverad come, who is expected to-night, I'll throw away my staff, which is my third leg, and with my other two lead 'em a dance.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

ISAB. Sir, you are perhaps contriving my marriage with Don John ; but I hope you'll ordain me a death less cruel.

D. FRED. Minion! you are for some unexperienc'd gallant that never travell'd but Northward, and that was to observe the variety of flaxen hair, and to bring home periwigs for presents at Court; who spends the morning in tiring good men with the repetition of ill verses, and in the afternoon lies stretched out at length in his open gilt coach, like the image of laziness drawn in triumph through the city——The baggage laughs when I would have her weep.

ISAB. Sir, you have reason to be angry, but I've as much cause to laugh when I behold this picture of a suitor so deform'd that he seems ridiculous.

D. FERD. You judge of a man by his picture; let me see it!—How the devil have I baited my hook at court, that I have been six months a fishing for this cods-head? Yet many have told me that Don John d'Alverad was a person highly esteem'd.

ISAB. If he had been tolerably handsome, your command might be obey'd.

D. FERD. Well, however, you shall promise me to use him civilly, and then I'll find a remedy for your grief.

*Enter LUCILLA, veild.*

But here comes a lady that will not shew her self. I wonder who let her in, and would not first ask, whether we would be visible? Madam, without seeing your face, or enquiring your name, you may freely command me!

LUC. Don Ferdinand, I expect no less from your civil reputation. I come to you for refuge, and

beseech you without any witness I may tell you my misfortunes.

FERD. You may. Daughter retire! [*Exit Isabella.*]

LUC. I would I could so express my griefs that you might find some excuse for my faults. But if you could number my tears perhaps you would confess that my eyes have been sufficiently punished by my crimes.

FERD. This stranger has no ill behaviour.

LUC. Sir! let me embrace your knees, and not rise from mine till I obtain that succour which I hope you will afford me.

FERD. This style is somewhat romantic. My foolish daughter never read romances, but, for my part, I esteem Amadis and all such ancient and discreet records of love and honour. Madam, you seem not a person to whom a gentleman should refuse any thing.

LUC. Sir! I must then give you the trouble of knowing my race, and of hearing my misfortunes. My race you will easily know, for my dead father often told me that he had made a friendship with you at Rome, and that you are a person both obliging and brave.

FERD. I owe him much for that character, and shall be ready to pay the debt to you.

LUC. Sir! Burgos is the town where I receiv'd my first being, and unfortunately the flames of love. My mother died at my birth, and my father deceas'd soon after, when he perceiv'd the misfortune of my love. His name was Diego d'Alverad. He bred me with great care and bounty, and he had much hope of my infancy; but alas! it was a false hope. My two brothers were no less cherish'd by him, and I as much by them; with whom I happily liv'd. But oh, how love did change my destiny!

FERD. A thousand curses take that devil love ! it embroils us all.

LUC. A stranger who came to see the triumphs at Burgos did in those tournaments appear to have no equal. We first saw one another in an assembly ; I was courted by him, and did endure his courtship, or rather I was charm'd by him. He pretended to love me, and I lov'd him ; but now, Sir, let my tears speak for me.

FERD. Sure all lovers were born in April : they never mention sun-shine without a shower after it. This may teach me to marry my daughter to some gentleman whom she does not love. But, madam, pray proceed !

LUC. The rest is fatal, sir, and full of shame ! Alas my fault depriv'd me of a brother, and my afflicted father soon died after him. My passion had so overmaster'd my reason, that I still ador'd my unfaithful lover, whose return to Burgos I did two years vainly expect, and at last found that I was cruelly forsaken : and then I forsook my kindred, and, cursing fatal love, am hither guided by madness to seek that false man whom more than justly I ought to hate.

FERD. Is not this sufficient to teach parents to marry their daughters without any least mention of love ? Madam, how the devil could you be couzen'd with love ?

LUC. Alas, sir ! he told me he would be faithful. But women shou'd never believe that beauty can sufficiently oblige the hearts of men, especially if men be so handsome as to prevail on women.

FERD. I am glad Don John's picture renders him ugly.

LUC. Oh Don Ferdinand ! I am a fearful example for having too much believ'd a cruel tiger, who triumphs over me, disguising his name as

falsely as his faith : a name which no man seems to know, yet I am certain he lurks hereabouts. To you I address myself as my last remedy, and I demand your aid to find him out ! I know the quality you bear about this place may apprehend him, and force him to do me reason.

FERD. I shall be one of Cupid's baylies, and watch to arrest a man for debts of love.

LUC. I'll not alledge my father nor his memory, but by your own glory will conjure you, and not oblige you by any phrase of flattery.

FERD. Madam, to be short, I am your humble servant ; and such I have been ever to your father, who did me the honour to call me brother. Dispose of all my power ! My daughter shall endeavour to assuage your griefs.

*Enter BETTRIS.*

BET. Your nephew, sir, desires your ear for something of importance.

FERD. [*To Lucilla.*] Madam, my return shall be sudden ! Bettris lead her to my apartment, and admit my nephew presently.

*[Exeunt Lucilla, Bettris.]*

The chance is odd that this lady proves the sister of my elected son-in-law. I must present her to him if he will see her. My nephew and I will join our powers to seek her lover, and to do her justice.

*Enter DON LEWIS.*

O dear Don Lewis, my brave nephew, what brings you hither ? How may I serve you ?

D. LEWIS. Sir, a friend of mine has lately advertised me of a quarrel coming towards me, and I am come for your advice, who are a perfect judge of combats of honour.

FERD. If you can employ no other whom you love more than me, nor that loves you more than I do, I'm at your service. What is that paper in your hand?

D. LEWIS. I'll read it to you.

FERD. Do! for I have lost my spectacles.

D. LEWIS (*reads*):—"The younger brother of him whom you killed upon some love accmpts, departs from this place to-day to go where you are. I know not perfectly the occasion, but am certain that to give you notice of it is not ill done by your servant, Don Pedro Ossorio."

FERD. Wheredid you encounter him who is slain?

D. LEWIS. In Burgos!

FERD. Was he a cavalier?

D. LEWIS. Yes! and my great friend.

FERD. In single combat?

D. LEWIS. No, by mistake, in the darkness of the night.

FERD. Tell me the manner of it.

D. LEWIS. You remember the triumphs at Burgos for the first Infante. A friend of mine invited me thither to shew me the common valour of our nation in the Juego de Toros. The night after the triumph he led me to see the ladies at a ball, where I was conquer'd by a beauty, and she by me; but this great happiness soon turn'd into a great misfortune.

FERD. Well, sir, proceed!

D. LEWIS. I was allow'd the honour the next day to give her a visit, lov'd her sincerely, and being one night together I heard an attempt to break open the door. I saw her tremble and drew my sword for her safety. She took the candle and blew it out. The door was open'd, and I was attacqu'd, and in the encounter, not having the use of my eyes, there fell at my feet one mortally

wounded ; the darkness made my escape easy. But in the morning I was overwhelm'd with grief, being inform'd that the person slain was brother to my mistress, and the same intimate friend, who invited me to Burgos.

FERD. These are the effects of love ! and yet my foolish daughter will needs be in love before she marry.

D. LEWIS. My escape from Burgos was easy, because I was not known in public. You see the intelligence which is given me, and of what use your counsel may be in the affair. A gentleman is in search of me, who is led hither by revenge. It were loss of honour to avoid him, and it were cruelty to kill him. But somebody knocks at your gate.

*[Knocking within.]*

FERD. And rudely too. Who dares be thus insolent ?

*Enter BETTRIS.*

BET. O, sir ! give me a hundred crowns for my good news.

FERD. Pray stay till they are told out, and give me the news first.

BET. Where is my mistress ? Her suitor is below all over powder'd and perfum'd. He seems a merry and innocent man, for he laughs at everything as if he had no more cares than a capuchin.

LEWIS. Sir ! it seems you have a design to marry my cousin, and secretly.

FERD. Yes !

D. LEWIS (*aside*). How am I wounded with this news !

FERD. Bid my daughter come down. Make haste !

BET. You need not doubt my speed when I'm to bring lovers together.



D. LEWIS. How shall I bear this persecution ?

FERD. (*aside*). I shall have use of all my understanding to get clear from the perplexity of my divided int'rest. My nephew has kill'd the brother of him who is to marry my daughter.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

LEWIS. I shall grow mad !

FERD. Come, Isabella ! we must prepare to meet your suitor.

ISAB. Or rather to meet death. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter SANCHE, JODELET, in DON JOHN'S habit ;  
DON JOHN in JODELET'S habit.*

D. JOHN. I told you my master's name.

SANCH. You did !

D. JOHN. And does your master know that he is here ?

SANCH. He doth !

D. JOHN. Sure Don Ferdinand's detain'd by some important business ?

SANCH. He is !

D. JOHN. I hope when that's dispatcht, Don John shall have the honour to kiss his hands.

SANCH. He shall !

D. JOHN. This laconic fool makes brevity ridiculous.

JOD. An ass for brevity's sake should have cropt ears and a bob'd tail.

D. JOHN. My master is arriv'd upon design of alliance with yours, and I hope we, who are their servants, may become akin to one another by friendship.

SANCH. 'Tis fit !

D. JOHN. Your hand——

SANCH. Take it !

D. JOHN. Your name ?

SANCH. Sancho !

D. JOHN. 'Tis well!

SANCH. Your name?

D. JOHN. Jodelet!

SANCH. Good!

*[They embrace.]*

JOD. Friend you are a man of brevity. I would your master were so too. Shall I not see him?

SANCH. You shall!

JOD. But, by your favour, in what quantity of time?

SANCH. A trice.

JOD. I'm satisfied. But have not yet satisfied you for your diligence: I'm sorry 'tis the fashion for gallants to carry no money about 'em.

*[Feels in his pockets and finds no money.]*

SANCH. That's ill!

JOD. But my trunks are coming.

SANCH. That's good!

JOD. If my sumpter proves lame I shall borrow of your master rather than be in debt to his man.

D. JOHN. He means to represent me first by shewing his bounty.

JOD. I grow impatient, and must be diverted. Friend, what is there here to see?

SANCH. The house!

JOD. I use to spend my time in things of more importance. Jodelet!

D. JOHN. Sir!

JOD. Enquire if his master be learned.

SANCH. He's so so.

JOD. Let's visit his library! Yet, now I think on't, I have had my head twice crackt with reaching down great books from high shelves. Well, 'tis strange how, since my childhood, I ever lov'd huge great books, and could read in 'em as easily as if they were but little.

D. JOHN. This is to shew he is a man of learning.

JOD. Next to great books I love intollerable long

letters in short hand. If I had one here, you should see me begin at "Loving kind Friend," and in a moment end at, "Yours as his own."

D. JOHN. This shews him a man of business and of dispatch too.

JOD. This, I take it, is your anti-chamber. The floor is smooth, but somewhat bare : my rooms at home are all matted.

D. JOHN. How like a dull rogue he boasts of his rich furniture.

SANCH. We use no mats.

JOD. Why, friend ?

SANCH. For fear——

JOD. Of what ?

SANCH. Of fleas.

JOD. Alas, poor poor things ! they do no harm. We never use to kill 'em.

D. JOHN. Now he shews himself a man of mercy.

SANCH. In this country——

JOD. Well, speak your mind.

SANCH. Fleas use——

JOD. What ?

SANCH. To bite.

JOD. We have abundance of 'em, but not a man of mine does ever feel 'em.

SANCH. That's strange !

JOD. My family feeds well,\* and then they sleep so soundly that puneses cannot wake 'em. Lord, how I love to hear my servants snore after dinner.

D. JOHN. Now he shews his hospitality.

SANCH. [*To D. John*]. We shall all grow fat when your master keeps house here. Yet you, methinks, are somewhat lean.

D. JOHN. I thought this fellow's tongue had been wound up like a clock to regular stops, but

\* Altered in edition of 1775 to "No ; the scoundrels feed well."

now it struck above twelve words. Sir, I may trust you, who are hereafter to be my faithful friend. The chief reason why I am not fat is, most especially, because I am in love with three of our neighbours' maids.

SANCH. Three ?

D. JOHN. I confess I am unfortunate in it.

SANCH. You are !

D. JOHN. My grandmother was a poetess, and a great observer of love, and was wont to put her thoughts into verse, which were very pithy.

SANCH. And short ?

D. JOHN. She wrote according to her own size, for she was a very short woman. Shall I repeat ?

SANCH. Pronounce !

D. JOHN. A ruddy sanguine man  
Grows quickly pale and wan,  
And is by love undone,  
Even when he loves but one.  
But I am much mistaken  
If two will not make,  
As lean as a rake,  
A lover fat as bacon.

*Enter* DON FERD., DON LEWIS, ISABEL, BETTRIS.

D. FERD. Don John ! first for your father's sake, then for your own, I must embrace ; nay, let me bind you close to my heart.

JOD. Sir, you may clasp me as hard as you please, for I'll assure you I am very sound both spring and fall.

D. FERD. (*Aside*). Sound ? that's an odd assurance from a son-in-law. Sir, you are welcome !

JOD. I knew that before, sir ; which may give you a small taste of my understanding. Pray speak only things that are necessary ; for I love few words.

D. FERD. This son-in-law will prove wise.

*[Isabella draws Jodelet's picture, and looks on it aside.]*

ISAB. The painter has done him no wrong.

D. JOHN. *(Aside)*. Her beauty exceeds all that any pencil can describe.

*[Don John looks on Isabella's picture aside.]*

JOD. My father-in-law looks as gravely as an owl at noon percht over a church porch.

D. FERD. I fear my son-in-law is not very eloquent ; he speaks in private between the teeth.

ISAB. *(Aside)*. Was ever deformity copied with more exact proportion to the original ?

JOD. *[To Isabel.]* I can see you through my fingers, and know you at first sight by the picture you sent me.

BET. He's one of those subtle spies who peeps through the key-hole when the door is open.

JOD. *[To Isabel.]* You think me a very desperate man.

ISAB. Why so, sir ?

JOD. For coming near so bright a sun as you are, without a parasol, umbrellia,\* or a bongrace.

ISAB. You intend to be very witty, sir.

JOD. I tell you again, my bright sun, not one among a thousand would venture his complexion so near you as I do. But what care I for being tann'd.

BET. 'Tis but fleaing the old skin, and when your cheeks are raw the crimson will appear presently.

JOD. That damsel is too pert. Dear chuck of my cheeks ! you should keep these paraqueetos in a cage. How many of 'em have you ? 'Slight, I think I'm left alone ; Jodelet ! where are all my people ? Jodelet !

\* Sic.

D. JOHN. Sir !

JOD. My heart beats too much at sight of my mistress. If I faint with love be sure to hold me up.

D. JOHN. I shall, sir !

JOD. Lady, you say nothing : but I'm glad you are silent, for, if you should shew as much wit as you do beauty, I were a dead man. Jodelet !

D. JOHN. Sir !

JOD. To drive away the sorrows of love, I priethee break a jeast or two, or tell my mistress some of mine to cure her melancholy.

ISAB. My father has made a rare choice. This extraordinary fool is only fit for Christmas.

JOD. Don Ferdinand, do you always serve for a skreen to your daughter ?

D. JOHN. (*Aside*). Unlucky rogue ! what devil taught thee to ask that ?

D. LEWIS. That question is not very civil.

JOD. Those that are angry may shew their teeth ; but let them be sure that they be sharp.

D. LEWIS. Sir, no man will doubt yours.

JOD. Those who dare doubt mine may meet me — at dinner ; and after dinner may walk a turn in the field. It may be wholesome for some, but for others it may prove dangerous.

ISAB. He grows angry.

JOD. May not a man see a snip of her face ? I pray, lady of my lips, blink on me a little with one eye. Don Ferdinand, let somebody bring her near me ! or at least shew me her hand, or her arm, or a little of her leg.

D. JOHN. This coarse villain has been bred in a butcher-row.

FERD. My daughter had reason : my son-in-law is a coxcomb.

JOD. Lord, how nice they are of their brides in

this country ! anywhere else I might ere this have had a dozen kisses.

FERD. How I am vext at his want of breeding !

JOD. Father-in-law you must pardon me. I am a little boist'rous, but I am very loving. My dainty duckling, may I know what gust\* you take in having the honour to see me ?

D. LEWIS. That's civilly askt.

FERD. O, impertinent son-in-law.

JOD. They laugh ! I shall be loth to marry in so foolish a kindred as have no more wit than to laugh at me. Don Ferdinand, pray call for a chair ! you are ill serv'd ; but I will vouchsafe to reach one myself.

D. FERD. (*Aside*). I say again, my son-in-law is a very coxcomb. Bettris, reach a chair !

JOD. Sweet syrrop of my soul, pray tell me, do you wear chopeens ? † In truth if you do not, you are of a reasonable good stature, and worthy of me.

D. LEWIS. An excellent good compliment !

JOD. That young man is given to prating. Tell me, my bright sun, do you shine on him ?

ISAB. He is my cousin German.

FERD. I pronounce, the third time, that my son-in-law is a coxcomb.

D. JOHN. This cousin German revives my jealousy.

JOD. Lady, have you never an ear-picker about you ? there's something tickles me within, ‡ and I broke mine with picking my teeth. What, all laughing again ? Lady, you laugh scurvily ! you laugh like a monkey that has stol'n cherries ; he, he, he, he !

\* Taste.

† See Vol. i. p. 335.

‡ "Have you never a patch-box about you ? There's something tickles me on my nose."—Ed. 1775.

D. LEWIS. [*To Isabel.*] Cousin, you do not satisfy the gentleman. He askt you e'en now how you did relish the honour of seeing him.

ISAB. I must confess I never saw his equal both in body and mind.

JOD. Madam, every one says as much of me. But the twenty thousand crowns,—are they ready? Let's despatch the marriage!

D. LEWIS. How, Don John? you are mercenary.

JOD. Those who believe it are very desperate. But would I could meet 'em in Alverad.

D. LEWIS. In Alverad! Had you not a brother, sir?

JOD. Yes, whom a base murderer killed in the dark.

D. JOHN. If Don John could find the murderer he would eat his heart; but the coward hides himself.

D. LEWIS. This groom is very impudent. But, friend, I have been told——

D. JOHN. What have you been told, sir?

D. LEWIS. That it was merely by mischance.

D. JOHN. He lied that told you so! It was treachery.

D. LEWIS. [*To Isabel.*] Do you observe his sauciness?

ISAB. Methinks his anger has something graceful in it.

D. LEWIS. Then you allow his insolence?

ISAB. He shews no meanness in his courage.

D. LEWIS. [*To D. John.*] I shall find you!

D. JOHN. You may, for I shall never avoid you.

ISAB. O pity, hide thine eyes! how canst thou see such gallantry in such a low condition?

D. LEWIS. Wer't not in this place, I should make you silent.



JOD. My man is almost as valiant as myself, but a little rash.

D. LEWIS. Uncle, shall I endure this from that groom?

D. FERD. I charge you be discreet. Here's a fair beginning of a marriage.

JOD. My dear dumpling, let 'em quarrel; and let us talk and be witty, and sell bargains.

D. FERD. Sir, you ha'not yet seen the house. Bettris make haste, open the gallery! Nephew, I conjure you to make use of your discretion. Come, gentlemen, what do you stay for?

JOD. I love the down-right familiarity of Alverad, and hate compliment.

D. FERD. That's for saving of time.

JOD. We often, out of heartiness and haste, salute ladies with our hats on.

D. FERD. Do you so, sir?

JOD. Yes, and take 'em by the hand without the tedious ceremony of pulling off our gloves.

D. FERD. 'Tis true, time is a precious thing and ought to be sav'd. Son-in-law it becomes you.

*[Exeunt omnes.\*]*

*Enter BETTRIS, STEPHANO.*

BET. Retire to the garret over that chamber where I must hide your master, and there you must lye close.

STEPH. I should lye closer if you were with me.

BET. Certainly you men are very cold creatures; you are always wishing for something to keep you warm.

STEPH. Ah, Bettris! a garret without a chimney is a cold habitation. But if you were near me——

\* In the edition of 1775 the scene changes here to "Garden-Chamber," with the entrance of Sancho, Don John, and Laura, the intermediate passages being deleted.

BET. I know but one hoop in the world can bind us close together.

STEPH. What do you mean?

BET. A wedding-ring.

STEPH. That's a strong hoop indeed, and will hold out long. I have no land nor house; and though there are many houses in town, yet those tenants never get much furniture who begin with a cradle. I am not rich enough to marry.

BET. That's ill news, but I will tell you better.

STEPH. I prithee do.

BET. At night when the masters are abed, the men shall have a sack-posset.

STEPH. And shall they be very merry with the maids?

BET. Yes, unless the men be in love, for then, alas, they'll do nothing but sigh.

STEPH. What lady is that whom your mistress does conceal?

BET. I know her not. Sancho does manage that design; her maid is his sweetheart.

STEPH. Shall she be with us?

BET. He has invited her. You wish my company and enquire after her. None but a cold bed-fellow would have two warming-pans.

*Enter* SANCHE, DON JOHN, LAURA.

D. JOHN. Signior Sancho, there is nothing more medicinal against the consumption of love than a sack-posset. But shall I be at it?

SANCHE. You shall!

D. JOHN. I am much oblig'd to you for the invitation.

SANCHE. You are!

D. JOHN. I hope I may have leave to seal an acquaintance on this fair gentlewoman's hand.

SANCHE. You may! [*D. John salutes Laura.*]

LAURA. You are pleas'd to make use of your authority.

SANCHO. I am !

LAURA. I pray thee give me leave to salute Mistress Bettris.

SANCHO. Do !

STEPH. The favour ought to go round. I hope I shall not be a stranger to your mistress.

SANCHO. No! [*Stephano salutes Laura.*]

D. JOHN. Your authority extends so far as to make me likewise known to Mistress Bettris.

SANCHO. It doth ! [*D. John salutes Bettris.*]

BET. Well, we shall be all happy when our lords and ladies are asleep. There is nothing so sweet as midnight and sack-posset. Is there, Signior Sancho ?

SANCHO. Yes !

BET. What can be sweeter in this bitter world ?

SANCHO. Buss and posset.

ISABEL [*within*]. Bettris !\*

BET. My lady calls me ! Let every one hasten to their appointed stations.

STEPH. The next time when our masters go to bed early, we must be contented to sit up late.

BET. Alas ! we servants are miserable. We must be fain to watch when they sleep.

D. JOHN. Pray let us meet cheerfully, and with short ceremonies.

SANCHO. And long spoons.

[*Exeunt all several ways but Don John.*]

D. JOHN. I have more light to lead my jealousy,  
And now must seek the man to whom revenge  
Is yet indebted for my brother's blood ;  
Than where my vain imprudent sister lives,  
And where her perjur'd friend. Well, it grows strong  
In my belief that Isabella's cousin

\* In the edition 1775, instead of this, a bell rings *within*.

Is he whom I discern'd in the balcony ;  
Oh Isabel ! be wise as thou art fair ;  
Turn not my love to dangerous despair. [*Exit.*

---

## ACT III., SCENE I.

*Enter* DON LEWIS, STEPHANO.

D. LEWIS. Urge me no more ! the lot is cast.

STEPH. In troth, Don John is much beholden to you. You have forsaken his sister, kill'd his brother, and now pretend to his wife.

D. LEWIS. My hope relies on my perseverance, and on Bettris, and on thee ; on my uncle, on Isabella, and on myself. I rely much too on the rudeness of Don John's behaviour, but most of all on the civility of my goddess Fortune.

*Enter* BETTRIS.

BET. O sir, is it you ?

STEPH. None but a maid who loves to meet men in the dark would ask that question with her eyes open.

BET. You are still drawing the fool's weapon : I pray put up your tongue. I come not to you, but to your master.

D. LEWIS. Dear Bettris, tell me a little of the son-in-law.

BET. Would you have but a little when much may be spoken ? He dined, and did eat till his doublet grew so narrow that 'twas dangerous to sit near him ; for his buttons flew about like a volley of shot, and after dinner he retired to a dirty entry, where he slept on a bench and snor'd in concert, like three fat carriers in one bed. But I'll tell you what pass'd besides.

D. LEWIS. My poor Bettris !

BET. My poor Don Lewis !

D. LEWIS. My fortune I expect from thee.

BET. And mine from you : but you have yet proceeded no further than promise ; yet that's sufficient to one who abhors interest.

D. LEWIS. I prithee ask my man if I have not left my gold under my bolster ; and whether I am not to-morrow to receive four hundred duckets.

BET. Well, well ! hear me in few words. Don Ferdinand your uncle has chaf'd himself into a fever : he would fain be disengag'd. Your dear Isabella is more vex't than he. Now is the time or never : you must endeavour to see her : and give her as many promises as those make who intend to keep none. Write her poetical letters, and be sure not to leave out her lilies nor her roses : you must weep, sigh, and pull off your periwig, that you may tear your own hair : tell her you'll cut your own throat, or at least that you know an easy way to hang your self.

D. LEWIS. Concerning that, Bettris, you may safely pass your word for me.

BET. If the insolence of passion will not prevail, you must resume your modesty, whine civilly, and only wish your self dead ; and be not amaz'd when she grows impatient. What, you smile at this good counsel ?

D. LEWIS. No, but it seems a little new.

BET. The practice of it is as ancient as the love-tricks in Troy. But I have stay'd too long. Be-shrew my heart for my kindness to you. Go, sir, steal through the garden door ! Farewell, sir, and I pray give your man leave to shift your trenchers before they are empty. He looks leaner than Lent.

STEPH. Farewell, false money.

BET. Remember that. I clipt your beard by

moon-shine, with the gard'ner's great sheers when you lay asleep like a dead perdue in the arbour. O, y'are a proper watchman to attend lovers.

STEPH. My beard, Mistress Marmalad?

BET. Yes, when my lady's little dog smelt you out, by the broken meat in your pocket.

STEPH. Well, I'll marry thee for a month, that I may get authority to swadle\* thee for having no portion. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter FERDINAND, ISABELLA.*

FERD. I'll rather die of naked poverty than break my word.

ISAB. Dear father!

FERD. You are a fool, and all that you can hope is, that I may defer your marriage a few days. But was ever any business so incumber'd? My son-in-law is offended, and, my nephew being the cause of it, I ought to be so too. Shall I abandon one and join with the other? I owe myself to one by blood, and to the other by honor.

ISAB. It seems, sir, 'twas Don Lewis that kill'd his brother.

FERD. Yes, and, to encrease the perplexity, the sister of Don John implores me against him: how can I, in honor, refuse to assist her? and to-day my nephew tells me, he has need of my advice against a man whom he has doubly offended, and that man must be my son-in-law. Head! hold out one day, and split not during this storm of business. Farewell! I'll go taste† my son-in-law. *[Exit.]*

ISAB. And I'll go weep. O heaven! to what a brute am I condemn'd? Was not my aversion

\* To beat with a cudgel. By law, a man was allowed, and the act is believed to be still extant, to beat his wife "with a rattan, if not above the thickness of his thumb."

† Touch upon the subject to.

a sufficient torment without giving me a new affliction by another passion? Was't not enough to be unhappy by the address of the master, but I must love his man? Ah, my stars hate me too much, when they make me love one whom I dare not name to my own ear. Must I adore him who never can be mine, and at the same time abhor the person for whom I am decreed? A third evil is join'd to th'other two. Don Lewis, whom I hate, loves me. At once I hate, and fear, and am in love. O, who can deliver me from this entangled destiny?

*Enter DON LEWIS.*

D. LEWIS. 'Tis I, O charming Isabella! that will deliver you, and disengage you from Don John: for since Don Lewis, whom you have despis'd, is now admitted to your favour, your breath contains my rival's destiny. Proscribe him with one word, and, with this sword I am his executioner.

ISAB. Oh heav'ns! dare you propose a mischief of this bloody shape? Be gone, unhappy wretch! thou art unworthy of that pity, which, to the injury of justice, thy name and blood being mine, makes me afford thee. How canst thou love me if thou thinkst me capable even but to hear thy black design? Fly, fly to Burgos with thy perfidiousness, and there go act thy tragedies. Go and deceive the sister of the brother thou hast slain.

D. LEWIS. Hah! if ever——

ISAB. Peace, peace, thou blackest of ill spirits! or I will fill the house with exclamations.

*Enter BETTRIS.*

BET. Pray, speak low! Don Ferdinand and the son-in-law are upon the stairs, they may hear you. How shall we shift Don Lewis away, for Don

John's man is in the next chamber? I would he would shew his extraordinary discretion and good mein some where else.

ISAB. What shall we do?

D. LEWIS. If I durst appear——

ISAB. Keep your expedients for your own use; 'tis I that am concern'd now.

D. LEWIS. If his angry man——

ISAB. Hold, sir! he seems not one whose anger may be tam'd with threat'ning. Bettris!

BET. Madam, I tremble all over. What think you if I awhile conceal Don Lewis in your chamber?

ISAB. Dispose of him any where, provided he be far from my sight.

BET. Madam, be froward then a while! and raise your voice, and call me bold and impudent.

ISAB. I understand you.

[*Exeunt Don Lewis, Bettris.*]

You say Don John is not handsome?

[*Isabella speaks loud.*]

What, he displeases you? you'll mend his making? I like him as he is. I would my father heard you. Y'are insolent, be gone!

*Enter DON FERDINAND, JODELET, and DON JOHN.*

FERD. We hear you, daughter. You are angry!

ISAB. 'Tis only for a trifle which my maid has lost.

JOD. Humph! This will not pass; for though I'm stuff in the head, yet I can blow my nose as well as another to smell things out. No, no, I see I may make love long enough before you smicker\* at me. You may e'en keep your portion, I shall find my land in the old place.

ISAB. How, sir, will you be gone?

JOD. When two or three have sufficiently for-

\* Look amorous.



sworn themselves to you, then you'll tuck up your petticoats and follow me to Alverad.

D. JOHN. This dull rogue, for fear he should not be unlucky enough to do me mischief, makes it up with inundations of folly.

FERD. Son-in-law, methinks your behaviour is a little out of fashion, and, in plain terms, you want wisdom.

JOD. Father-in-law, this is but a trick of mine to try her love. I'll sound her heart though it lies as deep as her belly.

FERD. Nay, they are politic in your province. But if my daughter be thoroughly anger'd—

JOD. These are a kind of witty frumps\* of mine like selling of bargains; I'll come off well enough. Let's walk into the gallery!

D. FERD. For fear this extraordinary brute should find out his sister, I'll leave him in the hands of his mistress. Stay here a while, sir, with my daughter. I must part from you one moment upon a pressing occasion! *[Exit D. Ferd.]*

JOD. My dainty dear! your father being gone, and here being none but friends left, you may swear to me in private how much you love me. I'll say nothing to anybody. I can keep secrets; for when I'm askt what a clock 'tis, I never tell for fear men should take me for a blab.

ISAB. Sir, I'll deal freely with you. I was never in love till to-day: I had formerly an aversion to it, disdain was all my passion. Believe me, sir, the flame of love is only known to me since your arrival. But since my love can meet none equal to it, should it rejoice when it encounters yours? No, sir, to the contrary; I'm in extreme pain to see you love me, and that I must likewise love.

JOD. Humph! if I had not a great deal of wit I should hardly understand you.

\* Inventions. Lies.

ISAB. Your passion equals not the price of mine,  
Though what is with you, and to you belongs,  
Is e'en all that which I do most adore,  
Yet in you is all that which I abhor.

JOD. Hah! what belongs to me, and is with me,  
you adore, and what is in me, you abhor. Lady to  
such dark sayings as these, the ancient philosophers  
of Alverad make answer in a subtle question;  
which is, riddle my riddle, what's this?

ISAB. Sir, I must justify my meaning to you.  
You doubt my flame, but, sir, I say again  
I love that which is yours, and love it much.  
In seeing it I altogether see  
The object of my love, and then I burn and  
tremble,

Burn with desire, and tremble with my fear.  
You cause at once my joy and sorrow too;\*  
What evil can there be more strange and rare  
Which when I hide I then almost declare?  
If I, to ease my pain, my mind reveal  
I danger bring to that which I would heal.

D. JOHN. She has wit prevailing as her beauty,  
but 'tis mystical.

JOD. If men swear they are bewitched when they  
are in love, then I, being in love, may say you are  
a witch, especially because you speak things as  
hard to be understood as charms.

D. JOHN. O love! why art thou born with the  
disease of jealousy? All curses meet upon Don  
Lewis!

JOD. You, my serving man, come nearer and  
make love for me, and afterwards we'll do it by  
turns.

D. JOHN. But sir——

JUN. How, coxcomb? perhaps you would give  
me counsel. Am not I your master? does any

\* "And my despair." *folio.*

man know so much as you the love I bear her, and who then can better tell her of it? That's fine y' faith! Belike I want understanding to direct what's fit to be done.

D. JOHN. Madam, I must obey since I am commanded.

JOD. The fellow is afraid! Madam, he wants a little breeding, yet I have been a pattern to him above seven years.

ISAB. Sure he has been an ill observer then.

JOD. Sirrah, I say advance! and court her handsomely, whilst I go to the gate, and consult with the porter how to scatter a little gold amongst the servants, to shew my bounty and make friends.

ISAB. How shall I then get Don Lewis out? curse on this fool! Sir, you must needs stay: for if th' original be gone you'll have an ill account of the copy; 'tis a hard thing to draw love well.

JOD. If she should be now really in love with me, (*D. John courts her in whispers.*) then I were in a fine case. My master wants no cudgels; and I should be the most beaten bridegroom that ever meddled with more than his match. Let me consider. Hah, Master Valet de Chambre! Have I put you there to do nothing? You talk in her ear, sirrah; either speak out, or keep farther off.

D. JOHN. Sir, I'm ashamed to speak loud, your worship will but laugh at me.

JOD. No doubt of that. But I've a mind to laugh, for, to say truth, I am afraid of sighing. She damnable handsome!

[*Aside.*]

D. JOHN [*to Isabel aside*].

When love's afraid, do not that fear despise;  
Flame trembles most when it doth highest rise;  
And yet my love may justly be disdain'd,  
Since you believe it from a lover feign'd.  
I am not here that which I ought to be,

I serve, yet from all bonds but yours am free.  
Though player-like I feign my master's part,  
Yet real jealousy afflicts my heart:  
For whilst his feigned rival I appear,  
I then another real rival fear.

ISAB. This language has more mystery than mine.

JOD. A real rival! That's I, or Don Lewis. A pox o' these intoxicating riddles; can any man stand still when charms make his head turn round? I'll hear no more of 'em. Avaunt, Jodelet! thou art a foolish conjurer! Presto, be gone!

D. JOHN. Is your worship in earnest?

JOD. I've a thought in my head worth the weight of it in gold. Hah! now I have lost it. Sweet nosegay of my nose, when I remember you I always forget my self: or else 'tis that baggage, Bettris, which transports me; for, to say truth, she runs in my mind too. My serving-man, be gone!

D. JOHN. I must obey you, sir.

JOD. You'd fain stay to sing "Loth to depart." Why when I say [*D. John goes and stays close at the door.*]*—*I will be left alone with my mistress.

ISAB. How, sir, alone? what will the servants say?

JOD. What can they say when I think fit to be private?

ISAB. I'm sure Bettris will take notice of it.

JOD. That's true, for Bettris likes me so well, that if she sees us making love it may cost her half her life. But that's all one: I love you only.

ISAB. Yes, and Bettris also.

JOD. Faith, lady, I am free of making my best parts known. What! I have made you jealous of me! That's another of my politic love tricks. I'm grown so subtle that the devil will be afraid of

me. But let him shun me then : for, take one time with another, he does me more hurt than good.

ISAB. But, sir, what mean you ? Why must we be alone ?

JOD. To shew my confidence : for let 'em say what they will, I dare trust myself with you. I have not seen the balcony yet. Let's go take the air.

ISAB. There is no wind stirring.

D. JOHN. What new firk of folly has enter'd into the rascal's head ? I must observe him.

JOD. Come along, sweet heart !

ISAB. You shall excuse me, sir. I'll not stir from hence.

JOD. How ! not stir ? My dear, you must know I'm very choleric——

ISAB. What drawn by force ? Y'are insolent !

[*He offers to reach her hand.*]

JOD. My duck you are squeamish. Lord, what diff'rence there is in people ! you see I am not so——

ISAB. Rude wretch, forbear ! wer't not for that patience which is ordain'd me by my father, I'd tear your eyes out with these hands.

JOD. With those hands ? you'd please me more, if you would let me kiss 'em.

ISAB. Sir, you are mad, and would make me so too. Is this the brutish courtship of your province ?

[*Exit.*]

D. JOHN. O villain ! you would presume to kiss her hand ?

[*D. John surprises him.*]

JOD. 'Tis a strange thing to see how men may be mistaken. 'Twas she, sir, would presume to kiss mine.

D. JOHN. Slave ! you are in jeast then, and you think I'm so too. I'll make you repent your impudence——

[*D. John strikes him.*]

JOD. Sir! why master! pray sir!

D. JOHN. Pattern of rogues! thou gallows climber!

[*D. John kicks him.*]

JOD. Nay, pray, sir, do not punish behind! all that I said to her was face to face.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

ISAB. 'Tis anger, and grows loud. Pray heav'n, they have not found the mischievous Don Lewis!

D. JOHN. Dog! you may be glad that my respect to her presence stops my fury.

JOD. Now she's here, if I should strike him he dares not discover himself.

[*Jodelet assaults D. John.*]

I'll teach you to speak ill of Isabella. Is she but reasonable handsome? Hah!——

ISAB. Ah, do not strike him, sir! Be not cruel to your servant.

[*Jod. speaks low and fast to Don John.*]

JOD. Sir, I must counterfeit your person to the life; you use to kick too. I have a great mind to give you a taste of my foot, that I may resemble you thoroughly.

D. JOHN. Be less in earnest when you counterfeit, or I'll cut your throat.

ISAB. Rude man! what has he done to you?

JOD. These are cholerick heats which pass away, lady. If I should kick him I could not hurt him; he's all oak behind, mere wainscote-board. We who have tender toes are ill provided for tough bums.

[*D. John speaks softly to him again.*]

D. JOHN. Sirrah! were not she here——

JOD. He sits too much on bare benches and joint-stools. I must buy cushions for him to make him softer.

ISAB. But how has he deserved this usage?

JOD. He said your beauty could not kill a man a mile off.

ISAB. Was that all, sir? If he hates me, alas! he knows not yet he is ingrateful.

D. JOHN. I can no longer defer it. I must discover my self——

JOD. Sirrah, begone! Expect nothing from me but a cudgel to measure your bones. Lady, may I not strip him naked, and keep his clothes now I turn him away?

ISAB. O no, sir, if I have any credit with you, turn him not away.

D. JOHN (*Aside*). Did ever rogue use his master thus, or master so foolishly trust the discretion of his man?

JOD. My lily white lamb! you are too merciful. I cannot stay near you upon such cowardly terms. I'll into the garden a while. We men of mettle use to walk a turn to cool our courage. [*Exit.*]

ISAB. (*Aside*). I blush, and know not what to say. Is love a crime when it usurps a monarch's power In giving dignity to that which it esteems? You were ere while another person and

[*To Don John.*]

Did represent Don John, and then I spoke  
Some words which you might misinterpret to  
Be love. But, you are now poor Jodelet,  
And ought to alter your opinion of my  
Passion since your person's chang'd.

D. JOHN. Madam, if I had reason to believe  
That you esteem'd Don John, I should grow weary  
Of my being as I am, and represent again  
The person that I was.

ISAB. Sure you esteem him much, since you  
Can take such pleasure in assuming of his love.

D. JOHN. Next my desire of Heav'n I wish  
Don John

Made happy by your love with Hymen's rites.

ISAB. I'll leave you till you learn to ask of  
Heaven

A better destiny for me, that so I may  
Be taught to make an equal wish for you.

D. JOHN. Her love does still grow darker, yet I  
see,

By too much light, my cause of jealousy. [*Exit.*

*Enter BETTRIS.*

BET. Don John, your country-lover is gone into  
the town to learn civility. He needs not stay long,  
for he may be taught it in the street by every mule  
he meets.

ISAB. Did you see him go out ?

BET. Madam, he is not found about the house ;  
and I may now release Don Lewis from his con-  
finement.

ISAB. Be sure you do it presently ; and then  
make haste to find me in the garden. [*Exit.*

BET. I saw just now the weeping lady ; she's  
unluckily broke loose too. I would we were well  
rid of these foolish lovers. Sure common under-  
standing has left the world. Young people cannot  
meet privately but they must needs fall in love.

[*Exit.\**

*Enter LUCILLA veiled.*

LUC. 'Tis strange Don Ferdinand should use me  
thus. Is this protection when he strait abandons  
me ? He told me he would return in a moment ;  
and then, as if grown weary of civility, and of  
lending me his chamber for shelter, he went per-  
haps to divert himself in the town. I heard just  
now a noise like the confusion of a quarrel. This  
is an ill sign of my secure retreat. I must proceed

\* In the edition of 1775 from the entrance of Bettris down  
to this point is omitted.



in order to my safety ; and yet I ought t'advertise them before I go. Sure, this is Isabella's chamber ; the door is open ! I'll in, and take my leave of her.

*Enter DON LEWIS.*

Hah ! I discern a man, and I can't avoid him.

D. LEWIS. I hope my friend Bettris, whom I have bound to me with the strings of my purse, does mean to make this chamber my lodging. O dear Isabella ! whither would you run so fast ?

*[He spies Lucilla veil'd.*

How, will you not vouchsafe to hear me ? Alas ! allow me but one word. You have reproacht my love as criminal ; thinking some other beauty has possess't my heart. Have I not sworn, that she who does pretend to it had but the promises of my pity ? And, since I saw her at Burgos, I never did retain her in my thought ?

LUC. O heavens ! I have not patience to hear more. *[She opens her veil.]* False man ! behold her now : for I am she who too much has lov'd thee, and whom thou never lov'dst. She, whose fatal and unexperienc'd heart too soon believ'd thy many oaths. She, who does hate thee now, and will proclaim thy perjuries. She, whom thou call'dst thy soul and queen, is now without a brother, without her honour, and is less provided for than birds blown off to sea by tempests.

D. LEWIS. Hear me but speak !

LUC. No, traitor, no ! Thy former perjuries have stopt my ears so much that I can hear no more. Help, ho ! help !

D. LEWIS. Ah, madam, give me then leave to swear, and you shall soon be satisfied.

LUC. Soul without faith ! canst thou again expect belief ? Help, ho ! help !

*Enter DON JOHN.*

D. JOHN. This grief is loud, and 'tis a woman's voice !

LUC. O heav'ns ! whom do I see ?

D. JOHN. Hah ! is not that my sister ?

LUC. [*Aside.*] I call for help, and heav'n has sent destruction in a brother.

D. JOHN. [*Aside.*] My eyes cannot mistake, she is my sister !

And th' other is the object of my jealousy.

I have enough of anger for 'em both.

D. LEWIS. He carries mischief in his eyes,  
But seems in doubt, on which of us he should  
Direct it first.

D. JOHN. [*Aside.*] I am too certain of my sister's crime,

But have not such sufficient proofs as may

Allow my jealousy just leave to be

Reveng'd on him ; I'll then begin with her.

O thou unhappy, wicked woman !——

LUC. If I am wicked think me then

More fit to have some time for prayer.

D. LEWIS. Hold ! hold ! I'll undertake her  
quarrel,  
Though with that voice which brought thee hither  
she

Was calling for revenge on me. But tell

Me by what title thou pretend'st to have

Authority to punish her ?

D. JOHN. I ought to do it.

D. LEWIS. That's insolence ! Art thou not a servant ?

D. JOHN. Don John's my master, and his honour's mine.

LUC. [*Aside.*] My ruin was prepar'd by some design ;

Else wherefore should my brother hide himself  
In this disguise ?

D. LEWIS. Shall I endure to be affronted twice  
by him  
Who serves my equal ?——

*[Lucilla endeavours to go out.]*

D. JOHN. Hah ! are you going ?  
Stay ! who brought you to this house ? and wherefore  
Did you call for help ?

LUC. You shall know all. I enter'd in this  
chamber to see Isabella, where I found this man ;  
but cannot tell for what intent he there did hide  
himself. I then cried out at the surprise, and  
tremble still——

D. JOHN. Enough ! my jealousy is apt to credit  
his offence. I'll shut the door !

*[Goes backward and shuts the door.]*

LUC. My fear will kill me to prevent your  
cruelty.

D. JOHN. Don Lewis, I shall give you cause to  
shew your valour——

D. LEWIS. I think it honour'd when 'tis us'd in  
her defence, but it deserves a nobler trial than  
your hand can make——

LUC. Oh fatal hour ! how many deaths shall I  
endure ?

My perjur'd lover is yet kind when he  
Does strive to rescue me.

*[A noise of knocking within.]*

D. LEWIS. The people of the house will force  
the door.

D. JOHN. No matter, sir ! Let us despatch——

D. FERD. *[Within.]* Let's force our passage and  
break thorough.

LUC. I'm counsell'd both by fear and love to  
open it.

D. JOHN. [*Speaks low to Lucilla.*] Stir not to let them in! for if by thee I am discover'd——

*Enter DON FERDINAND and ISABELLA.*

LUCIL. Ah! Don Ferdinand! call all your servants to your aid.

D. FERD. Proceed not in your fury, for by death I swear, that he, who does not sheath his sword, Engages me against him. Oh, what strange Unlucky wonders meet to-day t'amaze And ruin me! Nephew, who put you here? Ah! Lucilla, who discover'd you? And you,

[*Speaks to D. John.*

What devil urges you? who since you came into My house have spent no minute but in quarrels.

D. LEWIS. Hear me, and you shall straight know all.

D. JOHN. No, let me speak! for I can better Tell it, sir, than he. But I must first demand If Lucilla did not in your house conceal her self? And likewise if Don Lewis be not your near kinsman?

D. FERD. The one and th'other too is true.

D. JOHN. And is't not reason that a servant, sir, Should own an int'rest in his master's honour?

D. FERD. That cannot be denied.

D. JOHN. Then, sir, observe if I am wrong'd. I enter'd here, urg'd by Lucilla's cries.

She found, as I believe, by accident, Don Lewis in this chamber where your daughter lodges.

I in Lucilla saw the signs of a surprise.

'Tis evident to reason that he was hidden here all day;

For I have so observ'd all passage to the street That it was hard for him to 'scape my eyes.

D. LEWIS. (*Aside*). This reasoning does appear too much refin'd,  
For one of his coarse quality.

D. JOHN. My master, who is to marry Isabella, And is brother to Lucilla, must be offended For his mistress or his sister : and it Is likely he is wrong'd in both. My duty, Therefore, is to finish my revenge upon Don Lewis.

D. LEWIS. You are a man of rare dispatch, who are  
So sure to finish that which is not yet begun——

D. FERD. Don Lewis, stay ! Art thou mad ? Stay Jodelet ! I prithee hold ! This is the most perplext encounter that I ever saw.

ISAB. He certainly is jealous for his master.  
Ah, Jodelet ! Let me entreat you to retire.

D. JOHN. Madam, for your sake I will prescribe the means how to defer this quarrel ; which is, that each engage his promise to me. You, Don Ferdinand, to render Lucilla in her brother's power when he requires it. And you, Don Lewis, to make a trial of your valour with Don John when he invites you to the field.

D. LEWIS. I cannot without some torment, make promises of honour to one of thy low condition.

D. JOHN. Don John, sir, is no more a man than I am.

But if he fails to call you suddenly  
T'accempt, then you shall know whether I'm now,  
Or may be made hereafter, fit to entertain your sword.

D. FERD. Enough ! we promise that which you desire.

Nay, nephew, you are wont to yield to my authority.

D. LEWIS. Well, sir ; your pleasure is my law ;  
And here I give my promise.

D. JOHN. And I mine, that Don John shall justify this quarrel.

D. LEWIS. Nothing does then remain but that I seek

Your master out to-morrow.

D. JOHN. Your journey, sir, will not be far to find him.

D. FERD. I'll be the foremost in the search.

D. JOHN. You'll give me leave to follow you.

D. FERD. That will be needful, and without delay.

ISAB. This man is brave and loyal where he serves.

All is perplext ! O love, lend me thy clue  
To lead me safe through this dark labyrinth.

LUCIL. Don Lewis now, does, after cruelty,  
Shew some remorse in my defence ; and I  
Am apt to think him penitent. But death  
Will soon a period give to love and fear.

D. FERD. To-morrow early is the appointed time  
to seek Don John.

Night now has drawn her curtains close. Let me  
Conduct you to your several beds, where sleep  
May quench that fire which makes your anger rash.

D. JOHN. My precious rogue stole out to shun a  
quarrel.

His fear does ever make him sick, and I  
Shall find him drunk, for that's his constant cure.  
[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.

*Enter STEPHANO, SANCHE.*

*A Table spread with Linnen, Trenchers and Spoons  
are set out, and five Chairs.*

STEPH. This room standing in the garden, at  
distance from the house, seems built for our pur-

pose. Our happy hour is near. Dear Signior Sancho, shall we be merry ?

SANCHO. As maids !

STEPH. Is there any creature, except man, that has the wit to be merry at midnight ?

SANCHO. The owl.

STEPH. Y'are in the right. But what shall we have to make us rejoice besides a sack-posset ?

SANCHO. Fiddles.

STEPH. Your words are seldom many, but always pithy. Heark ! there's something stirring behind the hanging.

SANCH. A rat !

STEPH. If it be a rat, then it has shoes on, for it treads hard. I rather fear 'tis the old rat-catcher, your master, that has caught us here in a trap. Who's there ?

JOD. [*Within, speaks low*]. A friend !

STEPH. 'Tis a man's voice, but he speaks so low, that he seems more afraid than we are. Who is it ?

JOD. [*Within*]. 'Tis I !

STEPH. That were some answer to the question, if we knew him that made it.

JOD. [*Within*]. Who are you ?

STEPH. To testify that our being here is not for any harm, you may know that we——

SANCH. Are we.

STEPH. Well said, Signior Sancho ; that's a valuable return of intelligence from us for what he gave of himself.

JOD. Nay, if you name Signior Sancho,

*Enter JODELET.*

Don John may appear.

STEPH. [*Aside to Sancho*]. Our sport is prevented. We may e'en hang up our fiddles, and our selves by 'em. Who sent him hither ?

SANCH. The devil !

STEPH. Pray, sir, what occasion brought you behind the hanging ?

JOD. I was led thither by conscience.

STEPH. Conscience is a good guide, sir.

JOD. Don Ferdinand's house is so full of quarrels as makes it very wearisome to one that has been already too much tir'd in the field with wicked entertainments of honour.

STEPH. Sir, you shew both your valour and your reason.

JOD. My man Jodelet is honest : but the cutlers of Toledo are not able to make swords enough to furnish his duels.

STEPH. Say you so, sir ?

JOD. If the old roarer, Satan, were young again, my man were fit to serve him.

STEPH. [*Aside to Sancho.*] The man of blood which he mentions is your guest to-night, Signior Sancho, but not fit to be treated with a tame sack-posset. What shall we provide for him ?

SANCH. Raw puddings.

JOD. Friends, to deal entirely with you, I stole hither to hide my self, partly out of conscience, but more out of discretion : for 'tis not fit a gentleman of my possessions, and near marriage, should upon every peevish humor of his servant venture his estate and body —

SANCH. Politic.

STEPH. But, sir, your man is coming hither. We expect him in a moment.

JOD. I'll not see him till his foolish quarrels are ended.

STEPH. Then, sir, you must please to retire again behind the hanging.

JOD. Agreed ! My friends, no words where I am.



STEPH. Fy, no, sir. But we shall stay here long. I hope you can have patience.

JOD. Lord, friends, you do not yet understand my disposition, for 'tis my patience which makes me steal from quarrels.

STEPH. You must be as little heard as seen. I hope you are not troubled with a cold, nor apt to fall asleep?

JOD. What mean you?

STEPH. Why, sir, I would not have you cough.

SANCH. Nor snore.

JOD. Friends, I say again you know me not thoroughly. Tell not me of snoring: I dare snore with any man in Spain, and, hap what hap may, I'll venture again behind the hanging to hide my self.

STEPH. Nay, sir, we know you are valiant.

SANCH. And wise. *[Exit Jodelet.]*

*Enter BETTRIS, LAURA.*

BET. Sancho, our entertainment is provided; are your stomachs ready?

SANCH. They are!

LAU. Then help to bring it to the table.

*Enter DON JOHN.*

SANCH. In state!

*[Exit and brings in a great bason with a posset.]*

BET. Signior Jodelet you make good your promise, for you come in the very nick.

SANCHO. In posset time.

*Enter TWO YOUNG WOMEN who assist in the dance.*

D. JOHN. Who are these?

BET. Two young married neighbours that long'd for sack-posset.

D. JOHN. Are your ladies asleep?

BET. They went to bed as early as brides, and I hope will lye as long as bridegrooms.

D. JOHN. Then the maids may be as merry as the men.

STEPH. And encounter a whole pail of posset.

*Enter JODELET.*

JOD. I'll meet as many quarrels as there be drunkards in Dutchland rather than miss a sack-posset.

D. JOHN. Ha! how comes he here?

BET. Beshrew your heart, Signior Don John, for starting forth so suddenly. 'Tis well we were all awake.

LAU. If we had not been us'd to meet men in the dark it might have frightened us.

JOD. Ladies, without sans ceremony, I'll sit down first.

SANCH. And I.

D. JOHN. [*Whispers Jodelet.*] Villain, be gone to my chamber! you'll still discover your coarse breeding.

JOD. Prithee forbear thy good manners to thy master. Sit down, sit down! I say sit down. There are seasons when masters may be familiar with their men.

D. JOHN [*Whispers Jodelet.*] Sirrah, I'll cut your throat!

JOD. [*Whispers D. John.*] I had rather you should cut my throat than cousin my belly.

D. JOHN. Villain, hast thou the impudence to stay?

JOD. Lord what ado here is with civilities out of season: once more I charge thee to sit down, and I give thee leave to be familiar.

D. JOHN. Rogue! to-morrow will come.

JOD. Still over-mannerly! Ladies, pray take

V.

E

your spoons. This coxcomb, my man, is so troublesome with his untimely respects.

D. JOHN. You will not stir then ?

JOD. Prithee, put thy hat on ! Ladies, when I am at home and a little in drink, I often sit with my servants.

D. JOHN. Ladies and gentlemen, having my master's leave I will presume on yours.

SANCH. You may.

JOD. I suppose the posset is very hot, but Coragio is the word. 'Tis but the spoiling of a few good teeth. I'll venture at it.

SANCH. And I.

JOD. Hold, I will first taste ! 'Tis as hot as if they had strew'd it with parch't pepper instead of cinnamon. [*He sputters as if his mouth were burnt.*]

SANCH. Stay ! stay !

BET. Why, Signior Sancho ?

SANCH. Stir it——

[*They all stir and then eat together.*]

JOD. Ladies, you eat too fast !

[*D. John rises and whispers Jodelet again.*]

D. JOHN. Dog ! Shew more civility, and do not disgrace the person whom you counterfeit.

JOD. I tell thee 'twill not make me sick. I have been us'd to abundance of posset. This good natur'd fool takes such care of my health.

BET. Signior Jodelet, pray sit down again, and take care of your own health ; possets are very wholesome.

LAUR. Pray do, sir. The cinnamon is good against wind.

STEPH. Mistress Bettris, here's to your good health, and to your's Mistress Laura.

SANCH. To both. [*Sancho slabbers his beard.*]

JOD. Signior Sancho, that sponge, your beard, soaks up too much of the posset.

SANCH. It doth.

JOD. I only civilly suppose it doth.

SANCH. All stay——

[*He takes a huge knife out of his pocket, scrapes the posset off from his beard, and then eats it.*]

JOD. Who will pledge the Founder's health?

D. JOHN. Let it come. I am your man!

JOD. You are so; but a very saucy one; you use to talk and give counsel over your liquor.

D. JOHN. Your noble worship may say your pleasure. I know you love men that ply their posset.

JOD. I am for men of few words. Let such a one answer to Masaquedit. Here's the Founder's health!

SANCH. Tope!

D. JOHN. Signior Sancho, you made a promise of fiddles. I pray forbear your spoon while that you may call for 'em.

SANCH. I shall.

LAUR. Servant, I pray do.

JOD. Signior Sancho, let us have fair play. Did you invite your beard to half the posset?

SANCH. Few words are best.

STEPH. In what sense, Signior Sancho?

SANCH. In posset.

D. JOHN. Come, sir, dispatch; for brevity is as convenient in posset as it is in speech. I'll give you a song if you will call for music.

SANCH. Firk your fiddles!

*The SONG in recitativo and in parts.\**

DON JOHN.

The bread is all bak'd,

The embers are rak'd;

\* In the edition 1775, an alteration of this song is set down to be sung by Bettris, the words of which will be found in the introduction to this play.—See p. 4

'Tis midnight now by chanticlear's first crowing.  
 Let's kindly carouse  
 Whilst 'top of the house  
 The cats fall out in the heat of their wooing.  
 Time, whilst thy hour-glass does run out,  
 This flowing glass shall go about.  
 Stay, stay, the nurse is wak'd, the child does cry,  
 No song so ancient is as Lulla-by.  
 The cradle's rockt, the child is husht again.  
 Then hey for the maids, and ho for the men.  
 Now ev'ry one advance his glass ;  
 Then all at once together clash,  
 Experienc'd lovers know  
 This clashing does but show,  
 That as in music so in love must be  
 Some discord to make up a harmony.  
 Sing, sing ! When crickets sing, why should not  
     we !  
 The crickets were merry before us ;  
 They sung us thanks ere we made them a fire,  
 They taught us to sing in a chorus :  
 The chimney is their church, the ov'n their quier.  
 Once more the cock cries cock-a-doodle-doo.  
 The owl cries o'er the barn, to-whit-to-whoo !  
 Benighted travellers now lose their way  
     Whom will-of-the-wisp bewitches :  
 About and about he leads them astray  
     Through bogs, through hedges and ditches.  
 Hark ! hark ! the cloyster bell is rung !  
 Alas ! the midnight dirge is sung.  
     Let 'em ring,  
     Let 'em sing,  
 Whilst we spend the night in love and in laughter.  
     When night is gone  
     O then too soon  
 The discords, and cares of the day come after.  
 Come boys ! a health, a health, a double health

To those who scape from care by shunning wealth.

Dispatch it away

Before it be day.

'Twill quickly grow early when it is late :

A health to thee,

To him, to me,

To all who beauty love, and bus'ness hate.

JOD. Well, my man were an incomparable varlet  
if he would forbear to give me counsel in whispers.  
Jodelet !

D. JOHN. Sir !

JOD. Lead 'em a dance. I'll have a dance !

D. JOHN. My feet are at your service, sir.

[*Whispers to Jodelet.*] As you shall feel to-morrow  
by a score of kicks which I reserve for you.

JOD. Hearn, he's giving me counsel again. I  
say lead 'em a dance.

*The DANCE. Which being ended a bell rings within.*

BET. My ladies little dog has wak'd her. Alas !  
now the sweet of the night is coming, we must all  
part.

D. JOHN. [*whispers Jod.*] Sirrah, follow me to my  
chamber ! [*Exeunt all several ways but Jodelet.*]

JOD. Not to-night good Signior Don John !

I'll sooner follow a drum that beats for volunteers  
to the north of Norway. The back door of the  
garden is only bolted within. I'll steal forth, and  
to-morrow when sleep has made him tamer I'll  
return.

I'll rather feed with fiends on brimstone broth,  
Than eat sack posset with a man of wrath. [*Exit.*]

---

#### ACT IV. SCENE I.

*Enter LAURA, STEPHANO.*

LAU. You are very inquisitive.

STEPH. And you are very secret.

LAU. Do you intend me that as commendation ?

STEPH. Yes, and yet I do not thank you for it.

LAU. You may take your praise back again, for I will not be commended for keeping that secret which I do not know.

STEPH. Can you be ignorant of the lady whom you serve ?

LAU. I told you I had not serv'd her above three days. But still you are inquisitive, and why, I pray ?

STEPH. The endeavour of knowing things shews diligence of the mind, and you should praise me for it.

LAU. Those may praise spies who employ 'em.

STEPH. You take me then for a spy ?

LAU. So impertinent a spy that I wonder you do not walk with a dark lanthorn when the sun shines.

STEPH. What, to seek chaste women as Diogenes sought honest men ? Come, I confess you have wit.

LAU. I thank you, sir.

STEPH. I would you would thank me for being in love with your beauty.

LAU. Love ! is that fool's-bauble in fashion still ?

STEPH. 'Tis the only fashion which never changes.

LAU. Mistress Bettris will hardly believe you.

STEPH. No, she believes in nothing but marriage.

LAU. O, cry you mercy, for indeed marriage is grown as dangerous as love is foolish.

*Enter SANCHE.*

STEPH. I'll retire to make that coxcomb jealous.

*[Exit Steph.]*

SANCH. How ! hah !

LAU. O Signior Sancho, 'tis well you are come.

SANCH. Too well.

LAU. Your friend Stephano would fain be your rival, but you are the man for whom I mean to sigh.

SANCH. Yes, much !

LAU. I'll lay my life you are jealous.

SANCH. Who, I ?

LAU. Pray come from behind your beard and shew your bare face if you are angry.

SANCH. I am.

LAU. If you are, I can endure it.

SANCH. You can ?

LAU. Yes.

SANCH. Who cares ?

LAU. You do.

SANCH. Not this——

*[Makes a sign of disdain with his thumb at his teeth.]*

LAU. 'Tis well.

SANCH. 'Tis ill.

LAU. 'Tis not.

SANCH. You lie !

LAU. Hey day !

SANCH. Hey too !

LAU. Farewell !——

SANCH. Go !——

*[Exit Sancho.]*

*Enter STEPHANO, BETTRIS.*

STEPH. How now, Mistress Laura ?

LAU. This steward, though he be exceeding dull,  
is very sharp at repartees.

BET. Why, what has he said ?

LAU. He gave me the lie.

STEPH. 'Tis impossible.

LAU. If he did not I'm an eunuch.

STEPH. None but a eunuch would have done't.

LAU. Don Ferdinand has been gallant in his youth : he shall repair my honour. I'll tell him



how often this Tarquin-steward would have kist me by force.

STEPH. Kiss you ! fye, that's a paw-word.

BET. No, no, he's a cleanly man, and would only have brusht your lips with his beard.

LAU. May be so, for they grow somewhat dusty for want of use.

BET. Don Ferdinand shall not wake his sleeping sword in this quarrel ; trust me for your revenge.

LAU. Why, what will you do ?

BET. I'll render Sancho up to your correction, and he shall be then as blind as Cupid.

STEPH. But how ?

BET. He shall feel our persecution and not see it.

LAU. You have some design, but 'tis very dark.

BET. You know the ladies and our masters are lately much retir'd with thoughtful intanglements of love and anger : which will give me opportunity to invite solemn Sancho this evening to our room of revels in the garden.

LAU. Well, what then ?

BET. You likewise know, he passionately loves a sack-posset.

STEPH. Most longingly.

BET. Then you apprehend my bait ; but, instead of that for his entertainment, he shall entertain us with sport sufficiently ridiculous, though it be more out of fashion than himself or a morrice.

LAU. I long to see it but——

BET. No more questions. Let's presently go in and consult. [*Exeunt.\**]

*Enter ISABELLA, LUCILLA.*

ISAB. You must not think of your escape from hence.

\* This scene between Stephano and Bettris is omitted in the edition of 1775.

LUC. Whilst you are civil you are cruel too.  
Fair Isabella, let me take my leave.

ISAB. My father is not easily deceiv'd ;  
Whilst you attempt it you deceive your self.  
Your reconcilment with your brother may  
Seem difficult at first, but if you doubt  
My father's skill to govern him, you must  
Depend on Heav'n, and then you must have faith ;  
Which out of Temples we call courage.

LUC. Nothing but death can quench my brother's  
wrath,

Pray free your self from the unfortunate !  
These tears agree not with your nuptial joys :  
And let me tell you, what you soon will find,  
Don John is nothing less than what he seems.

ISAB. I saw him in the garden but just now,  
and my maid

Walking towards him. Go hide your self !

Pass through the gall'ry up the tarras-stairs into  
my closet, where I will meet you straight. I will  
awhile conceal myself in some close arbor to ob-  
serve him and Bettris together. [Exeunt.

*Enter DON LEWIS, STEPHANO.*

D. LEWIS. Some heav'nly power contrives these  
accidents ; they have a secret method in them, and  
more than fortune makes me still unhappy.

STEPH. I am amaz'd that you by chance should  
court her whom you forsook, and meet the mistress  
here from whom you fled so many miles.

D. LEWIS. Hast thou discours'd with her maid ?

STEPH. Yes ! but she is newly come into her  
service, and is either a stranger to her lady's  
designs, or else so secret that no man but a hus-  
band can see her bosom bare.

D. LEWIS. Heav'n takes Lucilla's part against  
me, for I have done her wrong.

STEPH. O, have you so? You lovers are very diligent spies and bold, but very incredulous; you always are scouting abroad, yet never see or believe mischief till you feel it.

D. LEWIS. I think she loves me, and with true passion.

STEPH. But you love another, and that's a rare remedy for her disease.

D. LEWIS. I am perplexed beyond the help of reason. I know there are laws against irregular love, but nature never made 'em. I would thou wert valiant.

STEPH. So would not I. I'm content to have no holes in my skin rather than pay a surgeon to sew 'em up.

D. LEWIS. Well, however, I would thou hadst courage.

STEPH. Then I should be an ass in spite of my understanding, and fight for fame, the fool's mistress.

D. LEWIS. Don John's man is saucily insolent, and his condition is below the revenge of my sword; but if thou hadst courage to undertake him——

STEPH. Sir, I never question'd my own courage, and I wish no man may, for I, and others too, may be mistaken.

D. LEWIS. I am going now where I shall meet Don Ferdinand, who will bring me an account of Don John.

STEPH. Sir, I told you my infirmity when you first received me under your roof. I'll serve you faithfully; but I must obey the king, who does enjoin peace amongst his subjects.

D. LEWIS. Well, though thou hast no courage, yet I am satisfied with thy diligence. I stole hither chiefly to make thee encrease thy acquaint-

tance with Laura, Lucilla's maid : and whatsoever shall succeed upon this engagement of my honour, be sure to endeavour that she may give good impressions of me to her mistress.

STEPH. This, sir, is a work of peace, and I dare go through with it ; but as for matters of strife, if you would take my advice——

D. LEWIS. No more words ! I'll take no council from men that are afraid.

STEPH. Well, sir, fortune be your friend. But I humbly conceive that men of discretion seldom depend upon her courtesy. [*Exeunt several ways.*]

*Enter JODELET and BETTRIS.*

BET. I will assure you, sir, you have been sought, and, for my part, I was so concern'd in your absence that I offer'd to employ the town-cryer.

JOD. It had been to no purpose, for that public voice cannot be heard. Alas, he's grown hoarse with crying for lost maidenheads.

BET. Sir, you are sometimes merry, but always wise.

JOD. Alas ! not I ! yet it seems I am of some importance, since I have been so much sought. But who were the searchers ?

BET. Your father-in-law and Don Lewis. Your man, too, was so sad, as if he had not only lost his master, but his wages.

JOD. I owe him nothing but a cudgel for being so saucy as to miss me without my order. May not a master steal out to seek a mistress unless he ask leave of his man ?

BET. But where were you, sir ?

JOD. I was invited by a friend to a dish of stew'd tripes with garlick. What key is that ?

BET. It belongs to your chamber. Don Ferdi-

nand has appointed you another lodging near the garden.

JOD. I had rather it had been near the kitchen. I esteem his cook above his gardener. The steam of beef to me, who am not over-curious, is better than the odour of violets. But why am I remov'd?

BET. The old gentleman is afraid of scandal. And, to say truth, it might do some harm to you—I mean to your modest reputation— if, before the marriage night, you should be lodged too near his daughter.

JOD. Nay, let her look to that; I care not what people say, when I am innocent. But, dear Bettris, thou dost not know how much I love thee.

BET. How should I know it? you take me to be old! I'm none of those who pretend to know-ledge.

JOD. I ever lov'd one of thy complexion, ever: and since I saw thee first I have been as hot as any pepper.

BET. Why truly, sir, though I blush when I say it, I ever lov'd all the Don Johns in the world; and when you first came hither my foolish heart—but I'll say no more.

JOD. Nay, we must be secret: for if the least notice be taken of it, I shall straight have flushings in my face; and blush like a rose.

BET. I'm sure you make me hide mine. I pray stand farther off!

JOD. Poor little fool! Well, innocence is a strange thing; it makes us strange to one another, but a little of that which ancient people call wickedness will make us familiar. I prithee shew me the way down to my chamber.

BET. (*sighing*). Hey down a down! in troth y'are an odd man. You make me sigh e'en when I sing. Here, take the key! I'll be gone.

JOD. Pretty thief ! I could find in my heart to weep when I think thou wilt be hang'd for stealing men's hearts. Dear slut—I am maudlin-kind, would I had one of thy hoods to cover my face ; I shall be so asham'd if I'm seen thus whining for thee. But 'tis no matter ; go, lead the way to my chamber ! I'll sneak after thee.

BET. You must follow me apace then ; for I'm a very light hus-wife. *[She runs away.]*

JOD. The bunting is flown. Now I could e'en weep indeed ! I must for very shame overtake her. *[Isabel starts from the door and surprises him.]*

ISAB. Stay, Don John ! what, are you coursing my maid ?

JOD. We are only at children's play. Are you so old that you have forgot it ? 'Tis hide-and-seek, and when maids run away, then the boys make haste to catch 'em.

ISAB. Is't nothing else ? But, however, I did not think you had been so wanton.

JOD. The tricks of youth are left when we grow old.

ISAB. But you'll beget an ill opinion of your chastity ; and give me cause to doubt your affection.

JOD. Our future spouse, you may go spin ! Madam-nature is a greater lady than you, and I was always her humble servant ; and those who speak against it may stop their mouths with a fig.

ISAB. It seems you are displeas'd. I'll leave you, sir.

JOD. Most wise lady, and also most beautiful, you cannot do better.

ISAB. I'll take your opinion. Fare you well, sir ! *[Exit.]*

JOD. Humph ! Are you so proud because of your portion ? this is only her want of breeding.

Methinks I counterfeit a Don John rarely ; for husbands of quality must be sometime discontented with their wives, and often pleas'd with their maids.

*Enter DON FERDINAND.*

D. FERD. Don John, I am glad, after some affection and care in seeking you, that you are not lost.

JOD. Most careful sir, I also am glad, and for the seeker's sake, because the loss would be his. I think that was spoken again like a Don John. But what are your commands ?

FERD. Have you heard nothing of your man Jodelet ? nothing from any of his acquaintance ?

JOD. I use not to converse with my man's companions.

FERD. But something, sir, will be propos'd to you, which, in a season before marriage, may be, perhaps, a little unpleasant.

JOD. How ? what is it ?

FERD. You must absolutely—but, sir, excuse me, for I speak with some regret.

JOD. What, must I, sir ? pray speak the worst, and let it out for your own ease, if you are troubled with keeping it in.

FERD. You are invited to the field ; and it imports you much.

JOD. Is that all ? A turn or two in the field is wholesome after a full stomach.

FERD. But, sir, it is to fight.

JOD. That may import me much indeed. I do not like the phrase of being invited to the field to be kill'd. Men are very simple when they go into a grave to take the air.

FERD. It is the fashion, sir, and men of honour have allow'd it.

JOD. The fashion! but, sir, if, without resistance, I am contented to go peaceably into the field, why should any man who meets me there be angry? especially when, perhaps, his being pleas'd would at that time better agree with my disposition?

FERD. I know not what you mean.

JOD. I am sorry for't: I held you to be an old gentleman of a long understanding: but to speak plainly, why should a man take the pains to walk a mile to meet another who is of a different humour?

FERD. You have been bred to ask that question?

JOD. Don Ferdinand, you seem sometimes not very wise. I doubt that in your youth y'ave been inclined to this foolish way of invitations to the field, and have been hurt in the head. I say your reason at present is not exceeding sound.

FERD. Come, courage, Don John! and first let me know, why you infer I am not wise?

JOD. Because you come to tell me of a quarrel which I knew not, nor perhaps did not desire to know.

FERD. Sir, in this I have done my duty, and you'll do well t'acquit yourself of yours, without being serv'd by the valour of another. To-day you ought t'encounter him who kill'd your brother. And I am sorry, sir, to tell you, that he kill'd him in the night.

JOD. Hey! was it at night?

FERD. Ay, sir, at night!

JOD. Then, for my part, let the devil fight with his own match; for if he be able to kill a man without seeing him, he will be sure to kill me when he sees me.

FERD. This sounds strangely.

JOD. Besides, sir, this dangerous enemy fights



by advantage, for having found the way how to kill one of my kindred, he knows by that, the fashion how to kill me.

FERD. Sir, you ought to consider——

JOD. Sir, I have well consider'd it, and must tell you, as a great secret, that all the family of the Alverads do ever fight one and the same way.

FERD. Don John! do you think that you have courage?

JOD. A plague on it! I have but too much. Alas! 'tis not for that, sir; do not ask me whether I have courage, but rather tell where he lives: is't far from hence? must I stay for him? or do you know his lodging? Or may I enquire it out? and in the meantime, tell me but his name.

FERD. It is Don Lewis de Rochas.

JOD. A pox on him! I knew he would scape my hand. Don Lewis de Rochas? why that's your nephew. Sir, you must know I reverence all men of your name.

FERD. I partly thank you, sir.

JOD. Any man of the family of the Rochas is so considerable to me that I will lay my head at his feet. And particularly, as for Don Lewis, if you please, I am very well pleas'd to love him.

FERD. But, sir, I have not told you all; for he has done a second injury, which should more provoke you to revenge. Your sister has too much reason to complain of him.

JOD. Sir, as for my sister, truly he may be asham'd to wrong her; but I have made a vow, and the ladies must pardon me for it——

FERD. What was your vow?

JOD. Never to draw my sword in a woman's quarrel.

FERD. Sir, I am much deceiv'd if you are not a coward.

JOD. Ah father-in-law! if that could possibly be, yet your discretion should not meddle in nice things, which, by the care I ought to take, should never concern you.

FERD. But you shall know that it concerns me much.

JOD. Bless me! what a strange father-in-law would you be? has the devil sent you hither to tempt me, not only to homicide, but also to kill my new alliance, your nephew? nay, and before consummation, which, for ought I know, may likewise kill your daughter.

FERD. I would thou wert valiant but one minute, that, without loss of my honour, I might kill thee before thou grow'st a coward again.

JOD. O fie, Don Ferdinand, I have found your disposition; you would fain be too cruel; but I'm resolv'd to be merciful; and will not tell you how valiant I am.

FERD. But I am now resolv'd to tell you, that your man has given his word to fight for you.

JOD. His word? The jealous coxcomb needs not keep it; for I did never doubt his courage.

FERD. Is that all?

JOD. Why then, sir, if he will needs fight for me, let him know I shall not be jealous that my own valour is less than his.

FERD. And yet you will not fight, either for your brother or your sister.

JOD. A man must be in humour when he fights, and let me die like a dog—which I would not say falsely to get the whole world—if, to my remembrance, I ever had a less disposition to fighting than now. Mistake me not, I speak but according to my remembrance.

FERD. Well, I thought you valiant, but I am couzen'd.

JOD. Sir, I confess I have taken too much pleasure in deceiving the world, for I have couzen'd many who thought me valiant, and many who thought me a coward.

FERD. You have given your self a rare recreation.

JOD. But, sir, let's leave the pleasant part of our discourse, and be a little serious.

FERD. Do so, but with as much brevity as you can.

JOD. I pray tell me, sir ! suppose that with a sagun, or with a rapier of Toledo, I were pierc'd like a cullender ; or suppose that with a Syrian scymitar or a bucksword-blade of Houndslough, I were minc'd into a pie, how would my brother or my sister be the better for it ?

FERD. Well, for your father's sake, my ancient friend, I'll leave you whole, without being either pierc'd or minc'd.

JOD. For his sake, sir, I will with patience endure your courtesy.

FERD. You shall do well in doing so ; but for my own sake, you must, instead of my daughter, seek another wife in Madrid.

JOD. What ! you would have a Cid to your son-in-law, that should kill you first, then marry Chimena ?

FERD. Expect nothing from me but scorn and hatred. O incomparable coward !

JOD. I am, O Don Ferdinand ! despite of your cruelty, and of your black teeth, your most humble and most faithful servant ; and I am as much, or more, to the lady Isabella.

FERD. I am not yours ; and when you are out of my house—which must be suddenly, and without noise,—I shall do my self the dishonor to force you to another kind of account.

*Enter DON JOHN.*

D. JOHN. Don Ferdinand ! I pray, sir, what puts you into choler ?

FERD. My ill choice of a cursed son-in-law.

JOD. Don Ferdinand, I'll be gone, that you may speak better of a friend behind his back. [*Exit.*]

FERD. Let him go, Jodelet ! He disavows you in all, and has told me plainly, he was not of opinion that he ought to take notice of injuries ; and that he was never inclin'd to revenge. Nay, he has almost profest that he has lost his courage.

D. JOHN. [*Aside.*] 'Tis strange that he took no more care to keep it having so little.

FERD. Pray call him back to save his honour ! Tell him what he ought to do, being doubly affronted by Don Lewis. Dear Jodelet, shew the friendship of a servant by persuading a master to courage.

D. JOHN. Sir, I am sure he has a kind of country-courage.

FERD. What do you mean ?

D. JOHN. I mean he's very obstinate, and will seldom yield to persuasion.

FERD. I'm sorry, for his father's sake ; especially since I have proceeded so far towards an alliance. If I were doubly injur'd as he is, I should not behave my self like him. His enemy stays for me at the end of the street ; I'll go to him.

*Enter JODELET.*

D. JOHN. Do, sir, for my master is come back, though I fear I shall find him too haughty to be counsell'd into courage. [*Ex. Ferd.*]

JOD. Is he gone, sir ?

D. JOHN. Yes, but tell me, Jodelet, what new affront have we to revenge ?

JOD. I am the son of a sow if he has not remov'd my patience so far from me that I can hardly reach it again: yet I'm as unwilling to be angry as another. Sir, you must disguise your self no longer. These false habits may grow to be fools' coats, and Don Lewis will turn all into laughter. But you did challenge him for me?

D. JOHN. Yes, and without telling him that I was Don John. And, in troth, I did suspect that the young gallant had courted Isabella. In short I found him hidden in her chamber; and, but for an accident which I must conceal from thee, we should have met in the field.

JOD. That is to say, you had invited him to take the air in a grave.

D. JOHN. I have deferr'd the business till I see one thing more evident, which is yet but the subject of my suspicion: for, perhaps, I may find it but a false-game which Bettris plays to get money.

JOD. That baggage carries her purse in her bosom; and, according to the Northern Proverb, is as liquorish at a penny as at a posset.

D. JOHN. I have some reasons to believe that Isabella is very ignorant of the artifice.

JOD. Sir, there may be more in't than you suspect. I'm loth to say it, but, if I could speak without making any words, I would tell you that I think Don Lewis offends you in private.

D. JOHN. Ah, say no more: I guess too much. All my past misfortunes and the present concur against me: but I have some comfort yet, for nobody takes notice of it.

JOD. None know it, for ought I know, unless it be the people.

D. JOHN. Thou mak'st me mad. I will consider

nothing but revenge. Is Don Ferdinand our friend or enemy?

JOD. Don Lewis is of his blood; but for the honour of yours, he does that which no man ever did for another. He would have Don Lewis give you satisfaction, and Don Lewis stays for me near this house; who still believes me to be Don John.

D. JOHN. I must kill him: but men of action are often parted in the street. The war which honour makes in streets does quickly end in peace, and I grow doubtful where to fight.

JOD. 'Tis great pity there is not some amphitheatre, built at the public charge of butchers, for the honourable exercise of cutting men's throats.

D. JOHN. Revenge is often interrupted in the field, because now even all peculiar fields are turn'd to common roads about this populous town. If I could find some house, though 'tis against the fashion us'd in duels——

JOD. Stay, sir, I'll fit you with a place. I have the key of a low apartment where we are to lodge. There you may conveniently be reveng'd, almost in the sight of your mistress, and yet neither she nor her father can see it.

D. JOHN. Thou hast made an excellent choice, my dear Jodelet.

JOD. My dear Don John!

D. JOHN. Go and appoint him a meeting in the evening.

JOD. But rather, sir, do you go. 'Tis now high time that men should know who you are. How can you think to continue your fury and pass for Jodelet? Go, go, sir, discover your self, and fight soundly! Revenge is a hearty food for those who have a stomach to't.

D. JOHN. How, Jodelet? because for a mere provocation of jealousy, for a simple suspicion, I

have disguis'd my name, wilt thou therefore have me discover my self before the injury be evident? No, thou shalt remain Don John awhile, and invite him to the low chamber, to measure weapons there, and to consult about contriving the privacy of the duel.

JOD. Then you command me to be still Don John?

D. JOHN. I do rather conjure thee.

JOD. Well, I obey you, sir. But if by chance, as men are often impatient, he should draw his sword before he enters this house, what shall Jodelet do who has no inclination to war, and is, perhaps, contented to sojourn in this foolish world?

D. JOHN. Make signs to him far off. He's prompt, and will not fail to follow thee till he comes where I will stay to kill him.

JOD. There's another scruple, which lies in the very bottom of my bowels.

D. JOHN. What's that?

JOD. He may be short sighted, and, thinking my sword drawn, may run at me.

D. JOHN. Fy, fy! thy imagination is too subtle. He has an eye like an eagle and will distinguish at a mile's distance any little fly from a flea. Thou shalt beckon him far off, then lead him to me.

JOD. These appointments are somewhat hard. But, sir, pray be sure that you likewise take heed of mistakes. Men's eyes are often dazzled with choler. If I, without thinking of you, should enter before Don Lewis; and you, without thinking of me, should run a tilt at my belly——

D. JOHN. Thou hast a Jesuitical way of making impossible scruples.

JOD. Nay, sir, I know if I am wounded, you Will cry, in troth, poor Jodelet, I'm sorry!  
Excuse a foolish chance! Then I, good soul,  
Shall quickly be contented and soon whole.

*[Exeunt several ways.]*

## ACT V. SCENE I.

*Enter ISABELLA, LUCILLA, BETTRIS. A candle on the table.*

ISAB. Madam Bettris, what do you here ?

BET. I am preparing a warm chamber for your benumb'd lover ; and, I beseech you, from whence come you, and Madam Lucilla ?

ISAB. We have been sighing in a shade.

LUC. Madam, I must tell you again, if fortune should bring the whole sex of men before you, and give you leave to make your own election, you could not chuse a more worthy husband than Don John ; and, when you know him better, you will confess my belief is guided by reason.

ISAB. And I must needs declare, since your opinion is so confident against mine, that one of us is very ignorant.

LUC. You make me wonder, Madam ; but if all wonder did not proceed from ignorance, I should not quickly yield in this debate.

ISAB. Alas ! you are his sister ; and that may well excuse your partiality. You may allow me liberty to tell you this, because we have contracted a friendship.

BET. Were I my mistress, if there were no more men in the world, I would marry Don John, because I would have children, and because all children are not like the father.

LUC. Bettris, I cannot be angry when you please to be merry.

BET. Madam, whatever your griefs be, I wonder you are not merry too, for Don John makes all the world laugh.

ISAB. Bettris ! you are too rude.

BET. Madam ! you are too grave. If I were to



be bride, like you, I would not carry myself like a nun.

ISAB. (*Aside.*) I am unhappy above the help of fortune ; ordain'd to be possess of what I hate, and by unnatural custom I am made ashamed of what I love.

BET. Madam, let us hasten up stairs ! somebody opens the door and will surprise us [*noise within like a key turning a lock\**]. (*Aside.*) 'Tis Laura ! who, as I appointed, makes a noise about the lock to fright these love-sick ladies, and make them retire, to take their med'cine of sighs. Madam, I hear't again !

ISAB. You are scar'd !

BET. If you had been as often privately in love as I have been, you'd soon be afraid at the opening of a door.

[*Exeunt Isabella, Lucilla.*]

So, let them feed on sorrows of love ; which is commonly at Court the ill second course at the promising feasts of lovers, whilst we, poor wenches, are contented with country sports. [*Exit.*]

*Enter SANCHE, STEPHANO, and LAURA, with a scarf in her hand, ANOTHER SPANIARD and two YOUNG WOMEN.*

LAU. The lie, Signior Sancho, is hard of digestion ; but, having first swallowed the gilded pill of love, it prepares the stomach for any thing.

STEPH. And I have said so much, to cure your jealousy, as would make an old Italian trust his wife with a young painter, and leave her with him to draw her naked.

SANCH. Not naked.

\* At this point, in the edition of 1775, which closes Scene I., *exeunt Isabella and Lucilla.* The second scene opens with the entrance of Don John, who, "after unlocking the door and bringing the key," says, "I hear them coming," &c., see p. 91, the intermediate passages being omitted.

STEPH. You shall, besides the materials of our last collation, have an inundation of olio,\* where you may bathe your knuckles till you cure 'em of the gout.

LAU. But we must enable our appetites with exercise. We have appointed a dance for blind-man-buff, in which you shall be hoodwinkt, and appear all over, Cupid the second.

SANCH. Bating beard.

LAU. Come, gentle love, let me blind you ! and then——

SANCH. Collation ?

STEPH. 'Tis prepar'd within.

SANCH. Mighty olios ?

STEPH. A sea of olio, and in it hams of Baijon lying at Hull with sails furl'd up of cabbage-leaves.

SANCH. Then bisks.

LAU. Embroider'd with pistachoes.

SANCH. And mussels ?

STEPH. Broil'd ; and then, to make you corpulent, roasted chestnuts stew'd in gravy.

SANCH. And chitterlings ?

STEPH. Ay, ay, to fill up chinks.

SANCH. And ragouts ?

STEPH. Strew'd over with salt-petre and Jamaica-pepper, to make you thirst for whole flagons of scargos and ravidavio ; and you shall be a very——

SANCH. Drunken Cupid !

LAU. Pray love, be humble and stoop a little——

SANCH. I yield !

[*Laura hoodwinks Sancho with a scarf.*

*Enter BETTRIS.*

BETT. We have now both place and opportunity for mirth. The ladies are retir'd, Don Ferdinand's

\* A Spanish dish made by mingling different kinds of meat, flavoured with garlic.

abroad, the three strangers are severally disperst, and gone, I think, in quest of wand'ring love.

LAU. We have a staid old Cupid here who wears his quiver in his pocket, full of tooth-picks instead of arrows, in expectation of a feast.

BET. What, blinded already ? Come then, let's begin !

*[They put themselves into several stations and Sancho in the middle.]*

STEPH. Now we have blinded so your sight  
That ev'n at noon the rays of light  
Are lost as if your eyes were out,  
We'll turn you once and twice about.  
About, about ! about again !  
Twice for the maids, once for the men.

BET. Here stands a maid, and there a man.

OMNES. We all are near ; catch whom you can.

STEPH. We clos'd your eyes lest you should see ;  
And so your ears shall useless be.  
For now, as in the calm of sleep,  
All shall commanded silence keep ;  
Lest any man or any maid,  
Be by distinguish'd voice betray'd.

BET. Here stands a maid and there a man.

OMNES. We'll all start fair. Catch whom you can !  
*They dance, in which the men kick Sancho by turns, and he at several times says the following words.*

SANCH. That's a man——  
That's no maid——  
That's a horse——  
Courage brave bum——

*[The dance being ended a bell rings.]*

BET. My lady rings. She wants me. Let's away !

SANCH. Where's collation ?

*[He pulls down his scarf.]*

LAU. Signior Sancho, I took the lie from you, and now you must accept of one from me. I promise you a collation, but there is none. You must e'en fast and pray for better manners.

BET. We did this to save you a labour; for when no crumbs can fall upon your beard you need not brush it.

SANCH. I could eat——

LAU. What?

SANCH. Thee. [*Exeunt Sancho one way, and the rest at the other door*]

*Enter DON JOHN.*

D. JOHN. I hear 'em coming. I'll leave the door open, take away the key, and conceal my self in the alcove.

*Enter JODELET, DON LEWIS.*

JOD. Now where's the evil spirit, my master? Hah! *vanisht!* he's gone, quite gone! This Don Lewis is as famous as Cain for matters of killing, and, which is worse to me than no help, he shuts the door. Well, since I'm pent in I would I were but as valiant as an imprison'd cat, that I might fly at his face. 'Tis very inconvenient to be a man without manhood. O that traitor, my master!

D. LEWIS. Now, sir, we are enclos'd, and may fight without interruption.

JOD. (*Aside.*) I would he were hang'd that is not here to part us.

D. LEWIS. You mutter, sir! you may express your anger with your sword.

JOD. Who, I, sir? I scorn to mutter any thing against any man who will give me any reasonable satisfaction.

D. LEWIS. I was bravely invited and am ready to do you reason.

JOD. Sir, I shall always report you are not only

a very reasonable man, but are also willing to consider—

D. LEWIS. What mean you by consider ?

JOD. That's well ask't, sir, and I am apt to answer your questions, if you will spend a little time in discourse.

D. LEWIS. Is this a time to be spent in words ?

JOD. Nay, sir, I see you are hasty, but, perhaps, I may have patience to hear you out.

D. LEWIS. To hear me out ? Do you take me for a talker when I come to be in action ?

JOD. (*Aside.*) This 'tis to meet with brute beasts that are not capable of discourse. I'm quite forsaken. My master has, certainly, no kind of conscience—

D. LEWIS. What the devil do you seek ?

[*Jodelet looks up and down.*]

JOD. (*Aside.*) Two things, which I fear I shall not find : my valour and my master.

D. LEWIS. This is a mystery ! Still you are muttering, but what look you for ?

JOD. I hope you are alone.

D. LEWIS. How, sir ! do you bring me hither to ask that ?

JOD. Lord, you are so choleric that one cannot speak to you : may not a man ask a question for your good ?

D. LEWIS. I have attended to see your sword out ; and honour taught me that patience : but now I'll trust you with no more time—

[*He draws.*]

JOD. Bless me ! what a long spit he draws ! I have been a raw fellow at fighting, and now am like to be roasted.

D. LEWIS. Come, sir ! Are you ready ? for I scorn to take advantage.

JOD. In troth I see you are a man of honour,

and I could find in my heart to consider a while how I may requite your courtesy.

D. LEWIS. Courtesy? I disdain to receive it from you. Prepare your self——

JOD. Stay, stay a little, sir!

Let me advise you as a friend to lay aside your passion when you fight, for in good faith you are too hasty.

D. LEWIS. Is this behaviour equal to your former heat? Methinks you grow cold. Your courage is an ague, for it comes in fits. But I shall cure it.

JOD. (*Aside.*) Heav'n, I thank thee heartily! for I spy my master. Ah, sir! come out! do you want courage?

[*Speaks softly to Don John behind him.*]

D. JOHN. Retire as thou art fighting that thou may'st amuse him.

D. LEWIS. Quick, sir, draw! for I have told you that I scorn to take advantage.

JOD. Nay, an' you grow so angry, sir, then I say again, stay! for I scorn all advantages as much as you do.

[*He takes up the candle.*]

D. LEWIS. If you have any odds I cannot see't.

JOD. Lord! how your passion blinds you. Do you think I'm so base as to fight with rapier and candle against single rapier.

D. LEWIS. Lay down the light then.

JOD. Honour is a fool in the field when it wants stratagem.

D. LEWIS. I think he's mad; for still he mutters and looks back. Don John! I suspect the temper of your brain, as much as I doubt the courage of your heart; you seem to have a great quantity of the coward, but more of the fool.

JOD. Not so much of the fool as you suppose, sir——

[*He puts out the candle.*]

D. LEWIS. What! art thou all coward, and cover'st thy self in darkness?

JOD. Did not you kill my brother in the dark?

D. LEWIS. If that will more incense thee, know, I did.

JOD. (*Aside.*) Then try your cat's eyes once again. [*He retires.*]

D. LEWIS. Say you so, sir?

JOD. (*Aside.*) The devil's in the dice if you throw twice in and in, without any light.

D. LEWIS. Where are you, sir?

JOD. (*Aside.*) What a fool were I if I should tell him.

D. LEWIS. You are bashful, and would not have your courage seen.

JOD. (*Aside.*) I'm a little valiant when I spy no naked weapon.

[*He steps aside, thrusts at great distance at first, and at last hits Don Lewis, then retires to the alcove.*]

Now good speed to one push at hazard—I think that toucht something. I hope I have not run my sword through one of the Cæsars' eyes in the hanging——

D. LEWIS. The wretch has drawn my blood! I feel it, for it wets my hand. But now by this, more than before, he does deserve to be my enemy.

D. FERD. (*Within.*) I'm certain that's my nephew's voice. If I can feel no key in the lock, then mine will give me entrance.

D. JOHN. Go forth from the alcove or I'll strangle thee.

DON FERD. *opens the door and enters with a light.*

D. FERD. Hah! what's the business here my friends?

[*Jod. steps out of the alcove. D. Ferd. lays hold on D. Lewis.*]

JOD. I'm taking satisfaction for my injuries.

D. LEWIS. I have lost blood, and will be straight reveng'd.

D. FERD. Is't by stoccado, or stramason ?

JOD. A thousand Satans take all good luck ! I shall pay soundly for having the honour to give the first wound.

D. FRED. Let me see, nephew ? your hand is hurt.

D. LEWIS. 'Tis but a slight prick.

JOD. Would I had two in my right hand that I might get an excuse to let my sword fall.

D. FERD. Now, my dear friends, fight freely ! I come not here to make peace. The one, who suffers by a deep and double injury, is by promise to be my son-in-law. The other is my nephew, who must be satisfied for loss of blood. I'll look on each with the same eyes which in my youth did love to see the exercise of honour. Fight, and fight bravely ! but first let me place the light conveniently for both.

D. LEWIS. Your counsel will be quickly follow'd, sir, by men who know your courage.

JOD. Rare counsel indeed, which exhorts us to a duel. This old man is heartily wicked, and may be held the very father of the Hectors.

D. LEWIS. My anger makes me insolent and cruel. And, that I now may dare you to do more than you durst do till darkness hid your fear, know, I've deceiv'd your sister, and have kill'd your brother.

D. JOHN *enters from the Alcove.*

D. JOHN. Since I am thus confirm'd, honour has leave of conscience to be bloody in revenge——  
Stay, sir !



JOD. (*Aside*). O are you come? in true tragedies let every man act his own part.

D. JOHN. You do not know Don John : behold him here ! You did deceive my sister, and have kill'd my brother, and are now, against your self, th'audacious witness of such double wickedness as justice cannot hear but with a double sense of anger and of shame. I wish you had more than a single life to answer both.

D. FERD. But is the man become the master ?

D. LEWIS. Make haste to let me know, which of the two is more worthy than the other to be my enemy. Which is Don John ?

D. JOHN. That name is mine.

D. LEWIS. Then what is he ?

JOD. I'm no Don John, I dare assure you, sir ; but yet am so well bred, that I can give way to my betters in all quarrels.

D. JOHN. Under a servant's name I have endur'd my injuries whilst I had got no more than a suspicion of th'offender's person to authorize my revenge ; but, since you proudly have declar'd you did those injuries, you cannot think that I should longer bear them. My brother's blood incites me to revenge.

D. LEWIS. The cry of blood may cease when the revenge of it is near.

D. JOHN. Know my revenge is heighten'd by that black dishonour which has stained my sister's beauty, to whom you have ignobly shewn a want of such compassion as does use t'accompany true courage.

D. LEWIS. Are you the true Don John, renown'd for valour, and yet strive, with softning pity, to ally that courage against which your honour does contest ?

D. JOHN. You ought to think my vengeance for

my brother's death allows not words to respite deeds : but, by degrees, I am proceeding to the reason of this short delay.

D. LEWIS. This is such a temper as I never knew.

D. JOHN. That I may make my sister feel my justice more than cruelty, let me be now oblig'd even by an enemy, with so much truth as men of noble race can never want.

D. LEWIS. What would you ask ?

D. JOHN. Whether your many vows, broken as fast as sworn, did not seduce my sister from her father's house to seek you in disguise ? And whether in those vows you did not make a sacred contract of immediate marriage ?

D. FERD. This son-in-law is as prudent as he is valiant ; though I did pronounce the other son-in-law a coxcomb.

JOD. That's I. But, patience, for I've already shed blood enough.

D. LEWIS. Though when our swords are drawn 'tis then no season for confession, yet, in a just compassion, for her sake, I will declare a blushing truth. Your sister owes her affliction to my repeated vows of marriage.

D. FERD. I swear !—by the honour of all mustachios, and of all the beards in Spain, my nephew is a traitor.

JOD. Bless me ! what a horrid oath was that ? no choler shall transport me to swear by more beards than my own.

D. FERD. Hadst thou a heart so cruel as to o'ercome a virgin by thy vows, and then forsake her for her faith ? Son-in-law, I'm wholly now of your side, and will renounce my blood in him ; who does deserve to have it shed not by a single hand of honour, but by confederacy of common force.

V.

G

JOD. Now for the French mode of fighting

[*D. Ferdinand goes to D. John's side.*]

I fear I shall, by a trick of honour, be made a second to the wrong side.

D. LEWIS. Stay, uncle ! shall the virtue of confession make you my enemy ?

D. FERD. Yes ! where divines are not the duellists——

D. JOHN. Hold, Don Ferdinand ! My honour will not suffer me to share in such advantages.

D. LEWIS. That's spoken like a true Don John.

D. FERD. Then I alone will fight with him.

D. JOHN. My honour will less yield, that you, sir, should deprive me of my enemy. Sir, I beseech you, hold !

D. FERD. Then take him to your self ! though such who traitors are to virgins deserve their punishment from every hand.

D. JOHN. (*To D. Lewis*). I have another question now, to which a civil foe will give reply ; and 'tis to cure my greatest pain, my jealousy ; so great a torment as I could not wish to my most fatal enemy, no, not to you.

D. LEWIS. Sir, now you teach me to be civil. Proceed to tell me your disease if you will hasten to the remedy.

D. JOHN. Know, I am jealous !

D. LEWIS. Of whom ?

D. JOHN. Of you.

D. LEWIS. Of me ?

D. JOHN. I saw you leap from the balcony of this house.

D. LEWIS. Did you see it ?

D. JOHN. Yes, I saw it, and, since that, found you conceal'd in Isabella's chamber.

D. FERD. (*Aside*). Hah ! Can I have patience to hear more ?

D. LEWIS. If I in this new confession shall add to what I spoke before, you cannot think 'tis from th' effect of fear, for honour does oblige me to't. If I have been your rival then my love did wrong your sister rather than injure you, because I did not know Don John : and honour now does join with truth to make me call on Heav'n to assist me when I Isabella vindicate ; who with disdain refused all love but what her father should prefer.

D. FERD. (*Aside.*) That is some motive for my patience.

D. LEWIS. I further must declare that Bettris, to promote th' address I made for marriage, did, unknown to her lady, hide me then in the balcony, and after that conceal'd me in her lady's chamber ; for which she was in hazard of her service.

D. FERD. (*Aside.*) I remember my daughter would have dismiss her service ; which gives my patience another comfort.

D. JOHN. All my disease of jealousy ends here, and I'll continue still to be a civil enemy, for I will thank you for my cure. But now——

D. FERD. Stay, stay Don John ! The next demand belongs to me. Why did you make your visit here in a disguise ?

D. JOHN. Sir, it is fit you should be satisfied. I chang'd my habit when I saw him scape from the balcony, supposing in another shape my jealousy might sooner be inform'd.

D. FERD. I hear enough. My honour now makes me forsake your cause, and leads me to the other side. You are my enemy !

[*He goes to the side of D. Lewis.*]

D. JOHN. 'Tis my misfortune then, and not my choice.

D. FERD. You came into my house not as a lover but a spy ; and, with a stratagem, coarse, and

below my dignity, advanc'd your man to woo my daughter. Prepare yourself for my revenge !

D. LEWIS. Pray, hold, sir ! hold ! you punish me too much in taking from my sword that enemy who first made me his choice.

D. JOHN. Don Ferdinand, you never can so much provoke me as to raise my anger 'gainst the father of the mistress whom I love.

D. FERD. You lov'd with too much insolence, and doubtfully, when you design'd your man to court her in your shape.

D. JOHN. I may, without dishonour, crave for that your pardon : and when you shall resent my change of shape, you then forget love's ancient histories ; for my disguise is not the first that love has worn. But I conjure you, by my father's friendship, to forgive the foolish arts of jealousy.

D. FERD. Well ! for his sake I am pleas'd, and bury your offence ; but 'tis on this condition that I may now restrain your combat till I treat with each for both.

D. JOHN. To this I yield.

D. LEWIS. To shew that you have taught me temper I consent by your example.

JOD. My master taught Don Lewis discretion and I taught it him. 'Twas ever said of Don Jodellet, that he did much incline to peace.

D. FERD. You, by your sword, Don John, have leisure to receive

Such satisfaction as your honour does require  
For all my nephew's broken faith, which now  
Afflicts your sister, but he can never bring her  
back to her fair fame

Unless he marry her ; and I presume I need not  
now persuade

What justice and religion does enjoin.

D. LEWIS [*to D. John.*] I doubly am prepar'd.

First I will meet your sister in the Temple to perform my former vows ; and then I will return and meet you here, or, in the field, to pay the debt I owe you for your brother's blood.

D. FERD. Don John, none yet did ever celebrate the sacred rites of Hymen with a tragedy ; and I'm obliged to tell you that my nephew often has lamented your unhappy brother's death, who in the dark was wounded by mistake, and I have heard my nephew vow that he did ever wear your brother in his bosom as his dearest friend.

D. LEWIS. This truth which you affirm does more, perhaps, become your tongue than mine, whilst I continue in this posture 'gainst an enemy.

D. JOHN. The season now is fit to tell, why I have here  
Made some delay of my revenge. My brother is  
alive !

D. LEWIS. Alive ? Heaven is propitious in this wonder.

D. FERD. I am alike surpriz'd with wonder and with joy.

D. JOHN. Much blood my brother lost by that unlucky wound you gave him, which some hours depriv'd him of the chiefest signs of life, but, being to a surgeon's house remov'd, he was by his great art, in a few days, made hopeful of his cure. I did conceal the good success even from my servants, and in Madrid divulg'd that he was dead.

D. FERD. What could you mean by making that report ?

D. JOHN. I thought, Don Lewis, that the rumour of his death would make it harder for you to escape the rigorous law in order to my sister's injuries, who then forsook my father's house in your pursuit.

D. FERD. My dear John, since you perceive

your brother only wounded by mistake, and that wound cur'd : Don Lewis and your sister ready to be join'd by Hymen's hand, and I prepar'd to make my Isabella yours ; let me behold a knot of friendship tied between two enemies. Come both, and cheerfully embrace.

D. JOHN. Don Lewis, all offences past shall vanish like the dreams of infancy.

D. LEWIS. And all that we hereafter to each other do, shall last like the exemplar deeds of men renown'd. [*Don John and Don Lewis embrace.*]

JOD. Peace is proclaim'd ! I'll rest contented with honour gotten in the dark, and sheath my sword as gamesters put up false dice, to hide 'em after they have won money.

*Enter ISABELLA, BETTRIS.*

D. FERD. Come Isabella, you shall now, and with your own consent, be given to Don John.

ISAB. With my consent ? Are there such miracles when Lucilla says all faith is lost ; or else, at least, that men have none.

D. FERD. Behold the true Don John !

ISAB. [*To Ferd.*] Though I'm not worthy of your favour, sir,  
Yet use me not with scorn.

D. FERD. You may perceive my joy, and cannot think it counterfeit.  
You shall know more before I lead you to the priest.

ISAB. This is a miracle which I am willing to believe.

D. FERD. Give me your hand, which must be mine no more, for it is now your nuptial pledge.

D. JOHN. Give me your pardon, madam, ere I take your hand :  
Pardon the cause for which I did assume

My servant's shape ; but I am now the true Don John.

ISAB. (*Aside.*) Prophetic love ! thou taught'st me to believe it ere he said it.

D. FERD. Bettris, I will not chide you now. This day permits no anger.

BET. Indeed, I ever thought this was the true Don John.

Though, in the dark, I twice mistook another for him :

Which made me hide Don Lewis ; first in the balcony,

Then in my lady's chamber.

D. FERD. Go, go, make haste ! and call the Lady Lucilla. [*Exit Bettris.*]

JOD. Truly she was mistaken, sir. Her eyes are much decay'd with watching late to prevent th' unlucky meeting of lovers.

D. JOHN. Come, sister ! you shall weep no more.

*Enter LUCILLA and BETTRIS.*

Don Lewis is your best physician and can cure your grief. He is my present to you ; take him, and forgive him !

D. LEWIS. Can you forgive me, madam ? The priest will do it when he joins our hands.

LUC. He is ordain'd to be th' example still of what

We are to do ; and I shall quickly follow it.

This is a sudden change ; I will not now examine how it comes, nor chide you when you tell it me.

JOD. Bettris, you have a great mind to take my hand too.

BET. Troth you must wash it first ; for when your gloves were off I still suspected that you were no more than an uncertain Don, called Jodelet.

D. LEWIS. Don Jodelet, I have a small mark of



your favour, which I wear on my right hand : but I intend not to requite it till you are Don John again.

JOD. Sir, you may defer your requital as long as you please. You know I'm one of those who scorn to be too hasty in calling for satisfaction when men are anything willing to give it.

D. FERD. The clouds which hover'd o'er my roof  
to-day

Are all dispell'd. Make me your guide : I'll lead  
You first to church, and then prepare for feasts.

*Enter LAURA, SANCHE, STEPHANO.*

LAU. Why should we stay list'ning here any longer? We have heard 'em talk of strange changes, and of wonders more fortunate than we could wish.

STEPH. Don Ferdinand spoke of feasts : we cannot have a better cue for our entrance. We may safely step in, Signior Sancho!

SANCH. We may.

D. FERD. Come happy lovers, follow me!

JOD. Pray, stay awhile! For matters may not  
pass

So smoothly as you think. Madam, you have  
Of mine a little picture which you please  
To pin upon the curtain of your bed :  
You keep the picture, yet are well content  
To lose th' original. That's fine i'faith,  
Sweet lady! but 'twill not do. Restore  
It to me or be sure you never walk  
Abroad alone after the sun is set.  
Don Jodelet is such a furious spark  
As will have satisfaction in the dark.

*[Exeunt omnes.]*

## THE EPILOGUE.

*In a Ballad, sung by two.*

1.

LADIES who fine as fi'pence are,  
You men with bright rose-noble hair,  
Both all and some, for we now except none,  
O thrust out your ears and list to our moan.  
Attend and eke hearken out of pure pity  
To tidings doleful ; yea in a sad ditty.  
The players grow poor and down they must fall,  
Though some say they get the devil and all.  
Alack, and alas ! our hearts are e'en broken :  
But because in all plays  
You still look for new ways,  
We mean now to sing what ought to be spoken.

2.

Since now those poets get the vogue  
Who still, with a bold epilogue,  
Dare rattle spectators and cry 'em down,  
As you do their plays, we'll tell you your own.  
First, loving kind friends, who come from the  
city,  
You never think any play can be witty,  
But that in which courtiers shrewdly are jeer'd.  
Out on it, and fie ! was e'er the like heard ?  
Why would you have us to bob and gibe 'em,  
When the wiser complain  
That in private, for gain,  
You are the men who endeavour to bribe 'em.

3.

Some gallants, though nameless, come here  
Expecting our poets should jeer

The city for custards and for the show  
 When pageants through rain do pass to and fro.  
     Those very old frumps, perhaps, would be  
     pretty ;  
     But, gallants, we have not the dulness to fit ye;  
 They grow too stale, and the reader who looks  
 Upon the sad notes of many shop-books  
 Will think that the cits have seldom undone ye.  
     Rather you, ev'ry year,  
     Spoil their shows and their cheer,  
 For they want your wit, and you have their money.

## 4.

Now up wi' boots, and have at all !  
     Ev'n you whom we town-gallants call ;  
 Who with your round feathers make a great show,  
 We mean you did wear such three years ago ;  
     Come then, and stand fair, that now we may  
     hit ye,  
     Because ev'n like Turks, without any pity,  
 You visit our plays, and merit the stocks  
 For paying half-crowns of brass to our box.  
 Nay, often you swear, when places are shewn ye,  
     That your hearing is thick,  
     And so, by a love-trick,  
 You pass through our scenes up to the balcony.

## 5

And some, a deuce take 'em ! pretend  
     They come but to speak with a friend ;  
 Then wickedly rob us of a whole play  
 By stealing five times an act in a day.  
     O little England ! speak, is it no pity,  
     That gallants ev'n here, and in thy chief city,  
 Should under great peruques have heads so small,  
 As they must steal wit, or have none at all !

Others are bolder, and never cry, shall I ?  
For they make our guards quail,  
And 'twixt curtain and rail,  
Oft combing their hair, they walk in Fop-Alley.

## 6.

Gallants relent and eke repent,  
For your so foul, nay, bad intent  
Of paying us brass instead of true coin ;  
And, for amends we only enjoin,  
That ev'ry man, to declare conscience in ye,  
Shall whisper a friend, and borrow a guinny ;  
Which in our box you may carelessly throw,  
And pay him who lends it to-morrow to mow.  
And now to conclude, 'tis fit to acquaint ye  
That though this epilogue  
Does not flatter and cog  
Yet a new ballad may pass for a dainty.



**THE LAW AGAINST LOVERS.**



**THE LAW AGAINST LOVERS.**





THE four dramatic pieces which follow are all more or less connected with Shakespeare's name. In the list of D'Avenant's plays given in the introductory memoir there occurs a fifth, in which, it has been always considered, he had a hand, viz., an alteration of "Julius Cæsar," but, as the authority which gives this alteration to Sir William D'Avenant and John Dryden rests entirely upon the title-page of the play, which was not printed, according to the several biographers, until 1719, a doubt exists as to its truth. The title-page is this:—

"The Tragedy of Julius Cæsar, with the Death of Brutus and Cassius; written originally by Shakespeare, and since altered by Sir William D'Avenant and John Dryden, Poets Laureate, as it is now acted by his Majesty's Company of Comedians, at the Theatre Royal. To which is prefixed the Life of Julius Cæsar, abstracted from Plutarch and Suetonius." 12mo. 1719.

In a quarto volume of plays in the library of the Faculty of Advocates, Edinburgh, there occurs an edition of Julius Cæsar, without date, but printed "for Henry Herringham," the intimate acquaintance of both D'Avenant and Dryden, "as performed at the Theatre Royal," but without any mention being made of their names in connection with it. The title is this:—

"Julius Cæsar. A Tragedy, as it is now acted at the Theatre Royal. Written by William Shakespeare, London, Printed by H. H., jun., for Hen. Herringham and R. Bentley, in Russel Street, in Covent Garden, and sold by Joseph Knight and Francis Saunders, at the Bleu-Anchor, in the Lower Walk of the New-Exchange, in the Strand."

The cast of the characters is thus given:—

"Julius Cæsar, Mr Goodman. Octavius Cæsar, Mr Perrin. Antony, Mr Kynnaston. Brutus,† Cassius, Casca, Trebonius, Ligurius, Decius, Brutus, Metellus, Cimber, Cinna (Conspirators), by Mr Betterton, Mr

Smith, Mr Griffin, Mr Saunders, Mr Bowman, Mr Williams, Mr Montfort, Mr Carlile. Artimedorus, Mr Percival. Messala and Titinius, Mr Wiltshier and Mr Gillo. Cinna, the Poet, Mr Jevon. Flavius, Mr Norris. Plebeiana, Mr Underhill, Mr Lee. Mr Bright. Calphurnia, Md. Slingsby. Portia, Mrs Cook."

Julius Cæsar was performed at the Theatre Royal in 1682, about the time of the union of the two companies, and again in 1684, but again without any mention of either D'avenant or Dryden.

It may be well to note here that a Latin play on the subject of Cæsar's death was performed at Christ Church, in Oxford, in 1582. Malone thinks that there was an English play on the same subject previous to Shakespeare's. Cæsar was killed in *Pompey's portica*, and not in the Capitol; but the error is at least as old as Chaucer's time.

" This Julius to the Capitolie wente  
Upon a day, that he was wont to gon,  
And in the Capitolie ouer him bent  
This false Brutus and his other soon,  
And sticked him with bodekins anon  
With many a wound," &c.

—*Chaucer's Monke's Tale*, v. 11, 621.

THE present tragi-comedy is composed out of two of Shakespeare's plays, "Measure for Measure" and "Much Ado About Nothing." The Biographia Britannica observes that "Mr Langbaine gives a very good character of it, and indeed it is very smoothly and correctly written."

Langbaine further says, "Though not only the characters, but the language of the whole play almost, be borrowed from Shakespeare, yet where the language is rough or obsolete, our author has taken care to polish it: as, to give, instead of many, one instance—Shakespeare's Duke of Venice says thus (Act i., scene 1):—

" I love the people;  
But do not like to stage me to their eyes;  
Though it do well, I do not relish well  
Their loud applause, and Aves vehement;  
Nor do I think the man of safe discretion,  
That does affect it."

In Sir William's play the Duke speaks as follows :—

“ I love the people ;  
But would not on the stage salute the crowd.  
I never reliaht their applause ; nor think  
The Prince has true discretion who affects it.”

Shakespeare's comedy of “ Measure for Measure ” is founded on a novel in Cinthio Giraldi, viz., *Deca Ottava*, Novella 5<sup>a</sup>. The like story is in Goulart's “ *Histoires Admirables de Nôtre Tempa*,” tome i., p. 216, and in Lipsii *Monita*, l. ii., c. 9, p. 125.

Pope notes “ that the story ‘ Measure for Measure ’ is taken from Cinthio's Novels, Dec. 8, Nov. 5.” The critical Warburton, in his edition of Shakespeare (as the author of “ *Canons of Criticism* ” observes), puts the contracted words at full length, thus : December 8, November 5.

“ Measure for Measure ” was again altered in 1700, it is believed by Gildon, and published in 4to, under the title of “ *Measure for Measure, or Beauty the best Advocate*, as it is acted at the Theatre in Lincoln's-Inn-Fields. Written originally by Mr Shakespear ; and now very much altered ; With additions of several Entertainments of Musick. London : Printed for D. Brown, at the Black Swan without Temple bar ; and R. Parker at the Unicorn under the Royal-Exchange in Cornhill, 1700.”

Langbaine says of “ *Much Ado About Nothing*,” “ All that I have to remark is, that the contrivance of Borachio, in behalf of John the Bastard, to make Claudio jealous of Hero, by the assistance of her waiting woman, Margaret, is borrowed from Ariosto's ‘ *Orlando Furioso*. ’ ” See book the fifth, in the story of Lurcanio and Geneuza ; the like story is in Spencer's “ *Fairy Queen*,” book ii., canto 4.

Pepys thus records the performance of the “ *Law against Lovers* :”—

18th Feb. 1661-2.—“ Having agreed with Sir W. Pen to meet him at the opera, and finding by my walking in the streets, which were everywhere full of brick-battes and tyles flung down by the extraordinary winde the last night (such as hath not been in memory before, unless at the death of the late Protector), that it was danger-

ous to go out of doors ; and hearing how several persons had been killed to-day by the fall of things in the streets, and that the pageant in Fleet Street is most of it blown down, and hath broke down part of several houses, among others Dick Brigdon's ; and that one Lady Sanderson, a person of quality in Covent Garden, was killed by the fall of the house, in her bed, last night ; I sent my boy to forbid Sir W. Pen to go forth. But he bringing me word that he is gone, I went to the opera, and saw The ' Law against Lovers,' a good play, and well performed, especially the little girl's (whom I never saw act before) dancing and singing ; and were it not for her, the losse of Roxalana would spoil the house."

THE NAMES OF THE PERSONS.

THE DUKE OF SAVOY.

LORD ANGELO, *his deputy.*

BENEDICK, *brother to Angelo.*

LUCIO,                 }  
BALTHAZAR,         } *His friends.*

ESCHALUS, *a counsellor.*

CLAUDIO, *in love with Julietta.*

PROVOST.

FRIAR THOMAS.

BERNARDINE, *a prisoner.*

JAILOR.

FOOL.

HANGMAN.

PAGES.

BEATRICE, *a great heiress.*

ISABELLA, *sister to Claudio.*

JULIETTA, *mistress to Claudio.*

VIOLA, *sister to Beatrice, very young.*

FRANCISCA, *a nun.*

*Scene : TURIN.*



## THE LAW AGAINST LOVERS.

---

### ACT I. SCENE I.

*Enter DUKE, ANGELO, and attendants.*

DUKE. I'm sure in this your science does exceed  
The measures of advice ; and to your skill,  
By deputation, I resolve to leave a while  
My place and strength.

ANG. Your Highness does amaze me with your trust.

DUKE. Your brother will be here to-night ; and brings  
His share of victory and fair renown.  
That victory gives me now free leisure to  
Pursue my old design of travelling ;  
Whilst, hiding what I am, in fit disguise,  
I may compare the customs, prudent laws,  
And managements of foreign States with ours.

ANG. Your Highness has a plenteous choice of men,  
Whom you may here depute with more success,  
Than my abilities can promise.

DUKE. Here, take our commission !  
In which we have enabled you with all  
The sev'ral strengths and organs of my pow'r :  
Your youth may bear that weight, which tires my age.

ANG. In this acceptance, sir, I do with some  
Unwillingness obey your pleasure.



DUKE. Heaven does with us as we with torches  
do,  
Not light them for themselves, but others' use.  
For if our virtues go not forth of us,  
It were alike as if we had them not.  
Be thou at full our self whilst we are absent  
From our seat in Turin.

ANG. Sir, I could wish  
There were more trial of my mettle made,  
Before so noble and so great  
A figure as your own be stamp't on it.

DUKE. No more evasion,  
I have proceeded towards you with choice,  
Sufficiently prepar'd.

*Enter ESCHALUS.*

Good Eschalus,  
Your ceremony now of taking leave  
Must needs be short. You know the purpose of  
My trust to Angelo, who here has my  
Commission seal'd.

ESCH. Your Highness having been  
So long resolv'd to travel, could not leave  
A deputation of your pow'r in better hands.

DUKE. Farewell! our haste from hence is of  
import.

You shall, as time and fit occasion serves,  
Have letters from us; and I hope to know,  
With equal care, what does befall you here.

ANG. Will not your Highness give us leave to  
bring  
You onward on the way?

DUKE. My haste permits it not.  
You need not, on mine honour, have to do  
With scruple, for your scope is as mine own;  
So to enforce, or qualify the laws,  
As to your soul seems good. Give me your hand,

I'll privately away ! I love the people ;  
 But would not on a stage salute the crowd.  
 I never relisht their applause ; nor think  
 The Prince has true discretion who affects it.  
 Be kind still to your brother Benedick,  
 And give him that respect which he  
 Hath by his share in victory deserv'd.  
 Once more, farewell !

ANG. The heavens give safety to your purposes.

ESCH. Lead forth, and bring you back in happiness. *[Exit Duke.]*

ANG. I shall desire you Eschalus, to let  
 Me have free speech with you ; for it concerns  
 Me much to see the bottom of my place.  
 The Duke has left me pow'r, but of what strength  
 And nature it will prove, may haply  
 Require your friendship to consider.

ESCH. My lord, if it shall please you to withdraw,  
 You may command my secresy and service. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter* BEATRICE, JULIETTA, VIOLA, BALTHAZAR.

BEAT. Does Signior Benedick return to-night ?

BALT. We may expect him presently. He brings

A share of conquest with him, and intends  
 To make a modest entry here by stealth :  
 But he is still as pleasant as you left him.

BEAT. How many has he kill'd, and eaten, in  
 These wars ? But pray, how many has he kill'd ?  
 For I promis'd to eat all of his killing.

BALT. He has done great service in these wars,  
 lady.

BEAT. Sure you had musty victual then ;  
 And he has helpt to eat it. I know, sir,  
 He is a valiant trencher-man, and has  
 A good stomach.

BALT. He is a good soldier, lady.

BEAT. A good soldier

To a lady, but what is he to a lord ?

BALT. A lord to a lord, a man to a man :  
Stuft with all honourable virtues.

BEAT. He is, indeed, no less than a stuf man :  
But for the stuffing—Well, we are all mortal.

JUL. Do not mistake my cousin Beatrice, sir,  
There is a kind of a merry war between  
Count Benedick and her : they never meet,  
But there is a skirmish of wit between 'em.

BEAT. He got nothing by that. In our last en-  
counter

Four of his five wits did go halting off ;  
And now the whole man is govern'd by one.  
I pray, sir, who's his companion now ? for he was  
wont

Every month to have a new sworn brother.

BALT. Is't possible ?

BEAT. Very possible.

He wears his faith but as the fashion of  
His hat ; it still changes with the next block.

BALT. Madam, the gentleman is not in your  
books.

VIOL. If he were, I have heard my sister say  
She would burn her study.

BALT. Small mistress, have you learnt that in  
your primer ?

This, madam, is your pretty bud of wit.

VOIL. A bud that has some prickles, sir. Take  
heed ;

You cannot gather me.

BEAT. But, Signior Balthazar,

I pray who is Count Benedick's companion ?

BALT. At idle seasons, madam, he is pleas'd  
To use no better company than mine.

BEAT. He will hang on you like a disease,

He's sooner caught than the pestilence ;  
 And the taker does run presently mad.  
 Heaven help you, Balthazar, if you have caught  
 The *Benedickt*, for it will cost you more  
 Than a thousand pounds to be cur'd.

BALT. I wish I may hold friendship with you,  
 lady.

BEAT. Y'ave the wit, sir, to wish for your self.

JUL. You'll never run mad, cousin.

BEAT. Not till a hot January.

*Enter SERVANT.*

SERV. Madam, your guardian's brother, Count  
 Benedick,  
 Is newly enter'd.

BEAT. The man of war, having been flesht  
 In the last battle, will bear all before him.  
 Let us sound a retreat, and hide our selves  
 Behind the hangings, to mark his behaviour.

VIOL. Dear sister, let me hide my self too——

[*Beatrice, Viola, Juliet, step behind the hangings.*]

BALT. O pray do, with a bongrace from the sun.  
 Madam, I'll leave you to your ambush.

*Enter BENEDICK, ESCHALUS.*

BEN. My brother private in affairs of State ?

ESCH. My lord, he's at this instant much re-  
 serv'd ;

But, when I shall acquaint him you are here,  
 He will dismiss his business to receive,  
 And welcome you ?

BEN. Signior Eschalus, I thank you : but it  
 Is fit our private love should give free way  
 To service which concerns the public profit.  
 I am, sir, in some trouble, that I could  
 Not have the happiness of paying my  
 Obedience to his Highness ere he went.

Will he be absent long ?

ESCH. That is unknown  
Even to your brother Angelo ; who is his full  
Vicegerent here, and hath receiv'd commands  
To let you taste his pow'r, to every use  
That can procure you any benefit,  
In memory of your last service.

*Enter LUCIO.*

LUC. My lord you are most happily return'd,  
And met with all the joys we can express.

BEN. Lucio, I am much pleas'd to see you well ;  
It gives me hope that I shall have but few  
Sad evenings here in Turin, if the  
Beauties which I left be not quite wither'd,  
Their voices crackt, and their lutes hung on willows.

LUC. My lord, I am not only hasten'd hither by  
My love to be the first that shall congratulate  
Your good success abroad, but to entreat  
Your aid at home. If you will please but to  
Take leave of that grave magistrate a while,  
I shall deliver you a message from mankind.

BEN. How, Lucio ? That is of concern indeed.  
Signior, I shall beseech you to observe  
My brother's leisure, that I may attend him.

ESCH. Your lordship is most welcome to Turin.

*[Exit Eschelus.]*

BEN. Now, Lucio, speak your affair from that  
great

Common-Wealth which sent you, mankind.

BALT. They are too many for you to enquire  
Particularly after their healths ; therefore  
He may without ceremony proceed.

LUC. You have heard of the supreme pow'r  
plac'd in

Count Angelo, your brother ?

BEN. I have, Lucio.

LUC. Under your favour, sir,  
I may say the beginning of his rule  
Is not pleasing to the best sort of men ;  
He deals very hardly with lovers.

BEN. I am sorry to hear that of a brother.

LUC. My lord, I am more sorry to report it.  
He has already reviv'd an old law,  
Which condemns any man to death, who gets,  
Being unmarried, a woman with child.

BEN. How, Lucio ? does he mean to govern, like  
The tyrant Turk, with eunuchs of his council ?

LUC. You must assuage the choler of his wisdom,  
And put him in mind that men are frail.

BEN. This business, Balthazar, requires our care ;  
For we having professed against the bonds  
Of marriage, and he restraining  
The liberty of lovers, the good Duke,  
When he returns, will find no children left  
In Turin.

LUC. For my part, sir,  
I only fear the destruction of learning :  
For if there be no children, farewell grammar-  
schools.

BEN. Come, we must sit in council, Balthazar,  
Increase our party, and still defy marriage.

BEAT. We cannot hear 'em, Juliet ; let us enter !

*Enter BEATRICE, JULIETTA, VIOLA.*

BEN. My dear lady disdain ! are you yet living ?

BEAT. Can disdain die when she has so fit food  
To feed it as Benedick ?

BEN. I am belov'd of all ladies, only  
You excepted ; and I am sorry they must lose  
Their sighs ; for I have a hard heart,  
And can love none.

BEAT. A happiness to women ; who would else  
Be troubled with a most pernicious suitor !  
But I can answer your humour ; for I

Had rather hear my dog bark at a crow,  
Than a man swear he loves me.

BEN. Keep in that mind, lady, for then some of  
my

Friends may scape a predestinate scratcht face.

BEAT. Scratching could not make it worse,  
If it were such a face as Benedick's.

BEN. You are a rare parrot-teacher.

BEAT. A bird of my tongue is better than a beast  
of yours.

BEN. I would my horse had the speed of your  
tongue;

But keep your way : I have done.

BEAT. Juliet, he always ends with a jade's trick.

JUL. The gentleman's wit is tir'd after spurring.

VIO. Y'are welcome home, my lord. Have you  
brought

Any pendants and fine fans from the wars ?

BEN. What, my sweet bud, you are grown to a  
blossom !

VIO. My sister has promis'd me that I shall be  
A woman, and that you shall make love to me,  
When you are old enough to have a wife.

BEN. This is not a chip of the old block, but will  
prove

A smart twig of the young branch.

*Enter ESCHALUS and SERVANT.*

ESCH. Lord Angelo expects you, sir, and this  
Fair company. [*Ex. Beat. Ben. Balth. Jul. Esch. Vio.*]

SERV. Signior Claudio, now under an arrest,  
Desires to speak with you.

LUC. How ! under arrest ? The Governor's house  
Is no proper place for a prisoner's visit.

Pray favour me so much as to tell him that  
I'll come down to receive his commands.

[*Ex. Serr. Luc.*]

*Enter PROVOST, CLAUDIO, officers.*

CLAUD. Thus can the demi-god Authority make  
Us pay down for our offence by weight.

*Enter LUCIO.*

LUC. Claudio! how now! from whence comes  
this restraint?

CLAUD. From too much liberty.  
As surfeit is the father of a fast,  
So liberty, by the immoderate use,  
Turns to restraint. Our nature does pursue  
An evil thirst, and when we drink we die.

LUC. If I could speak as wisely under arrest,  
I would send for some of my creditors;  
Yet, to say truth, I had rather enjoy  
The foppery of freedom, than the wise  
Morality of imprisonment. What  
Is thy offence, Claudio?

CLAUD. To speak of it were to offend again.

LUC. What is it, murder?

CLAUD. No.

LUC. I believe 'tis that which the precise call  
incontinence.

CLAUD. You may call it so.

*Enter BALTHAZAR.*

BAL. I am told Claudio is arrested.

LUC. 'Tis too true, Balthazar.

BAL. What is his crime?

LUC. Lord Angelo has taught us so much  
modesty,  
That I am ashamed to name it.

BAL. What, is there a maid with child by him?

LUC. No, but I fear there is a woman with maid  
by him.

PROV. Signior, I shall offend if you stay here:  
Be pleas'd to go.



CLAUD. Provost, allow me but a few words more.

LUC. Pray, Claudio, speak your mind : we are your friends.

CLAUD. I grieve to tell you, gentlemen, that I Have got possession of Julietta's bed. She is my wife by sacred vows, and by A contract seal'd with form of witnesses. But we the ceremony lack of marriage, And that, unhappily, we did defer Only for the assurance of a dowry Remaining in the coffers of her friends ; From whom we thought it fit to hide our love, Till time had master'd their consent to it. But so it happens, that

Our oft stolen pleasure is now writ With characters too gross in Juliet.

BAL. With child, perhaps.

CLAUD. 'Tis so ; And the new deputy Awakens all the enroll'd penalties, Which have been nineteen years unread, and makes Me feel the long neglected punishment, By such a law, as three days after Arrest, requires the forfeit of my head.

LUC. Thy head stands now so slightly On thy shoulders, that a milk-maid, if she Be in love, may sigh it off.

BAL. Lucio, you are a stranger to Lord Angelo, But I well know the sourness of his soul : And I was told, in passing to you hither, That Juliet is arrested in his house, And forc'd from the protection of The Lady Beatrice, his fair ward.

LUC. I like it not : send quickly to the Duke, And then appeal to him.

CLAUD. I have done so ; but he's not to be found. I prithee, Lucio, lend me thy assistance ;

This day my sister should the cloister enter,  
 And there receive her approbation.  
 Acquaint her with the danger I am in ;  
 Implore her in my name, that she make friends  
 To the strict deputy : she must herself assay him ;  
 I have great hope in that ; for in her youth  
 There is a sweet and speechless dialect,  
 Such as moves men ; and well she can persuade.

LUC. I wish she may. I would be loth  
 That any of my friends should foolishly  
 Play away their lives at a game of tick-tack.

BAL. We will both to her presently.

CLAUD. Come, officers, away !

*Enter DUKE and FRIAR THOMAS.*

DUKE. No, Holy Father ; throw away that  
 thought ;

Love's too tender to dwell in my cold bosom.  
 I desire you to give me secret harbour,  
 For a design more grave and wrinkled than  
 The aims of giddy youth can have.

FRIAR. May your Grace speak of it ?

DUKE. None, Holy Father, better knows than  
 you,

How I have ever lik'd a life retir'd ;  
 And still have weary of assemblies been,  
 Where witless youth comes drest to be ador'd.  
 I have deliver'd to Lord Angelo,  
 A man of strictness, and firm abstinence,  
 My absolute pow'r and place here in Turin ;  
 And he believes me travelling to Spain.  
 Now, pious sir, you will demand of me  
 Why I did this ?

FRIAR. I fain would know.

DUKE. We have strict statutes, and chastising  
 laws,  
 Which I have suffer'd nineteen years to sleep,

Even like an o'ergrown lion in a cave  
That goes not out to prey. But as fond fathers  
Bind up the threatening rod, and stick it in  
Their children's sight, for terror more than use,  
Till it in time become more markt than fear'd ;  
So our decrees, dead to infliction to  
Themselves are dead, and froward liberty  
Does Justice strike, as infants beat the nurse.

FRIAR. This tied up Justice, sir, you might  
have soon  
Let loose, which would have seem'd more dreadful  
Than in Angelo.

DUKE. Too dreadful, sir. For since  
It was my fault to give the people scope,  
It may seem tyranny to punish them  
For what I bid them act. We do no less  
Than bid unlawful actions to be done,  
When evil deeds have their permissive pass.

FRIAR. I am convinc'd.

DUKE. I have on Angelo impos'd  
Th' unpleasant pow'r of punishing ; who may,  
Within the ambush of my name,—strike home.  
And to behold how he does rule, I will,  
As if I were a brother of your order,  
Visit both Prince and people. Therefore, I pray,  
Supply me with the habit, and instruct me how  
I may in person a true friar seem.  
I can allow you no more reasons for  
This action now, than that Lord Angelo  
Stands at a guard with envy, and does scarce  
Confess that his blood flows ;  
The man seems singular, but we shall see,  
If pow'r change purpose, what our seemers be.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter ISABELLA, and FRANCISCA a nun.*

ISA. But have you Nuns no further privilege ?

NUN. Are not these large enough ?

ISA. They are ! I speak not as desiring more,  
But rather wishing a more strict restraint  
Were on the sisterhood vow'd to Saint Clare.

LUC. Ho ! peace be in this place !

[*Lucio, Balthazar within.*]

ISA. Who is it that does call ?

NUN. It is a man's voice. Gentle Isabella,  
Pray turn the key, and know his business of him :  
You may, I may not ; you are yet unsworn.  
When you have vow'd you must not speak with  
men,

But in the presence of the prioress ;  
Then if you speak you must not shew your face ;  
Or if you shew your face, you must not speak.

LUC. Ho ! the sisterhood.

NUN. He calls again ; I pray you answer him.

ISA. Peace and prosperity ! Who is't that calls ?

*Enter LUCIO, BALTHAZAR.*

LUC. Hail virgin ! please you befriend us so,  
As to permit us to the sight of Isabell,  
A novice of this place and sister to  
Young Claudio, her unhappy brother.

ISA. Why her unhappy brother ? Let me ask ;  
The rather since I now must make it known  
I am that Isabella, and his sister.

LUC. Gentle, and fair ! your brother kindly  
greet's you.

BAL. We cannot, Lucio, come too suddenly  
With sorrows to a mind prepar'd ; 'tis fit  
You tell her that her brother is in prison.

ISA. Ay me ! for what ?

LUC. For that which cannot be excus'd ;  
And yet, perhaps if he were tried  
By judges not much older than himself,  
Would have an easy punishment. He has,

I hope unwillingly, got his friend with child.

ISA. Sir, make me not your scorn.

LUC. I would not, though 'tis my familiar sin  
To jest with maids, play with all virgins so.

I hold you as a thing enshrin'd, and to

Be talkt with as a saint in all sincerity.

ISA. You hurt the good in mocking me.

BAL. Believe what he has said is truth.

ISA. Some one with child by him ? my cousin  
Juliet ?

LUC. Is she your cousin ?

ISA. Adoptedly, as school-maids change their  
names.

LUC. She it is.

ISA. Let him marry her.

BAL. Married they are in sight of heaven,  
though not

With such apparent forms as makes the law

Approve and witness it.

LUC. The Duke is very strangely gone from  
hence ;

And, with full force of his authority,

Lord Angelo now rules ; a man whose blood

Is very snow-broth, one who never feels

The wanton motions of the sense ; but does

Rebate and blunt his natural edge

With morals, Lady. He studies much,

And fasts.

BAL. To frighten libertines, who long have  
scap'd,

And silently have run by th' sleeping face

Of hideous law, as mice by lions steal.

Lord Angelo has hastily awak'd

A dreadful act, under whose heavy sense,

Your brother's life falls into desperate forfeit.

LUC. All hope is gone, unless you have the  
grace,

By moving prayers, to soften Angelo.

ISAB. Does he so sternly seek his life ?

LUC. He has already sentenc'd him, and, as I hear, the Provost has a warrant for His execution.

ISAB. Alas, what poor abilities Have I to do him good ?

BALT. Make trial of what pow'r you have.

ISAB. My pow'r, alas, I doubt.

LUC. Go to Lord Angelo, and let him know, When virgins sue, men give like Gods ; But when they weep and kneel, no pow'r has then So much of devil in't as not to yield.

ISAB. I'll see what I can do.

LUC. But speedily.

ISAB. I will about it straight ; Not staying longer, than to give the mother Notice of my business. I humbly thank you. Commend me to my brother ! Soon at night I'll send him certain word of my success.

LUC. We take our leaves.

ISAB. Heaven guide you, gentlemen ; And so prepare to Angelo my way, As if Saint Clare did prompt me how to pray.  
[*Exeunt.*]

---

ACT II. SCENE I.

*Enter* ANGELO, BENEDICK. •

BEN. But for ill doing, sir, must Claudio die ?

ANG. The law appoints that he Who gets a child unlawfully must die.

BEN. But must a man be requited with death, For giving life to another ?

ANG. We must not make a scare-crow of the law ;  
 Setting it up to fright our birds of prey ;  
 And let it keep one shape, till custom makes it  
 Not their terror, but their perch.

BEN. Call, sir, your own affections to accompt,  
 Had time concur'd with place, or place with  
 wishing ;

And, had the resolution of your blood  
 Found means t'attain th' effect of your own  
 purpose,

Perhaps, in some hot season of your life,  
 Even you, sir, would have err'd in that  
 For which you censure him.

ANG. 'Tis one thing to be tempted, Benedick,  
 Another thing to fall. I not deny  
 The jury passing on a prisoner's life,  
 May, in the sworn twelve, have a thief or two  
 Guiltier than him they try. What knows the law,  
 Whether thieves pass on thieves ?

You cannot lessen his offence, because  
 I have offended too : but tell me at  
 That time, when I, who censure him, do so  
 Offend ; and my own judgment then shall be  
 A pattern for my death. Brother, he must die !

BEN. Sir, when I heard you had the place of  
 Justice,  
 I did not think your gravity did mean  
 To swagger with her broad sword. Can dame  
 Justice

Become, so soon, so notable a cutter ?

ANG. You have leave to be pleasant ; but I pray  
 Listen to Eschalus, he'll give you counsel.

*[Exit, and*

*Enter* ESCHALUS.

BEN. Good Eschalus ! I should have found you  
 out.

Is there no means to save poor Claudio's life ?

ESCH. Your brother has given order to the  
Provost,

To see his execution punctually

Perform'd, by nine to-morrow morning.

BEN. A short warning for a terrible long journey.

ESCH. A confessor will be sent to prepare him.

BEN. I'm told, Signior Eschalus, you have counsel for me.

ESCH. My lord, I'll not presume to call it mine ;  
'Tis from your brother, who does well advise,  
That you would please to think of marriage.  
You know the lady Beatrice was his ward ;  
And now her wardship is expir'd.

BEN. Marry ?

What to beget boys for the headsman ?

ESCH. Good, my lord, leaving your severity,  
You needs must think her beauty worth your  
praise.

BEN. She's too low for a high praise, and too  
little

For a great praise ; but thus far I'll commend her ;  
Were she other than she is, she were then  
Unhandsome, and, being no other but  
As she is, I do not like her.

ESCH. My proposal deserves a steady answer.

BEN. My brother, sir, and I, walk several ways.  
He takes care to destroy unlawful lovers ;  
And I'll endeavour to prevent th' increase  
Of lawful cuckolds.

ESCH. None of the beauteous sex can have more  
virtue,  
Than fair Beatrice.

BEN. Sir, I sincerely allow your opinion.

She is yet very exceedingly virtuous,  
And has a laziness towards love : but, sir,  
She has too much wit, and great wits will not long



Lye idle.

ESCH. You have too much mirth to have suspicion.

BEN. As I will not do ladies so much wrong  
To mistrust any, so I'll do myself  
The right to trust none.

ESCH. This suits not with your brother's purpose.

*Enter LUCIO, BALTHAZAR.*

BEN. Welcome ! are either of you inclin'd to marriage ?

BAL. How, marriage ? it is a noose for ninnies ;  
Do you think I will have a recheat winded  
In my forehead, or hang my bugle in  
An invisible baldrick ?

LUC. If I ever marry, let mine eyes be  
Pickt out with the pen of a ballad-maker,  
And hang me up at the door of a brothel,  
For the sign of blind cupid.

BEN. You see, Signior Eschalus, my brother  
makes

So many enemies to propagation,  
That if the Duke stay long, he may chance find  
A dominion without subjects.

LUC. If he have any, they will need  
No governor, for they will all be old  
Enough to govern themselves.

*Enter BEATRICE, VIOLA.*

BEN. Here comes the Lady April, whose fair  
face  
Is always incident to some foul weather.

BEAT. I wonder you will still be talking,  
Benedick ;  
Nobody marks you.

BEN.

I mean to drink

Opium before I come in your company,  
That you may excuse my follies,  
With saying, I talk in my sleep.

BEAT. Where is Lord Angelo?

ESCH. Madam, he is retir'd.

BEAT. What, to his prayers,  
As executioners kneel down and ask pardon  
Before they handle the axe?

BEN. Hale in Main-Bolin! the storm begins!

BEAT. Heaven send the good Duke here again!  
do you

Not hear, Signior Eschalus, of the mutiny  
In town?

ESCH. No, Madam! Is there a mutiny?

BEAT. All the midwives, nurses, and milk-  
women

Are up in arms, because the governor  
Has made a law against lovers.

BEN. True, the law is, that none, who have not  
been

Bound prentices to Hymen, shall set up  
In the trade of making children.

ESCH. Madam, you will marry, and have your  
freedom.

BEAT. Marry? yes, if you will fashion me a man  
Of a middle constitution, between  
Lord Angelo's Carthusian gravity  
And his brother Benedick; the one is  
Too like a State-image and says nothing;  
And the other, too like a country lady's  
Eldest son, evermore talking.

BEN. Nay, do but persecute my brother,  
And I am satisfied.

BEAT. Signior Eschalus, is not my wardship out?

ESCH. Yes, madam.

BEAT. And this house, where the governor lives,  
mine own?

ESCH. Madam, it is !

BEAT. Methinks my guardian  
Is but a rude tenant. How durst he, with  
Unmanly power, force my cousin Juliet from me ?

ESCH. Lady, it was the law that us'd that  
force.

BEAT. The law ? Is she not married by such  
vows  
As will stand firm in Heaven ? that's the sub-  
stantial part

Which carries the effect, and must she then  
Be punisht for neglect of form ?  
Must conscience be made good by compliment ?

BEN. My brother will have men behave them-  
selves

To Heaven, as boys do to their pedants : they  
Must not say grace, without making their legs.

BEAT. I am glad, Benedick, to hear you're  
Sometimes in the right.

BEN. I'm in the right, lady, only  
As often as you are in the wrong.

BEAT. Pray, Signior Eschalus, desire my  
guardian

To let the divines govern the civilians.  
I would have my cousin's spiritual marriage  
Stand good in conscience, though 'tis bad in law.  
She must not be lockt up within thick walls  
And iron grates : a woodbine arbour will  
Prove strong enough to hold a lady, when  
She is grown so weak as to be in love.

VIOL. Pray, sister, why is Juliet in prison ?

BEAT. Peace, Viola, you are too young to know.

BEN. She play'd with a bearded baby, mistress,  
Contrary to law.

VIOL. Alas, poor Juliet ! I'll sing no more  
To the governor, till he lets her out.

BEAT. Sir, the deputy drinks too much vinegar ;

It makes his disposition sour.

ESCH. Pray, madam, tell him so.

BEAT. No, sir, you Statesmen manage your discourse

Amongst yourselves by signs. I am not mute

Enough to understand your mysteries.

Come, Viola, I'll write to the Duke!

*[Exeunt Beatrice, Viola.]*

BEN. This would make a rare wife, were she not  
A woman.

BALT. You with the men, and she with the  
maids, will

Quickly forbid all bances.

LUC. If we do not

Bring ill poesies of wedding rings out of  
Fashion, let's not be numbred with the wits.

*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter ANGELO and PROVOST.*

ANG. What is your business, Provost?

PROV. Is it your will Claudio shall die to  
morrow?

ANG. Did I not say he should? Had you not  
order?

Why do you ask again?

PROV. Lest I might be too rash.

Under your good correction, I have seen

When, after execution, the wise judge

Has his rash doom repented.

ANG. Do you your office, or else give it up!  
And you shall well be spar'd.

PROV. I crave your Excellency's pardon.

What shall be done with the weeping Juliet?

ANG. Dispose of her to some apartment in  
The prison, where Claudio may not see her.

*Enter SERVANT.*

SERV. Here is a sister of the man condemn'd

Desires access to you.

ANG. Already is his sister come ?  
She has the reputation, Provost, of  
A virtuous maid.

PROV. Ay, my good lord, a very virtuous maid,  
And to be shortly of a sisterhood.

ANG. Let her be admitted ! *[Exit Servant.]*  
Provost take care that Juliet be remov'd  
At distance from her lover.

*Enter* LUCIO, ISABELL.

PROV. Heaven still preserve your Excellence.

ANG. Stay here awhile ! Y'are welcome. What's  
your will ?

ISAB. I am a woeful suitor to your Excellence,  
If you in goodness will vouchsafe to hear me.

ANG. What is your suit ?

ISAB. There is a vice which most I do abhor,  
And most desire that it should meet rebuke ;  
For which I would not plead, but that I must.

ANG. Well, come to the matter !

ISAB. I have a brother is condemn'd to die.  
I would beseech you to condemn the fault, and not  
My brother.

PROV. Heaven give thee moving graces !

ANG. Is not each fault condemn'd ere it be done ?  
I were the very cipher of authority,  
If I should fine the fault, whose fine stands in  
Record, and yet forgivé the actor.

ISAB. Oh just but yet severe law !  
I had a brother then. Heaven keep you, sir.

LUC. Give it not over so ! to him again :  
Kneel down before him ; y'are too cold.

ISAB. Must he needs die ?

ANG. Virgin, no remedy.

ISAB. Yes, I believe that you might pardon him ;  
And neither Heaven, nor man, would at

The mercy grieve.

ANG. I will not do't.

ISAB. You can then, if you would ?

ANG. That which I should not do, I cannot do.

ISAB. But you may do it, sir, and do the world  
No hurt. I would your heart were toucht with such  
Remorse, as mine is to him.

ANG. He's sentenc'd ; 'tis too late !

LUC. You are too tame.

ISAB. Too late? I who have spoke a word may call  
The meaning back. No ceremony,  
No ornament which to the great belongs ;  
Not the King's crown, nor the deputed sword,  
The martial's truncheon, nor the judge's robe,  
Become them with so beautiful a grace  
As mercy does. If he had been as you,  
And you as he, you might have err'd like him ;  
But he, like you, would not have been so stern.

ANG. I pray, be gone !

ISAB. Would Heaven, if you were Isabell, that I  
A while might have your pow'r, to let you see  
How soon the sorrow of a sister's tears  
Should cleanse the foulness of a brother's fault.

LUC. That is the vein ! touch it boldly.

ANG. Your brother is a forfeit of the law ;  
And you but waste your words.

ISAB. Alas, alas ! all souls were forfeit once ;  
And he who might the vantage best have took  
Found out the remedy. What would you do  
If he, who on the utmost top of heights,  
On judges sits, should judge you as you are ?

ANG. Be you content, fair maid,  
It was the law, not I, condemn'd your brother :  
Were he my kinsman or my son, it should  
Be with him thus. And he must die to-morrow.

ISAB. To-morrow ? Oh, that's sudden ! spare  
him ! spare him !

He's not prepar'd. Even for our kitchens we  
The fowl of season kill. Shall we serve Heaven  
With less respect, than we would minister  
To our gross selves ? My lord, in mercy speak !  
Who is it that has died for this offence ?  
Too many have committed it.

LUC. Well said !

ANG. The law has not been dead, though it has  
slept.

Those many had not dar'd to act that crime,  
If he, who first the edict did infringe,  
Had answer'd for his deed. 'Tis now awake ;  
Takes note of what is done, and, prophet-like,  
Looks in a glass, which shows what future ills  
Might by remissness be in progress hatcht.

ISAB. Yet show some pity !

ANG. I show it most when I most justice show,  
For I commiserate then even those whom I  
Shall never know ; and whose offences, if  
They were forgiven, might afterwards destroy them.  
And also do him right, who, punisht for  
One pleasing crime, lives not to act another.  
Be satisfied ; your brother dies to-morrow.

ISAB. So you, my lord, must be the first that e'er  
This sentence gave, and he the first that suffers it.  
'Tis excellent to have a giant's strength,  
But tyrannous to use it like a giant.

LUC. Well said again !

ISAB. If men could thunder  
As great Jove does, Jove ne'er would quiet be ;  
For every cholerick petty officer  
Would use his magazine in heaven for thunder ;  
We nothing should but thunder hear. Sweet  
Heaven !

Thou rather with thy stiff and sulph'rous bolt  
Dost split the knotty and obdurate oak  
Than the soft myrtle. O but man, proud man,

Drest in a little brief authority,  
Most ignorant of what he thinks himself  
Assur'd, does in his glassy essence, like  
An angry ape, play such fantastic tricks  
Before high Heaven, as would make angels laugh  
If they were mortal, and had spleens like us.

LUC. To him! he will relent, I feel him coming.

PROV. Pray Heaven she gain him!

ANG. Why do you use this passion before me?

ISAB. Authority, though it does err like others,  
Yet has a kind of med'cine in itself,  
Which skins the top of every vice.  
Knock at your bosom, sir, and ask your heart  
If it contains no crime resembling my  
Poor brother's fault, and then, if it confess  
A natural guiltiness, such as his is,  
Let it not sound a sentence from your tongue  
Against my brother's life!

ANG. She speaks such sense

As with my reason breeds such images,  
As she has excellently form'd. Farewell!

ISAB. Gentle, my lord, turn back!

ANG. I will bethink me; come again to-morrow.

ISAB. Hark, how I'll bribe you; good, my lord,  
turn back!

ANG. How! bribe me?

ISAB. Ay, with such gifts that Heaven shall share  
with you.

LUC. You had marr'd all else.

ISAB. With early prayers that shall  
Be up at Heaven, and enter there before  
The morning's casement opens to the world;  
The prayers of fasting maids.

ANG. Well, come to me to-morrow!

LUC. Enough, away!

ISAB. All that is good be near your Excellence.

ANG. I thank you.



ISAB. At what hour shall I attend you ?

ANG. At any time ere noon.

ISAB. The angels still preserve you !

*[Ezeunt all but Angelo.]*

ANG. From all, but from thy virtue, maid !

I love her virtue. But, temptation ! O !

Thou false and cunning guide ! who in disguise  
Of virtue's shape lead'st us through heaven to  
hell.

No vicious beauty could with practised art.

Subdue, like virgin-innocence, my heart. *[Exit.]*

*Enter DUKE in disguise of a friar, and PROVOST.*

DUKE. Hail to you, Provost, so I think you are !

PROV. I am the Provost. What's your will, good  
father ?

DUKE. Bound by my charity, and my blessed  
orders,

I come to visit the afflicted minds

In prison here. Do me the common right

To let me see them ; and to let me know

The nature of their crimes, that I may minister

Accordingly to their relief.

PROV. I would do more than that, if more were  
needful.

Look, here comes one ! who in her flames of youth

*Enter JULIET.*

Has blister'd her fair fame. She is with child,

And he that got it sentenc'd.

DUKE. When must he die ?

PROV. As I believe, to-morrow.

I'll go in, and prepare him for your visit :

In the meantime bestow your counsel here.

*[Exit Provost.]*

DUKE. Repent you, fair one, of the sin you  
carry ?

JUL. I bear my punishment most patiently.

DUKE. I'll teach you how you shall arraign your conscience,

And try your penitence.

JUL. I'll gladly learn.

DUKE. Lov'd you the man that wrong'd you ?

JUL. Yes, as I lov'd the woman that wrong'd him.

DUKE. So then it seems you mutually have sinn'd ?

JUL. We mutually have sinn'd against the law :  
And I repent for it, but am as much  
Afflicted at my ignorance,  
Not knowing 'twas a sin when I transgressed,  
As at the sin itself.

DUKE. If, daughter, you repent that sin, because  
It brings you shame, it is a common and  
An erring grief, which looks more at ourselves  
Than towards Heaven; not sparing Heaven for love,  
But fear.

JUL. As 'tis an evil I repent, and grieve not for  
The shame, because you think it is deserv'd.

DUKE. There rest.

Your partner, as I hear, must die to-morrow ;  
And I am going with instructions to him.

Grace go with you !

[*Exit.*]

JUL. Must die to-morrow ? oh injurious love !  
It respites me a life whose very best

Is still a dying horror.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter* CLAUDIO, LUCIO, BALTHAZAR.

BALT. Claudio, to tarry longer with you now  
Were but to lose that time which we  
Must husband for your benefit. No care  
Is wanting in your sister, nor in us.

LUC. Our lawyers make good merchandise of  
women,

The head of a man pays for a maidenhead.

CLAUD. There is no rack so painful in this prison,  
As that which stretches me 'tween hope and doubt.  
All I desire is certainty,

BALT. You speak as if you were already in  
Another world ; for there's no certainty  
In this. We'll see you hourly : so farewell !

LUC. When I leave this wanton world to meet  
death,

I'll ride post to him on a hobby-horse,  
And fence against his dart with a fool's bauble.

CLAUD. By all your loyal friendship, Balthazar,  
Let Juliet be protected with your care  
And courage from injurious tongues.

BALT. I will deserve your trust.

CLAUD. Pray serve her, with a noble tenderness,  
In all that her afflictions shall require.

BALT. I need not such a strict command,  
Away, let's leave him to his meditations !

LUC. Remember, Claudio,  
This wicked world does homage to rich fools,  
And witty men want money.

*Enter PROVOST.*

PROV. A father desires to speak with you.

*[Exeunt Claudio, Provost.]*

LUC. Methinks it is too late for Claudio to  
Expect a reprieve.

BALT. Hope is so familiar an acquaintance,  
That, though she stays with us all day, yet we  
Are loth to part with her at night.

LUC. Where is Benedick ?

BALT. Gone to Beatrice ! she just now sent for  
him.

LUC. We shall never out-face the world with our  
Invectives against marriage, for I find  
Sexes will meet, though mountains and rough seas

Make a long space between them. Our design  
On Benedick and Beatrice must be pursu'd.

BALT. Let's to the governors, and in the way  
I'll tell thee how we ought to manage it. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter ANGELO.*

ANG. My weighty office I can value now  
But as an idle plume worn in the wind.

*Enter SERVANT.*

SERV. The sister, sir, of Claudio desires access !

ANG. Shew her the way into the gallery !

[*Exit Servant.*]

Why does my blood, thus flowing to my heart,  
Make it unable for it self, whilst then  
It dispossesses other parts of that  
Which they in lesser streams would useful make ?  
So deal officious throngs with him who swoonds ;  
They come to help him, and they stop the air  
By which he should revive ; and so  
The numerous subjects to a well-wisht King  
Quit their own home, and in rude fondness to  
His presence crowd, where their unwelcome love  
Does an offence, and an oppression prove. [*Exit.*]

---

ACT III. SCENE I.

*Enter ISABELL, ANGELO.*

ISAB. I am come to know your pleasure.

ANG. That you might know it would much  
better please me,  
Than to demand what 'tis : your brother cannot  
live.

ISAB. Even so ? Heaven keep your Excellence.

ANG. Stay a little,

V.

K

For he perhaps may live awhile : nay, and  
 As long as you or I, since none can know  
 Their own appointed ends. Yet, he must die.

ISAB. Under your sentence ?

ANG. Yes.

ISAB. When, I beseech you † that, in his reprieve  
 Longer or shorter, he may be so fitted  
 That his soul may not suffer with his body.

ANG. He had a filthy vice. It were as good  
 To pardon him that has from nature stol'n  
 A man already made, as to permit  
 Their saucy sweetness, who Heaven's image coin  
 In stamps which are forbid.

ISAB. That is set down in Heaven, but not on  
 earth.

ANG. How ! say you so ? then I shall quickly  
 poze you.

Which had you rather, that the most just law  
 Should take your brother's life, or, to redeem him,  
 Give up your precious self to such a blemish  
 As she permitted whom he stain'd ?

ISAB. I'll rather give my body than my soul.

ANG. I talk not of your soul. Our compell'd  
 sins

Do more for number stand, than for account.

ISAB. How say you, sir ?

ANG. Nay, I'll not warrant that : for I can  
 speak

Against the thing I say : answer to this.  
 I, now the voice of the recorded law,  
 Pronounce a sentence on your brother's life,  
 Might there not be a charity in sin,  
 To save this brother's life ?

ISAB. Please you to do't,  
 I'll take it as a peril to my soul,  
 It is no sin at all, but charity.

ANG. You doing it at peril of your soul,

Make equal poize of sin and charity.

ISAB. That I do beg his life, if it be sin,  
Heav'n let me bear't. If it be sin for you  
To grant my suit, I'll make it still my prayer  
To have it added to the faults of mine,  
And not to your account.

ANG. Nay, but hear me!

Your sense pursues not mine; sure you are ignorant;

Or seem so craftily, and that's not good.

ISAB. Let me be ignorant, and in nothing good,  
But graciously to know I am no better.

ANG. Thus wisdom wishes to appear most bright,  
When it does tax itself; as a black mask  
Often proclaims a cover'd beauty more,  
Than beauty does itself when openly  
Displayed. But mark me, Isabell,  
Or if I may more plainly be receiv'd,  
I'll speak more home. Your brother is to die.

ISA. So!

ANG. And his offence is such, as it appears  
Accountant to the law.

ISA. True!

ANG. Admit no other way could save his life,  
As I subscribe not that, nor any other,  
Unless by way of question, but that you  
Finding yourself desir'd of such a man  
Whose credit with the judge could free your  
brother

Must either yield the treasures of your youth,  
Or else must let him die: what would you do?

ISA. As much for my poor brother, as for Isabell.  
Th' impression of sharp whips I gladly would  
As rubies wear, and strip myself  
Even for a grave, as for a bed, ere I  
Would yield my honour up to shame.

ANG. Then must your brother die.

ISA. And 'twere the cheaper way.  
Better it were a brother die a while,  
Than a sister, by redeeming him,  
Should die for ever.

ANG. Are you then as cruel as that sentence  
Which you have slander'd so?

ISA. Ignoble ransom no proportion bears  
To pardon freely given; and lawful mercy  
Is not at all akin to foul redemption.

ANG. You seem'd of late to make the law a  
tyrant;

And so your brother's guiltiness excus'd,  
As if it rather might be styl'd  
A recreation than a vice.

ISA. O pardon me, my Lord. Oft it falls out,  
That pleaders speak not what they mean,  
In hope to get what they would have.  
I sometimes may excuse the thing I hate,  
For his advantage whom I dearly love.

ANG. We are all frail.

ISA. Else let my brother die.

ANG. Nay, women are frail too.

ISA. Ay, as the glasses where they see them-  
selves,

Which are as easily broke, as they make forms.  
Women! help Heaven! pray call us ten times  
frail,

For we are soft, as our complexions are,  
And soon a bad impression take.

ANG. And from this testimony of your own sex,  
Since I suppose we are not made so strong,  
But that our faults may shake our frames, let me  
Be bold t'arrest your words. Be what you are!  
That is, a woman, if y'are more y'are none,  
If you be one, as you are well exprest  
By all external warrants, shew it now.

ISA. I have no tongue but one. Gentle, my lord,

Let me entreat you speak the former language.

ANG. Plainly conceive, I love you.

ISA. My brother did love Juliet ;

And you tell me he shall die for it.

ANG. He shall not, Isabell, if you give me love.

ISA. Your pow'r may your discretion licence  
give,

And make you seem much fouler than you are,  
To draw on others.

ANG. Believe me on mine honour,  
My words express my purpose.

ISA. Ha ! little honour to be much believ'd,  
Your purpose is pernicious now discern'd.  
I will proclaim thee, Angelo, look for't ;  
Sign me a present pardon for my brother,  
Or I will tell the world aloud  
What man thou art.

ANG. Who will believe you, Isabell ?  
My unsoil'd name, austerity of life,  
My word against you, and my place i'th' State,  
Will so your accusation overweigh,  
That you'll be stifled in your own report.  
And now I give my sensual race the reins !  
Yield to my passion, or your brother must  
Not only die, but your unkindness shall  
Draw out his death to ling'ring pains.  
To-morrow answer me, or, by that love  
Which now does guide me, I will be  
A tyrant to him.

[Exit.

ISA. To whom shall I complain ?  
If I tell this who will believ't ?  
I'll to my brother straight,  
That he may know false Angelo's request,  
And then prepare for his eternal rest.

[Exit.

*Enter BENEDICK and BEATRICE, several ways.*

BEN. I was told, lady, you would speak with me.



BEAT. I would, and I would not.

BEN. Then I'll stay, or I will not stay ;  
'Tis all one to me.

BEAT. Nay, I know you are but an indifferent  
man :

Yet now, by chance, I rather am inclin'd  
That you should stay.

BEN. And 'tis a greater chance  
That our inclinations should so soon meet ;  
For I will stay.

BEAT. Your brother is a proper Prince! he rules  
With a rod in's hand instead of a sceptre,  
Like a country school-master in a church ;  
He keeps a large palace with no attendants,  
And is fit to have none but boys for his subjects.

BEN. As ill as he governs, if my  
Design thrive against the fetters of marriage,  
As his does against the liberty of lovers,  
His rule may last till the end of the world ;  
For there will be no next generation.

BEAT. Would I might trust you, Benedick.

BEN. Madam, you believe me to have some  
honour.

If you have most secretly invented  
A new dressing, can you think I'll reveal  
The fashion before you wear it ?

BEAT. Notwithstanding your seeming indis-  
position

To inventions of fashion, yet there be  
Those in Turin, who have intercepted  
Packets between you and tailors of Paris.  
Well, though those are but light correspondents,  
Yet I would trust you in matter of weight.

BEN. I hope, lady, you have no plot upon me.  
I'll marry no woman.

BEAT. I did not think you had been so well  
natur'd,

As to prevent the having any of  
Your breed. Marry you? what should I do with  
you?

Dress you in my old gown, and make you my  
Waiting-woman?

BEN. A waiting-woman with a beard?

BEAT. I shall ne'er endure a husband with a  
beard.

I had rather lye in woolen.

BEN. Though you disguise matrimonial preten-  
sions

With pretty scorn, yet I am glad I have  
A beard for my own defence. And though fashion  
Makes me have much, and that you believe me  
A lover of fashions, yet mine shall grow  
To a very bush, for my greater security.  
But, pray proceed to your matter of weight.

BEAT. I will trust you; not as a man of love,  
But a man of arms.

BEN. At your own peril!  
And, more t'encourage you, I will declare  
That though I'm very loth to come within  
The narrow compass of a wedding ring,  
Yet I owe every fair lady a good turn.  
But to the business.

BEAT. In brief you must  
Renew familiarity with your brother;  
And steal the use of his signet to seal  
Julietta's pardon and her liberty,  
And Claudio's too: this done, they shall practise  
Their escape, I'll endeavour mine; and you  
Signior may shift for yourself.

BEN. This is but betraying an ill brother  
For a good purpose; I'll do't if I can.

BEAT. You shall give me the signet, for I'll  
have  
All in my own management.

BEN. No, though I rob my brother of the  
signet,

You shall not rob me of the danger.

BEAT. Then I'll proceed no further.

BEN. That as you please.

BEAT. You would have the honour of the  
business ?

BEN. 'Tis due to my sex.

BEAT. Fare you well, sir ! — yet you  
May come again an hour hence, to receive  
An ill look.

BEN. That will not fright me much ; for you  
can look

No better than you use to do.

[*Ex. Ben. at one door.*

*Enter VIOLA at another.*

VIOL. Sister, I have got verses. Signior Lucio  
Made them : he and Balthazar are within.

BEAT. Is Lucio become a man of metre ?  
That's the next degree upward to the giddy  
Station of a foolish lover. They are  
Compos'd into a song too. Sing it, Viola !

*VIOLA sings the song.*

VIOL. Wake all the dead ! what hoa ! what hoa !  
How soundly they sleep whose pillows lye  
low ;

They mind not poor lovers who walk above  
On the decks of the world in storms of love.

No whisper now nor glance can pass  
Through wickets or through panes of  
glass ;

For our windows and doors are shut and  
barr'd.

Lye close in the church, and in the church-  
yard.

In ev'ry grave make room, make room !  
The world's at an end, and we come, we  
come.

## 2.

The State is now love's foe, love's foe ;  
'T has seiz'd on his arms, his quiver and bow ;  
Has pinion'd his wings, and fetter'd his feet,  
Because he made way for lovers to meet.

But O sad chance, his judge was old ;  
Hearts cruel grow, when blood grows  
cold.

No man being young, his process would  
draw.

O heavens that love should be subject to law !  
Lovers go woo the dead, the dead !  
Lye two in a grave, and to bed, to bed !

*Enter LUCIO, BALTHAZAR.*

BEAT. Signior Lucio, you are grown so desp'rate  
As to write verses ?

LUC. Very little business, much love,  
And no money makes up a parcel-poet.  
But the verses are not mine.

BEAT. Whose are they ?

LUC. Balthazar knows the author.

BALT. Not better than you, who had them from  
him.

LUC. Pray, madam, let him tell you.

BALT. Excuse me, sir, I am as chary of  
Getting my friend the ill name of a poet,  
As you are.

BEAT. Why, gentlemen, you will not make  
A secret of telling the hour of the day,  
When your watches are ready to strike ?  
Pray, whose are the verses ?

LUC. Madam, the author's name is Benedick.

BEAT. Is't possible ? I am glad he lies bare  
Under the lash of the wits. There are now  
No such tormentors in Turin as the wits.  
Poor Benedick, they'll have him on the rack  
Ere night ; why, they will draw a strong line to  
The subtle weakness of a spinner's thread.

BALT. I fear he will be quickly liable  
To a greater torment, than any that  
The wits can inflict.

LUC. Madam, we are your vow'd servants,  
We cannot chuse but tell you all. Balthazar,  
You made the first discovery ; you may speak it !

BALT. Madam, 'tis not civil to lengthen your  
Expectation. He is in love !

BEAT. In love ? that were a sudden change, and  
would shew

More of the moon in him, than is in a mad-woman.  
Good Balthazar, with whom ?

BALT. Lucio was ready to die laughing when  
He found it, and swore then he would tell you.

BEAT. Keep your oath, Lucio ; who is't that has  
caught him ?

LUC. Nay, Madam, you now impose upon me.

BEAT. Let me entreat you.

LUC. Why then, as sure as you can love no lover,  
He loves you.

BEAT. This sounds like fiction and design.  
Good Balthazar, he is but newly gone  
From hence, go seek him out, and bring him back !  
Your friendship may prevail with him.

LUC. It will beget more mirth, than belongs  
To a morrice in the month of May.

BALT. But I beseech you no words of our dis-  
cov'ry. *[Exit Balthazar.]*

BEAT. Signior, you may trust me.  
Perhaps, Lucio, you cannot think it strange,  
That I believe you of my party ;

And fitter for my trust than Balthazar.

LUC. O no, madam, I have been trusted by  
Young ladies ere now.

BEAT. Are you sure Benedick loves me? he has  
No fashion of a lover in public.

LUC. Poor man, he has two contrary extremes  
Of love-madness. He is in company  
As fantastical as a fencer after  
His victory in a prize; but, in private,  
He will sigh more than an old Dutch pilot  
That has lost his ship.

BEAT. I shall have rare diversion if his fit holds.

LUC. It is not good to jest away men's lives.

BEAT. I see you are serious: but will you swear  
this?

LUC. If you can endure the coarseness of  
swearing;  
I've been unlucky at play in my time,  
And shall quickly swear like a losing gamester.

BEAT. Stay, sir! you may take up the fool's  
commodity  
Of belief, without engaging of oaths:  
I know you are a man of excellent temper.

LUC. Madam, I swear by—

BEAT. I pray, sir, hold!—

LUC. Nay, if you would put me to't.

BEAT. Lucio, you must dissuade him from his  
love;  
And I must trust you. I have but one heart,  
And that is already dispos'd of.

LUC. Madam, all lovers compar'd to Benedick  
Are but lamentable courtiers in old clothes.

BEAT. Truly, he was wont to be merry.

LUC. Ere he felt love his heart was as sound  
As any bell, and his tongue was the clapper:  
For what his heart thought his tongue would  
speak.

Take heed, you must not lose him.

BEAT. Lucio, my heart is design'd to another.

LUC. Madam, may I be bold t' enquire to whom ?

BEAT. You know the man.

LUC. Be he what he will, he must shew as ugly  
As a tall man sitting on a low stool  
Before a chimney, compared to Benedick.

BEAT. You ought not to say so, when I name  
him.

LUC. Madam, I dare justify my friend.

BEAT. I shall be angry if you compare him  
To him whom I can name. Suppose it is  
Signior Lucio ?

LUC. Madam, I confess, comparisons  
Are somewhat odious.

BEAT. O, are they so ? I pray let me advise you  
Not to lessen yourself ; though I perceive  
You cannot chuse but make much of your friend.

LUC. Sits the wind on that side ? I must hoist  
sail,  
With top, and top gallant.

BEAT. But are you not tied, sir, by some deep  
vow

To woo for Benedick ? I am very tender  
Of men's vows.

LUC. Will you believe me, madam ?

BEAT. Without oaths, I beseech you.

LUC. He knows as much the matter of this visit,  
As I do of the Great Turk's particular  
Inclination to red herring.

BEAT. Are you in earnest ?

LUC. Balthazar and I

Were only over officious to serve him.

BEAT. Nor he is not in love ?

LUC. No more than a man that goes continually  
To sea to make discoveries.

BEAT. Then it appears a little strange,

That you made this hearty address for him.

LUC. On my honour, madam, it was to get  
Some opportunity to move for myself.

BEAT. And you think him no extraordinary  
wit ?

LUC. So, so ! a modest wit ! somewhat out of  
countenance  
Being laught at ; for then he grows as melancholy  
As a lodge in a warren.

BEAT. Right, I use to laugh at him.  
And then there's a partridge wing sav'd at night ;  
For the fool will eat no supper.

LUC. Madam, I see you know him.

BEAT. Signior Lucio, be kind to your self ! [*Exit.*]

LUC. Lucio, if thou were't any thing but Lucio,  
I would hug thee to death. Some men in choler  
Rail against fortune, but I adore her :  
She has made her sail of my mother's smock.  
I would the poets would send us a dozen  
Such goddesses.

*Enter BALTHAZAR.*

BAL. I have been seeking Benedick : and I  
Am told now he's gone up the back-stairs,  
And is in private with the deputy.  
Where's the Lady Beatrice ?

LUC. Balthazar, trouble not your self, for men  
May often lose their labour.

BALT. How so ?

LUC. Benedick is not the man she aims at.

BALT. He's very singular and eminent.  
But I confess, this angling for ladies  
Is a very subtle sport.

LUC. They are fishes of fantastical palates ;  
And will sometimes sooner bite at a worm,  
Than at a May-fly.



BALT. She has a full fortune. Twelve thousand crowns

A-year.

LUC. He will be safe from creditors that has her.

*Enter VIOLA.*

VIOL. Signior Lucio, my sister would speak with you. *[Exit.*

LUC. Balthazar, I must e'en retire from business; You see I cannot rest for ladies.

BALT. I prithee put the matter home.

*[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter DUKE in Friar's habit, CLAUDIO, and PROVOST.*

CLAUD. Father, I thank you! I am now of death's

Small party, 'gainst the crowd who strive for life.

*Enter ISABELL.*

ISAB. What hoa! Grace dwell within!

PROV. Who's there? the wish deserves a welcome.

DUKE. Dear sir, ere long I'll visit you again.

CLAUD. Most rev'rend sir, I thank you.

ISAB. My business is a word or two with Claudio.

PROV. You are welcome! Look Signior, here's your sister.

DUKE. Provost, a word.

PROV. As many as you please.

DUKE. Bring me, where I, conceal'd,  
May hear them speak. *[Exeunt Duke, Provost.]*

CLAUD. Now sister, what's the comfort?

ISAB. 'Tis such as earthly comforts use to be;  
Lord Angelo, having affairs to Heaven,  
Intends you for his swift ambassador.  
Therefore your best appointment make with speed;  
To-morrow you set on.

CLAUD. Is there no remedy ?

ISAB. Yea, brother, you may live !

There is a devillish mercy in the judge,  
If you'll implore it, that will free your life,  
But fetter you till death.

CLAUD. Perpetual durance ?

ISAB. 'Tis worse than close restraint, and painful  
too

Beyond all tortures which afflict the body ;  
For 'tis a rack invented for the mind.

CLAUD. But of what nature is it ?

ISAB. 'Tis such as, should you give it your consent,

Would leave you stript of all the wreaths of war,  
All ornaments my father's valour gain'd,  
And shew you naked to the scornful world.

CLAUD. Acquaint me with my doom.

ISAB. If I could fear thee, Claudio, I should weep  
Lest thou a shameful life shouldst entertain,  
And six or seven short winters more respect  
Than a perpetual honour. Dar'st thou die ?  
The sense of death is most in apprehension ;  
And the small beetle, when we tread on it,  
In corp'ral suff'rance, finds a pang as great  
As when a giant dies.

CLAUD. Why give you me this shame ?  
Think you I can a resolution fetch  
From tenderness ? If I must die,  
I'll welcome darkness as a shining bride.

ISAB. There spoke my brother : there my father's  
grave

Utter'd a cheerful voice. Yes, you must die,  
You are too noble to conserve a life  
By wretched remedies. Our outward saint  
Does in his gracious looks disguise the devil.  
His filth within being cast, he would appear  
A pond, as foul as hell.

CLAUD. The Princely Angelo ?

ISAB. Oh, he is uglier than the frightful fiend  
By pencils of our cloister'd virgins drawn.  
Speak, Claudio, could you think, you might on earth  
Be guiltless made by him, if I would Heaven,  
Which never injur'd us, foully offend ?

CLAUD. Infernal Angelo ! can this be true ?

ISAB. Yes, he would clear you from your blackest  
crimes,  
By making me much blacker than himself.  
This night's the time, when he would have me do  
What I abhor to name, or else you must  
Be dead to-morrow.

CLAUD. Thou shalt not do't !

ISAB. O, were it but my life,  
I would for your deliverance throw it down,  
Most frankly, Claudio.

CLAUD. Thanks, dear Isabell.

ISAB. Be ready, Claudio, for your death to-morrow.

CLAUD. Has he religion in him ? sure he thinks  
It is no sin, or of the deadly seven  
He does believe it is the least.

ISAB. Which is the least ?

CLAUD. If it were damnable, he being wise  
Why would he for the momentary taste  
Of lust, eternally be fed with fire ?  
But Isabell——

ISAB. What says my brother ?

CLAUD. Death is a fearful thing !

ISAB. And living shame more hateful !  
Sure you have studied what it is to die.

CLAUD. Oh sister, 'tis to go we know not  
whither.

We lie in silent darkness, and we rot ;  
Where long our motion is not stopt ; for though  
In graves none walk upright, proudly to face

The stars, yet there we move again, when our  
 Corruption makes those worms in whom we crawl.  
 Perhaps the spirit, which is future life,  
 Dwells salamander-like, unharm'd in fire :  
 Or else with wand'ring winds is blown about  
 The world. But if condemn'd like those  
 Whom our incertain thought imagines howling ;  
 Then the most loath'd and the most weary life  
 Which age, or ache, want, or imprisonment  
 Can lay on nature, is a paradise  
 To what we fear of death.

ISAB. Alas, alas !

CLAUD. Sweet sister ! I would live,  
 Were not the ransom of my life much more  
 Than all your honour and your virtue too,  
 By which you are maintain'd, can ever pay,  
 Without undoing both.

ISAB. Prepare your self ! your line of life is short.

CLAUD. I am prepar'd : but sister, if  
 Your brother you did ever love ; or if  
 Our mother's pity may your pattern be,  
 Let Juliet in your tender bosom dwell ;  
 Who has no blemish, if such laws,  
 As innocent antiquity allow'd,  
 Were now of force, or if religion here  
 In Turin did not more subsist  
 By public form, than private use.

ISAB. You want authority to tax the law.  
 Let your submission your last virtue be.

CLAUD. Will you be good to Juliet ?

ISAB. I will invite her to my breast, and to  
 A cloister'd shade, where we with mutual grief  
 Will mourn, in sad remembrance of our loss.

CLAUD. Your promise is now register'd in  
 Heaven.

Bear her this fatal pledge of our first vows.

*[Gives her a ring.]*

V.

L

Farewell ! To cloist'ral kindness both  
Retire, where you may ever live above  
The rage of pow'r, and injuries of love. [*Exit, and*

*The DUKE steps in.*

DUKE. Vouchsafe a word, young sister ! but one word.

ISAB. What is your will ?

DUKE. I would some satisfaction crave of that,  
In which you likewise may have benefit.

ISAB. My sorrows, father, hasten me away.

I must beseech you to be brief.

DUKE. The hand which made you fair, has made  
you good.

Th' assault which Angelo has to  
Your virtue given, chance to my knowledge brings.  
I have o'erheard you, and with much astonishment  
I gaze on the image you have made of Angelo.

ISAB. How is the noble Duke deceiv'd in such  
A substitute ? whose wickedness I will  
Proclaim to all the world.

DUKE. Your accusation he will soon avoid,  
By saying he but trial of  
Your virtue made ; therefore, I wish you would  
Conceal his horrid purpose till fit time  
Shall serve you at the Duke's return.  
Do you conceive my counsel good ?

ISAB. Father, I am oblig'd to follow it.

DUKE. Where lodge you, virtuous maid ?

ISAB. The sisterhood of Saint Clare will soon  
inform you.

I lodge in the apartment for probation.

DUKE. There I'll attend you, daughter. Grace  
preserve you ! [*Exeunt several ways.*

*Enter BENEDICK and BEATRICE at several doors, and  
VIOLA with her.*

BEAT. O sir ! you are a very Princely lover !

You cannot woo but by ambassadors ;  
And may chance to marry by proxy.

BEN. Your wit flows so fast  
That I'll not stem the tide ; I'll cast anchor,  
And consult in your cabin how t'avoid  
Danger. The rocks are very near us.

BEAT. How now ? afraid of the deputy's ghost  
Ere he be dead ? my sister shall lead you  
Through the dark.

BEN. There is the pardon  
Sign'd for Juliet and for Claudio too.

BEAT. I thank you, Benedick. Give it me !

BEN. You are as nimble as a squirrel, but  
The nuts are not so soon crackt.

BEAT. Unless I have it I'll take back my thanks.

BEN. If it be possible to fix quick-silver  
Stay but a little.

BEAT. What would you say ?

BEN. Eschalus is in the plot,  
And was brought to't with more fears, than a  
furr'd

Alderman to an insurrection  
Of prentices.

BEAT. Signior Eschalus ? could his gravity  
Venture to change his gold chain for a halter ?

BEN. I was fain to pretend hourly correspond-  
ence  
With th' absent Duke ; which gain'd me his  
respect.

I assur'd him of promotion, and then  
He grew willing to betray his friend  
And fellow-states-man, my brother. For men  
Of that tribe are very loving, but especially  
To themselves. He surpriz'd the signet,  
And counterfeited the hand.

BEAT. Give it me ! I long to be about it.

BEN. A little patience ; you would make your self

Ready without your glass.

BEAT. These male-conspirators are so tedious.

BEN. I must convey it to the Provost, and Engage his secrecy.

BEAT. Make haste ! you must not stay So long as to be civil to him at parting.

BEN. My coach attends me at the gate.

BEAT. O, I forgot ! Your two confed'rates have Been here, and brought verses from you.

BEN. Verses ? and from me ?

BEAT. Yes, and they woo'd for you, but Lucio Was soon persuaded to speak for himself.

He says you are a mere country-wit.

BEN. I'll dip him in this plot, till he grow solemn With business. If it were fit To be malicious, that caitiff, Lucio, should have his Coxcomb cut off for foolish treason.

*[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter ESCHALUS meeting BENEDICK.*

ESCH. My lord, the warrant for the pardon ? have you it ?

BEN. Why ask you, sir ?

ESCH. Still wear it in your hand, and watch it there.

BEN. I keep it 'tween my finger and my thumb, As close as a catcht flea.

Are you afraid it will skip from me ?

ESCH. The matter is of dreadful consequence.

BEN. Fear nothing, sir ! the world would still Run swiftly round but for you state-cripples, Who make it halt with your politic stops Of too much caution.

ESCH. If your brother, the deputy, Circumvent us, you'll secure me by the Duke ?

BEN. You shall add a lease of my life to your own. Be resolute, I am in haste. *[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter JAILOR, JULIET.*

[*Viola knocking within.*  
VIOL. [*within.*] My cousin Juliet, are you here?  
[*Jailor opens the door.*

*Enter VIOLA.*

This fellow looks like a man boil'd  
In pump-water. Is he married?

JUL. Are you not frightened with this dismal  
place?

How does your sister? speak, does she not blush  
When she remembers me?

VIOL. I bring you good news!

Cousin, I would not meet that man in the dark.  
Does he dwell here to lock up children  
That are imprison'd for crying?

JUL. Tell me your happy news, dear Viola!

VIOL. Nay, I can tell you none, yet 'tis very  
good.

You shall hear all to-morrow.

JUL. To-morrow is the last in my short calendar.

VIOL. I have heard more than I will speak.

You shall

Come forth and lye with me, and dream all night  
Of new dressings, and dance all day.

JUL. Would I had ne'er outliv'd this innocence!

VIOL. Do your judges dwell here? were I that  
man,

I would walk in the dark and fright 'em.

JUL. That man does do you hurt. Let us retire!  
Had I been wither'd at her beauty's spring,  
And stay'd from growing at her growth of mind,  
I had not known the cruel nor the kind.

Those who outlive her years do but improve

The knowledge of those griefs which grow with  
love.

[*Exeunt.*



## ACT IV. SCENE I.

*Enter* BENEDICK, LUCIO, BALTHAZAR.

BEN. Lucio, you broke from our confed'racy  
Against marriage, then woo'd in my behalf ;  
And afterwards for your self.

LUC. Do but hear me !

BEN. Excuses are like weak  
Reserves after a battle is lost.

LUC. Let me be heard ! for if poor truth  
Have a tongue of her own and must not use it,  
Why then she may retire into a corner,  
And weep out her eyes.

BEN. What can you say ?

LUC. I meant no more love to the Lady Beatrice,  
Than I do to woo an arrested widow  
With a serenade at a prison grate.  
Balthazar knows my heart.

BALT. I know sev'ral of your hearts.  
Men are not i' th' fashion unless they have  
Change of ev'ry thing.

LUC. I ever thought her a mermaid.

BEN. How so ?

LUC. From the breasts downwards she's as cold  
as a fish.

BEN. Well, Lucio, I'll call none but the four  
winds

T'accompt for what is past. Look, sir !——thus I  
Blow away your offences : but you must  
Be steady now, and diligent. I told  
You my design for Claudio's preservation.  
The Provost was your uncle's creature, and  
By him prefer'd.

BALT. The Provost will make good  
Our trust, and ev'ry character of gratitude.

BEN. You must engage him, Lucio, and discern

By what pretext or obstacle the friar  
Proceeds so far to interrupt our hopes.

LUC. I'll bind the Provost to your service in  
His own shackles. And, concerning the friar,  
I'll straight confess him, and you shall know all.

BEN. Be sudden and successful! go! [*Exit Lucio.*]

*Enter BEATRICE and PAGE.*

BEAT. O, are you come? I would have cried you  
as

A lost thing, but that I knew I should have  
The ill luck to find you again.

BEN. You trip it too fast!

You need not be so swift to meet misfortune.  
I had just now a letter from the Provost;  
Who either suspects the truth of the pardon,  
Because I enjoin'd him to secrecy,  
Or else is led by a friar to some fresh  
Design.

BEAT. Are we circumvented by a friar?  
Rather than not vex that friar, I'll invent  
A new sect, and preach in a hat and feather.

BEN. 'Tis strange that men of their discretion  
Should come abroad in old fashion gowns,  
And drest with abominable negligence.

BEAT. Bus'ness makes them great slovens, and  
they love

To be busy.

BEN. And never observe  
The right seasons when they are necessary.  
For though we are content with their company  
When we are old and dying; yet, methinks,  
They should not trouble us with their good counsel  
When we are young, and in good health.

BALT. Alas, poor book-men! they want breeding.

BEAT. Can we not separate the wicked Provost,  
From this scrupulous friar?

BEN. I have sent Lucio to him.

BEAT. Benedick,

We will cast off the serious faces of  
Conspirators, and appear to the deputy  
As merry, and as gay, as nature in  
The spring. This house shall be all carnival,  
All masquerade.

BEN. Good! we will laugh him out  
Of's politics, till he make paper kites  
Of Machiavel's books, and play with his pages  
In the fields.

BALT. And shall we sing and dance?

BEAT. Till the old senators lead forth  
The burghers' widows, and cry out for a pavin.  
Page, call Viola with her castanietos;  
And bid Bernardo bring his guitar! [*Exit Page.*]

BEN. My brother will not endure this habitation.

BALT. He'll rather go to sea and dwell in a gun-  
room.

BEN. Or lie round like a sexton's dog, beneath  
The great bell in a steeple.

[*Viola strikes the castanietos within.*]

BEAT. Hark! Viola has ta'en th' alarm.

BEN. Those castanietos sound  
Like a concert of squirrels cracking of nuts.

*Enter VIOLA dancing a saraband, awhile with  
castanietos.*

BEAT. Shall we stand idle in seasons of business?  
You have feathers on your head, Benedick;  
Have you none at your heels?

BEN. I am, lady,  
So very a kid at cap'ring, that you  
May make gloves of my skin. Balthazar!  
Call for more music.

BALT. Not for me, sir,  
I can dance at the mere tolling of a bell. [*They dance.*]

*After the dance, enter ESCHALUS.*

ESCH. Have you no apprehension of the deputy ?  
Are you insensible ?

BEAT. Do you suspect  
We are insensible by our want of motion ?

BEN. You should provide my brother-deputy  
A politician's quilted cap to cover  
His ears. 'Twill preserve him from noise.

BEAT. These politic men should keep company  
With their fellow-foxes in deep holes.

BALT. He'll grow so angry, that he'll lay the  
punishments  
Of law aside, and pistol us with his own hand.

ESCH. This, signior, is not the right way to meet  
Your brother's temper.

BEN. Signior ! my meaning is  
T'avoid the way where I may meet my brother.  
I'll prove a very crab to him ; for still,  
As he proceeds, I purpose to go backward.

ESCH. I hope you'll be cautious about the  
pardon.

BEN. Pray, mingle so much courage with your  
wisdom,  
As may bring you into the possibility  
Of sleep again.

ESCH. Sir, I more than beseech you  
Not to provoke your brother's gravity  
With fantastical noises.

BEN. Believe me, we  
Are politic ; and do it to disguise  
That melancholy which belongs to design.

ESCH. That may do well.

BEN. Go up, and retire with him !  
If you stay here, he'll take you for a man  
Of mirth ; and then you'll lose his favour.

*[Exit Eschalus.]*

BEAT. 'Tis fit, Benedick, you seek Lucio out,  
To learn quickly the Provost's resolution.  
I'll go change my scene to the garden-terrace,  
Under your brother's window, that I may  
Torment him with new noises.

VIOL. Shall I fetch the great girls that make  
bone-lace,  
To sing out of tune to their bobbins ?

BEAT. Do, Viola ! let them be long lean wenches.

VIOL. And we'll hang a dozen cages of parrots  
At his window, to tell him what's a clock.

*[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter LUCIO and PROVOST.*

LUC. I'd speak with that friar who obstructs  
the pardon.

PROV. His business with Claudio being done, he  
shall attend you.

*Enter FOOL in a shackle.*

LUC. Fool ! what a pris'ner ! I thought fooling  
had  
Been free.

FOOL. Fooling is free before the wise ;  
But truly, signior, a fool can no more  
Suffer a fool, than one of the wits can  
Endure another wit.

PROV. You, sirrah, are committed for the worst  
Kind of fooling. You have brought both sexes  
Together.

LUC. A bawd ? alas, poor fool ! instead of being  
In jest, you have been in earnest !

FOOL. I dealt with persons of quality,  
With whom I thought fit to be mannerly.  
Was't civil to let them meet to no purpose ?

PROV. You have been civil indeed.

FOOL. All deeds must submit to interpretation.

For my part, to prevent all animosities  
And heart-burnings between young men and  
women,

I brought them lovingly together.

LUC. A bawd in a fool's coat !

PROV. Mistress Mitigation gave him the livery.

LUC. 'Tis a villainous new disguise

For the good old cause.

How does Mother Midnight ? what, she grows  
rich ?

FOOL. Signior, sh'as eaten up all her beef now,  
And is her self in the tub.

LUC. Powder'd to make her last. 'Tis not  
amiss.

But, prithee, what mean those keys at thy girdle ?

PROV. I have preferr'd him. He's an under-  
jailor.

LUC. You have but chang'd your dwelling, fool ;  
your office

Is the same : for you were wont to keep doors.

*Enter DUKE.*

PROV. Sirrah, look to your pris'ners ! Signior

Lucio,

I shall leave you with this rev'rend father.

*[Exeunt Provost, Fool.]*

LUC. Good day, father !

DUKE. And to you, sir, a long and a good life !

LUC. Father, I aim at no difficult things ;

If it be short and sweet, I'm satisfied.

DUKE. How mean you, sir ?

LUC. Nay, I'm not now prepar'd for confession ;  
besides

I'm in great haste. You must needs prevail

With the Provost to let the pardon pass.

DUKE. Some hours after the date of the pardon,  
An order came hither for execution,

Which had proceeded too, if Friar Thomas  
Had not, by help of the deputy's confessor,  
Got a reprieve till to-morrow.

LUC. Th' absent Duke was a true friend to  
lovers.

DUKE. It seems you know the Duke ?

LUC. Know him ? yes friar, very well. I had  
th' honour

To be of his council : but I mean, sir,  
In midnight matters. He was about once  
To raise a charitable foundation ;  
Not for lousy learning, or such cripples  
As creep from lost battles, but for poor  
Diseas'd lovers.

DUKE. I did not think he had been amorous.

LUC. Who, he ? yes as far as to your beggar  
Of fifty : and he us'd to put a ducket  
In her clack-dish.

DUKE. Is't possible ?

He was not, sure, in's youth this way inclin'd.

LUC. No, he began to steer

The right course about forty ; but, good man,  
He repented the lost time of his youth. [*Exit.*]

DUKE. Virtue's defensive armour must be strong,  
To scape the merry, and malicious tongue. [*Exit.*]

*Enter JAILOR, ISABELLA.*

ISAB. Good friend ! be courteous, and let Juliet  
know

My name is Isabella, and I come  
To serve her. Will you so much favour me ?  
There's for your pains—

JAIL. You must stay here, till I shall send her  
to you. [*Exit Jailor.*]

ISAB. A prison is too good a den for  
This rude beast.

*Enter JULIET, — Isabell salutes her.*

Have comfort, sister ! I must call you so ;  
Though the uncivil law will not allow  
You yet that name.

JUL. I am not worthy of it.

ISAB. Since you have spoke so humbly of your  
self,

You must and shall be comforted : perhaps,  
Like conscience, love, when satisfied within,  
May oft offend the law, and yet not sin.

JUL. I find the greatest love is an offence ;  
For greatest love is greatest confidence ;  
When, trusting those who for our credence woo,  
We trust them with our love and honour too.

ISAB. I come to bring your sorrows some relief ;  
And would your crime not lessen but your grief.

JUL. How can I lose that honour which I gave  
To him who can and will that honour save ?

ISAB. When you your honour did to Claudio  
give,

Coz'ning your self, you did our sex deceive.  
Honour is public treasure, and 'tis fit  
Law should in public form dispose of it.

JUL. Oh Isabella ! you are cruel grown.

ISAB. Sister ! you gave much more than was  
your own.

JUL. I lov'd too much ; yet, for your brother's  
sake,

Who had that love, you my excuse should make.

ISAB. My mother's life did fair example give  
How, after death, we might unpunisht live.  
Shé, dying, did my childhood then assign  
To Claudio's care ; he leaves you now to mine.

JUL. Oh Heav'n ! you mean that Claudio still  
must die ;  
And I am now become a legacy ?



ISAB. My friends are suing for your liberty,  
And that you may secure from penance be.

JUL. What need I for the shame of penance care?  
No blush e'er dy'd the paleness of despair.

ISAB. Do not, with weeping, vainly quench your  
eyes.

Tears are to Heaven a useful sacrifice  
Where ev'ry drop moves mercy; but they gain  
On earth no more remorse than common rain.

JUL. Is there no means your brother's life to  
save?

ISAB. None that I would afford, or he would  
have?

Yet can I not affirm that there is none.

JUL. O, call back Hope, which fast does from  
us run.

ISAB. Sister, you call in vain; for, when you  
know

How wicked now Saint Angelo does grow,  
You will rejoice that death makes Claudio free,  
And think your bonds more safe than liberty.

JUL. Is Angelo as wicked as severe?

ISAB. I more his kindness now than anger fear.

JUL. To what would tyrant-force kindly per-  
suade?

ISAB. He gently treats, then rudely does invade.  
I dare not give his purpos'd sin a name;  
It is too hard a word for untaught shame.

JUL. False image of refin'd authority!

ISAB. Unless I yield my brother is to die.  
Just now I left the guards drawn up, who wait  
For execution at the prison gate.

JUL. Oh Isabell! why are we useless made?  
Too weak t'inforce, and artless to persuade:  
Nor you nor I can any help afford  
To your dear brother, and my plighted lord.  
Yet you have means; but must not have the will

By evil to prevent a greater ill.

ISAB. Have I the means? your grief misleads  
your tongue.— [She is going out.

JUL. I would do Claudio good, and you no wrong.  
Your virtue is severe! Hear me but speak!  
My heart will else out of my bosom break.

ISAB. Speak clearly then! You are not under-  
stood.

May none do ill, that so they may do good?  
Nature no greater gift than life can give.

ISAB. By virtue we our nature long outlive.

JUL. Can it be virtue to let Claudio die?

ISAB. His life should not be sav'd by infamy.

JUL. Loath'd infamy consists of evils grown  
So impudent as covet to be known.

But those seem least which bashfully we shun  
At first, and then for good intent are done.

ISAB. Sister, you argue wildly in your grief.  
You are too good to seek a bad relief  
For Claudio; therefore look for no reply.

JUL. I look for none; yet would not have him  
die.— [Going out.

ISAB. You seem'd to intimate that bashfulness  
At evil doing makes the evil less;  
That, when we good intend by doing ill,  
We bring necessity t'excuse our will:  
And, that our faults, when hidden by our shame,  
Pass free from blemish, if they scape from blame.

JUL. Forget my words. How could they be but  
weak,  
When grief did make those thoughts which fear  
did speak.

ISAB. Suppose I can a likely way devise,  
That you, assisted aptly by disguise,  
May take to-night my place with Angelo:  
The means is not remote: what will you do?

JUL. I am amaz'd and apprehend you not.

ISAB. Your sudden ignorance is strangely got.  
 I now am going to the deputy,  
 To make to his request my last reply ;  
 And I perhaps may promise willingness,  
 But on conditions made for my access  
 With bashful privacy retir'd from light ;  
 From ev'ry witness too but secret night ;  
 Whose thickest curtains shall immure the room,  
 Where for my promist person you may come.  
 Thus Claudio's life you save and lose no fame ;  
 For where none sees we cannot feel our shame.  
 Ascribe to dire necessity the ill,  
 The good of it belongs then to your will.  
 Quickly resolve and I'll prepare your way.

JUL. Ere I will Claudio in my self betray,  
 I will the torment of his death endure :  
 His sickness more becomes him than the cure.

ISAB. How, Juliet ? can you righteously refuse  
 Th' expedient which you plead that I should use ?  
 Go chide the passion which would have me do  
 That which, though ill in both, seems least in you :  
 The good or ill redemption of his life  
 Does less concern his sister than his wife.

JUL. Alas, we know not what is good or ill.

ISAB. Perhaps we should not learn that fatal  
 skill.

The serpent taught it first. Sister, away !  
 We'll more for patience, than for knowledge, pray.

*[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter* BALTHAZAR, BEATRICE, JAILOR, PAGE.

BEAT. Where's Viola ? have I lost her ? that  
 scare-crow

Makes a very bird of her.

BALT. She's run up-stairs, madam, to inform  
 Your cousin Juliet of your being here.

BEAT. Methinks this fellow looks not only ill,

But saucily ill.

BALT. How so, madam ?

BEAT. 'Tis impudence to shew so bad a face  
In good company——Friend, I'll reward you.

JAIL. The sooner the better.

BEAT. You shall wear my colours ;  
Boy, when he comes abroad  
Bid my lacquies be careful to cudgel him.

JAIL. I thank you.

[*Exit Jailor.*]

*Enter VIOLA.*

VIOL. My cousin Juliet has lockt herself in  
Her chamber, I saw her through the keyhole,  
Weeping like nurse when she lost her wedding  
ring.

BEAT. Juliet, I cannot but  
Pity thy private friendship, but am more  
Vext at our public enemy, thy judge—

BALT. Your tears, madam, shew more pity than  
anger.

BEAT. No, sir, great storms do oft begin with  
rain.

*Enter BENEDICK.*

BEN. I saw your coach at the prison-gate, lady,  
And thought y' had been arrested on  
Suspicion of love, which now is made high-treason.  
Natural bodies by the body politic.

BEAT. I should marvel, Benedick, how you had  
The face to come within sight of my sex.  
But that ill faces, being common, are  
No cause of wonder.

BEN. Mine's a politic face ; and few of that  
sort  
Are held handsome ; so politic that it  
Will hardly be seduc'd to make another  
In these dangerous times.

V.

M

BEAT. So politic, as I'd have you walk only  
At night, and with a dark lanthorn before you ;  
That, though you see others, none may see you.  
You are one of those whom I think unlucky.

BEN. This gloomy place presents you with  
strange visions.

Your coach attends you : I pray change the scene.

BEAT. Whither ? to see your brother's guards  
drawn up

For Claudio's execution ? 'las poor women  
They get much by you men.

BEN. Truly, 'tis thought they might get more !  
For men are always civilly willing,  
Though ever blam'd. But, patience ! and we shall  
Have right when we are heard.

BEAT. Heard ? yes, may she,  
Who henceforth listens to your sighing sex,  
Have her ass-ears in public bor'd, as love's  
Known slave, and wear for pendants, morrice-  
bells,

As his fantastic fool.

BEN. No whisp'ring the Platonic way ?

BEAT. Platonic way ? my cousin has Plato'd it  
Profoundly ; has she not ? i' th' name of mischief,  
Make friendship with yourselves, and not with us.  
Let every Damon of you chuse his Pythias,  
And tattle romantic philosophy  
Together, like bearded gossips.

BEN. Though such conversation might breed  
peace in

A palace, yet 'twould make but a thin court.

BEAT. Discourse all day, lolling like lazy ill-  
Bred wits, with your right legs o'er your left  
knees :

Defining love, till he become as raw

As if he were dissected by anatomists.

Give balls and serenades to your dear selves.

BEN. That were, as we are taught by the old proverb,  
To be merry and wise.

*Enter LUCIO.*

LUC. We shall be more  
Troubled with this fiddling friar, than with ten  
Lay-fools. He has so infected the Provost  
With good counsel, that there is no hope from  
him.

The guards are doubled at the prison gate ;  
And Claudio is to die at break of day.

BEAT. Where's now your valour, sir ?  
Is furious Benedick, like beasts of prey,  
Courageous only in the field,  
And with familiar tameness creeps in towns  
Beneath the anger of your feeder's law ?  
Jailor, where are you ? Bring me to my cousin !

*[Ex. Beat., Viol.]*

BEN. She's rais'd to a most amiable humour.  
Now is your time, Lucio, to make love to her.

LUC. I am now for the Platonic way of billing  
Like meek turtles, without the noise of passion.

BALT. We, Lucio, who are parcel-lovers, should  
Mourn like turtles over a bottle in  
These days of persecution.

BEN. Signiors, prepare t' offend the laws ! I find  
I must grow rude, and make bold with my brother.

*[Exeunt omnes.]*

*Enter PROVOST, DUKE.*

PROV. The guards thus doubled at the prison  
gate,

Confirms my doubt that Signior Benedick  
Did counterfeit the pardon which he brought.

DUKE. You have another prisoner here  
Condemn'd to die ?

PROV. The wicked Bernardine hath long  
Been a most painful and a watchful robber,  
But now the short remainder of his life  
He lazily consumes in sleep.

DUKE. Is he so careless before death ?

PROV. He minds  
Not what is past, or present, or to come.

DUKE. He wants advice.

PROV. We oft have wakened him, as if he were  
To go to execution, and shew'd him too  
A seeming warrant, but he seem'd not mov'd.

*Enter FOOL.*

FOOL. The hangman waits to despatch his  
business  
With your worship.

PROV. Sirrah, his business is with you.

FOOL. My worship will hardly be at leisure for  
him.

PROV. Call him in !

*Enter HANGMAN.*

This fellow, early in the morning is  
To help you in your execution.  
He cannot plead a quality above  
Your service, he has been a noted bawd.

HANG. A bawd ! fye on him, he'll disgrace our  
mystery.

FOOL. Sir, by your good favour, for surely, sir,  
You would have a good favour, had you not  
A hanging look, d'you call your trade a mystery ?

HANG. Yes, you will find it so.

FOOL. What mystery there should be in hang-  
ing, if

I were to be hang'd, I cannot imagine.

HANG. It is a mystery : but you must be hang'd  
Ere you can find it out.

PROV. Provide your block and axe;  
And call Bernardine! [*Exit Hangman.*]

DUKE. What horrid instruments are us'd by  
pow'r!

FOOL. Mr Bernardine, you must rise and be  
hang'd.

Mr Bernardine!

BERN. (*within*). Curse on your throat! who  
makes that noise?

What are you?

FOOL. Your friend, the hangman! you must be  
so good

As to rise, and be put to death.

BERN. Away you rogue! I am sleepy.

PROV. Tell him he must wake.

FOOL. Pray, Mr Bernardine awake till you  
Are executed and sleep afterwards.

PROV. Go in, and fetch him out.

FOOL. He's coming, sir, for I hear his straw  
rustle.

*Enter BERNARDINE.*

BERN. How now, Fool, what's the news with you?

FOOL. Truly, sir, I would desire you to clap  
close to

Your prayers, for the warrant's come.

BERN. Y'are a rogue! I've been drinking all  
night,

And am not fitted for the warrant.

FOOL. The better, sir; for he that drinks all  
night,

And is hang'd very betimes in the morning,

May sleep the soundlier all the next day.

PROV. Look, sir, here comes your ghostly father!  
D'you think we jest now?

DUKE. Induc'd, sir, by my charity, and hearing  
how



Hastily you are to depart, I am come to advise you,  
Comfort you, and pray with you.

BERN. Friar, not I. I've been drinking hard all  
night,  
And will have more time to prepare me, or they  
Shall beat out my brains with billets.  
I'll not die to-day.

DUKE. O, sir, you must, and therefore, I be-  
seech you,  
Look forward on the journey you shall go.

BERN. I'll not die till I have slept, for any  
Man's persuasion.

DUKE. But, hear you—

BERN. Not a word; if you have any thing to  
speak  
Come to my ward, for I'll not thence to-day.

*[Exeunt Bernardine, Fool.]*

PROV. What think you of this prisoner, father?

DUKE. Nature did never make a thing more  
wretched.

He is unfit to live or die. 'Twere want  
Of common charity to transport him  
In the mind he is. Let him have more time,  
And be restrain'd from ev'ry nourishment but sleep  
Till I have made him fit for death.

*Enter JAILOR.*

JAIL. Sir, a messenger at the prison gate  
Knocks hard, and says that he must speak with  
you.

PROV. I come! Father, if it please you, let's  
retire. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter CLAUDIO and FOOL.*

CLAUD. Bolting the door we are unheard and  
safe.  
Thou art a man, though in an ill disguise;

And should'st support thy being worthily.

FOOL. Why, truly sir, though I have had a couple  
Of ill callings, yet I would live as well  
As I could by both.

CLAUD. Thou hast a servant been to shame, and  
now

Art but an officer to cruelty.

There, take this gold ! it is a thousand crowns.

Wilt thou not run a little hazard for

Much happiness ? The venture is not great ;

And it may probably produce at once

Thy freedom and support.

FOOL. Sir, mine is but

A thin summer-skin ; 't has been often cut

And slasht with whipping. I would very fain

Sleep whole in it now.

CLAUD. Have courage, friend, 'tis gold !

FOOL. My grandam left me nothing at her death

But a good old proverb, that's Touch and Take :

And I may say 't has been a lucky proverb

To me. What would you have me do ?

CLAUD. I have within a Page's habit, packt up

Close. Prithee, convey it by your friend,

The Jailor, to Julietta, whose escape,

In that disguise, I newly have contriv'd,

By correspondence with an officer

Who has the foremost station of

The guards without, and has been servant to

My father. If thou hast any tenderness

Do this, that she may scape from public penance.

FOOL. But how shall I scape, sir ? I shall do  
penance

Without a sheet or shirt : for my kind tutor,

The hangman, will strip me stark naked

When I'm swinging, though the wind blow north  
erly.

CLAUD. The law for thy offence can doom thee

But to fetters during life, and half that gold  
May purchase thy release.

FOOL. A sore whipping may come into the bargain.

But 'tis a poor back that cannot sometimes  
Pay for the maint'nance of the belly. I'll do't !

CLAUD. Pray lose no time ; I have but little left.

FOOL. Have you no more gold ? sure, you might  
scape too.

CLAUD. Friend, I have given you all I have, nor  
could

My greater plenty work my liberty ;  
For my confederate dares not undertake  
To make the passage clear for more than one,  
Or, if he could, I want disguise for two.

FOOL. If you get out, sir, you then scape from  
death.

CLAUD. And she by freedom scapes from dreadful  
shame

Of doing penance. Pray, dispute it not !

*[Knocking within.]*

What hand is that ? if you prove faithful now  
You'll gain forgiveness for your past offences.

FOOL. My golden guests retire you straight into  
The closet of my breeches.

Much in all ages, good innocent gold,  
Has been lay'd to your charge——

*[Puts up the bag and looks through the key-hole.]*

It is the Lady Juliet's maid ! I'll let  
Her in ; and bear the habit to her mistress.

*[Exit Fool.]*

*Enter MAID.*

MAID. My lady with this letter, sir, sends you  
Her dearest prayers and love.

CLAUD. Heaven value both, so much as they  
Are priz'd by me—— *[Reads the letter.]*

The Provost's wife, in pity of your distress ; or perhaps out of love to your person, or rather, as I hope, out of respect to your virtue, has devis'd means for your escape. She has by large gifts prevail'd with my keeper to leave your passage free to my chamber. I beseech you, with the efficacy of my last breath, to make use of this occasion and to hasten hither. Your way to liberty must be out of my window, from whence by a small engine she will wrench the bars.

MAID. Can you find leisure to consider, sir,  
Of that which by my lady is so well  
Resolv'd ?

CLAUD. The Provost's wife ! will she facilitate  
Your lady's liberty with mine ?

MAID. She says, she cannot undertake so far.

CLAUD. Then I'll refuse her courtesy.

MAID. My lady sends you this request in tears.  
Will you deny it her ?

CLAUD. If my escape I from her chamber make,  
The law will lay the guilt of it on her ;  
And she remains behind to bear  
The punishment.

MAID. She hath agreed to that  
Condition with the Provost's wife.

CLAUD. Your lady makes me an unkind request.

MAID. Have you the heart to judge it so ?

CLAUD. Can she be ign'rant that the rigid law  
Does judge it in a prisoner forfeiture  
Of life, to help another prisoner to  
Escape, who is condemn'd to die ?

MAID. That forfeiture she cheerfully will pay :  
But has so govern'd me with desp'rate vows,  
That I lackt courage to refuse to bring  
This message to you.

CLAUD. How pow'rful, fatal Juliet, is thy  
love !

Yet must it not more valiant be than mine——

[Weeps.

Tell her, I've newly sent her a request  
More just than that which she has sent by you ;  
It will be brought her with a present too :  
Which if, unkindly, she denies to take,  
She does by 'xample my denial make.

[Exeunt several ways.

Enter ANGELO, SERVANT.

ANG. Attend her in, and then wait you at distance !

[Exit Servant.

O Love ! how much thy borrow'd shapes disguise,  
Even to themselves, the valiant and the wise !

Enter ISABELLA.

ANG. Had you not fear'd th' approach of Claudio's fate

Which shews you are to him compassionate,  
Though not to me, I had not seen you here.  
He may your pity thank, and I your fear.

ISAB. My lord, I hardly could my self forgive  
For suing still to have my brother live,  
But that a higher hope directs my aim ;  
Which, saving his frail life, would your's reclaim.

ANG. How desp'rate all your hopeful visits prove !

You bring me counsel still instead of love ;  
And would in storms of passion make me wise.  
Bid pilots preach to winds when tempests rise.

ISAB. But yet as tempests are by showers allay'd,  
So may your anger by my tears be sway'd.

ANG. You must by yielding teach me to relent.  
Make haste ! the mourners tears are almost spent.  
Courtiers to tyrant-death who basely wait,  
To do that tyrant honour whom they hate,  
Inviting formal fools to see his feast

To which your brother is th' unwilling guest,  
And the absolving priest must say the grace :  
Night's progress done, Claudio begins his race.

ISAB. And with the morning's wings your cruel  
doom

He shall convey where you must trembling come,  
Before that judge, whose pow'r you use so ill,  
As if, like law, 'twere subject to your will.  
The cruel there shall wish they had been just,  
And that their seeming love had not been lust.

ANG. These useless sayings were from cloisters  
brought :

You cannot teach so soon as you were taught.  
You must example to my mercy give ;  
First save my life, and then let Claudio live.

ISAB. Have you no words but what are only  
good,

Because their ill is quickly understood ?  
Dispose of Claudio's life ! whilst cruel you  
Seem dead, by being deaf to all that sue ;  
Till by long custom of forgiving none  
Y'are so averse to all forgiveness grown,  
That in your own behalf you shall deny,  
To hear of absolution when you die.

ANG. How, Isabell ? from calms of bashfulness  
Even such as suppliant saints to Heaven express,  
When patience makes her self a sacrifice,  
Can you to storms of execration rise ?

*[Isabell is going out.]*

Leave me not full of evil wonder : stay !

ISAB. Can it be good to hear what you would  
say ? *[He steps in and reaches a cabinet ;*

ANG. In this behold nature's reserves of light,  
When the lost day yields to advancing night.  
When that black goddess fine in frosts appears,  
Then starry jewels bright as these she wears :  
The wealth of many parents who did spare

In plenteous peace, and get by prosperous war.

ISAB. Of that which evil life may get, you make  
A wonder in a monstrous boast ;  
Which death from you as certainly will  
take,

As 'tis already by your parents lost.

ANG. Be in this world, like other mortals, wise ;  
And take this treasure as your beauty's prize.  
Wealth draws a curtain o'er the face of shame,  
Restores lost beauty, and recovers fame.

ISAB. Catch fools in nets without a covert laid ;  
Can I, who see the treason, be betray'd ?

*[Going out.]*

ANG. Stay, Isabell, stay but a moment's space !  
You know me not by knowing but my face.  
My heart does differ from my looks and tongue,  
To know you much I have deceived you long.

ISAB. Have you more shapes, or would you new  
devise ?

ANG. I'll now, at once, cast off my whole disguise.  
Keep still your virtue, which is dignified,  
And has new value got by being tried.  
Claudio shall longer live than I can do,  
Who was his judge, but am condemn'd by you.  
The martial of the guards keeps secretly  
His pardon seal'd ; nor meant I he should die.

ISAB. By shifting your disguise, you seem much  
more  
In borrow'd darkness than you were before.

ANG. Forgive me, who, till now, thought I should  
find

Too many of your beauteous sex too kind.  
I strove, as jealous lovers curious grow,  
Vainly to learn, what I was loth to know.  
And of your virtue I was doubtful grown,  
As men judge women's frailties by their own.  
But since you fully have endured the test,

And are not only good, but prove the best  
Of all your sex, submissively I woo  
To be your lover and your husband too,

ISAB. Can I, when free, be by your words  
subdu'd,

Whose actions have my brother's life pursu'd ?

ANG. I never meant to take your brother's life ;  
But, if in trial how to chuse a wife,  
I have too diffident, too curious been,  
I'll pardon ask for folly, as for sin ;  
I loved you ere your precious beauties were  
In your probation shaded at Saint Clare :  
And, when with sacred sisterhood confin'd,  
A double enterprise perplex my mind ;  
By Claudio's danger to provoke you forth  
From that blest shade, and then to try your worth.

ISAB. She that can credit give to things so  
strange,

And can comply with such a sudden change,  
Has mighty faith, and kindness too so strong,  
That the extreme cannot continue long.  
I am so pleas'd with Claudio's liberty,  
That the example shall preserve me free.

ANG. Was I, when bad so quickly understood ;  
And cannot be believed when I am good.

ISAB. In favour of my sex, and not of you,  
I wish your love so violent and true,  
That those who shall hereafter curious be,  
To seek that frailty, which they would not see,  
May by your punishment become afraid,  
To use those nets which you ignobly laid.

ANG. Ah, Isabell ! you blam'd my cruelty !  
Will you, when I shew mercy, cruel be ?

ISAB. You might have met a weaker breast than  
mine,

Which at approach to parley would incline :  
How little honour then you had obtain'd,



If, where but little was, you that had stain'd !  
 Had you been great of mind, you would have strove  
 T' have hid, or helpt the weaknesses of love,  
 And not have used temptations to the frail,  
 Or pow'r, where 'twas dishonour to prevail.  
 You will, if now your love dissembled be,  
 Deceive yourself in not deceiving me.  
 If it be true, you shall not be believ'd,  
 Lest you should think me apt to be deceiv'd. [*Exit.*]

ANO. Break heart ! farewell the cruel and the  
 just !

Fools seek belief where they have bred distrust :  
 Because she doubts my virtue I must die ;  
 Who did with vicious arts her virtue try. [*Exit.*]

# ACT V. SCENE I.

*Enter DUKE and ISABELLA.*

DUKE. You told me, daughter, that the marshal  
 has

Your brother's pardon seal'd, and I shall watch  
 All means to keep him safe, lest Angelo  
 Should turn his clemency into revenge.  
 Do not th' assurance of his freedom buy  
 With hazard of a virgin's liberty.

ISAB. I shall with patience follow your instruction.

DUKE. Night's shady curtains are already drawn ;  
 And you shall hear strange news before the dawn.

[*Exit Duke.*]

*Enter FRANCISCA.*

FRANC. Is the good father gone ?

ISAB. Yes, sister, and has left my breast in  
 peace. [*A bell rings.*]

FRANC. This bell does nightly warn us ere we sleep,  
T' appease offended Heaven. Let us go pray,  
That the world's crimes may vanish with the day.  
[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter* BENEDICK, ESCHALUS, BEATRICE, VIOLA,  
LUCIO, *singing a chorus within.*

ESCH. Your brother, sir, has an unquiet mind :  
'Tis late, and he would take his rest.

VIOL. We'll sing him asleep.

BEN. Shall he who should  
Live lean with care of the whole common-wealth,  
Grow fat with sleep like a Greenland-bear ?

ESCH. Rulers are but mortal ; and should have  
rest.

BEN. A Statesman should take a nap in his chair,  
And only dream of sleep.

BEAT. These great tame lions of the law,  
Who make offenders of the weak,  
Should still seem watchful, and like wild lions  
Sleep with their eyes open.

ESCH. Is night a season for singing ?

VIOL. We'll sing like nightingales, and they sing  
at night.

ESCH. Take heed ! for the grand-watch does walk  
the round.

BEAT. Signior, when did you hear of nightingales  
Taken by the watch ?

LUC. Madam, we'll sing ! The governor  
May come, if he please, and sigh to the chorus.

ESCH. I'll bear no part, sir, in your song,  
Nor in your punishment. [*Exit Eschalus.*]

*The SONG.*

LUC. Our ruler has got the vertigo of State ;  
The world turns round in his politic pate.

He steers in a sea, where his course cannot last,  
And bears too much sail for the strength of  
his mast.

CHO. Let him plot all he can,  
Like a politic man,  
Yet love though a child may fit him.  
The small archer though blind,  
Such an arrow will find,  
As with an old trick shall hit him.

## 2.

BEAT. Sure Angelo knows love's party is strong ;  
Love melts, like soft wax, the hearts of the  
young.  
And none are so old but they think on the  
taste,  
And weep with remembrance of kindnesses  
past.

CHO. Let him plot all he can, &c.

## 3.

BEN. Love in the wisest is held a mad fit ;  
And madness in fools is reckon'd for wit.  
The wise value love, just as fools wisdom prize,  
Which when they can't gain, they seem to  
despise.

CHO. Let him plot all he can, &c.

## 4.

VIOL. Cold cowards all perils of anger to shun ;  
To dangers of love they leap when they run.  
The valiant in frolicks did follow the boy,  
When he led them a dance from Greece to old  
Troy.

CHO. Let him plot all he can, &c.

*Enter BALTHAZAR.*

BALT. Behind the garden of the Augustines

Your friends attend. You must be sudden if  
You'd be successful.

BEN. I come ! Bid Lucio in a whisper to  
Retire, and to expect my orders at  
Saint Laurence Gate. Lady, though you deny  
Sleep to my brother, yet, you may do well  
T'allow a little of it to your self.  
It grows late ; and Viola, methinks, begins  
To lose an eye with watching in your service.

VIOL. I love watching and dancing too in moon-  
shine nights,  
Like any fairy.

BEAT. Can whispers hide your bus'ness, Benedick,  
When you are such a weather-cock, that with  
But looking on you I can quickly find  
Where the wind sits ? Well, I wish you some  
danger,

That you may get the more honour.

*[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter ANGELO, ESCHALUS.*

ANG. It is not just I should rebuke them for  
Their harmony of mind ; that were to shew  
The rage, and envious malice of the devil,  
Who quarrels with the good, because they have  
That happiness, which he can ne'er enjoy.

ESCH. My lord, I find you sick for want of rest ;  
And grieve to hear you say, the cause of your  
Disease is in your self.

ANG. No sickness, Eschalus,  
Can be more dangerous than mine, of which  
The cause is known to that physician, who  
Enjoins me to despair of cure.

ESCH. Your words amaze me !

*Enter 1. SERVANT.*

1. SERV. To arms, my lord, to arms !

V.

N

The ancient citizens are wakt in terror  
By the insulting youth ; who in loud throngs  
March through the streets to the parade.

ANG. Hence, coward ! thou art frightened by thy  
dream. *[Exit Servant.]*

*Enter 2. SERVANT.*

2. SERV. Arm, arm, my lord ! your brother is  
revolted,  
Heading a body of disbanded officers.  
He is in skirmish with your guards,  
To rescue Claudio from the law.

ANG. My brother grown my public enemy ?  
This iteration sounds like truth. I was  
Just now sending to declare Claudio's pardon,  
And to hasten his and Juliet's liberty.

ESCH. You purpos'd well, but your performance  
was  
Too slow.

*Enter 1. SERVANT.*

1. SERV. 'Tis said the marshal of your guards is  
slain.

ANG. That's a surprise of fortune ; for he had  
Claudio's pardon, and, had he shewn it, might  
Perhaps have quencht the mutiny.  
My armour ! and command my guard of Switzs  
To march, and to make good the pass, which leads  
To Saint Jago's Port. Haste, Eschalus !  
And bid Montano make a sally from  
The citadel. *[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter DUKE, PROVOST.*

DUKE. Lock up your pris'ners, and secure the  
gates !

PROV. I did suspect by Lucio's menacings,  
That Benedick would Claudio's liberty

Attempt by force ; and therefore did provide  
For opposition to attend th' assault.

Forty, selected from the guards without,  
I have drawn in.

DUKE. Are they enter'd ?

PROV. They are, and bold Ursino does command 'em.

DUKE. Th' expedient which, in haste, I have  
prescrib'd,  
Will in extremity be fit to use ;  
Though when you threaten't men may think you  
cruel.

PROV. Father, I'll strictly follow your advice.

DUKE. Offer a parley from the battlements.  
Be careful, valiant Provost, of your charge,  
And Heaven take care of you !

PROV. I'll through the postern lead you out :  
Your function will protect you. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter* BENEDICK, BALTHAZAR, OFFICERS.

BEN. Remove the marshal straight where surgeons may  
Attend his wound, which is not mortal, though  
His loss of blood deprive him of his speech.

BALT. A squadron of the guards, at our approach,  
Retir'd into the prison, to make good  
The gates against assault.

BEN. Their sudden fear begot that policy,  
Rather to make conditions for themselves,  
Than for the place.

BALT. The Provost will be obstinate.

BEN. It may be safer for him to preserve  
His courage for some other use.

*Enter* LUCIO, DUKE.

LUC. Father Fox, the friar, is stoln out of his  
hole ;

And is going to make a visit to  
The geese of his parish.

BEN. Lucio, let him pass !

LUC. If you give quarter to the enemies  
Of lovers, you will be follow'd in your  
Next war by none but decrepid old soldiers ;  
The youth will all forsake you.

BEN. Unhand him straight ! we must, in rev'-  
rence to

His function, make him free.

DUKE. Peace be with your lordship.

LUC. Take care of lovers in your orisons,  
And the rather, because, praying for them,  
You pray for the Duke. Remember that friar.

DUKE. If e'er I see the Duke, sir, he shall know  
How much he is oblig'd to you.

BEN. Lucio, be stedfast in your station !

[*Exeunt Duke, Lucio.*]

*PROVOST from the battlements.*

BEN. Look up ! the Provost does relent : he  
seems

Inclin'd to parley.

PROV. May fortune serve the valiant Benedick  
In all attempts, but when he does invade  
The forts of law, where justice would secure  
The trophies of her victories.

BEN. Provost, I take your greeting well, and  
wish

Your courage more success, than you in your  
Resistance now are like to find. You are  
Too wise to talk of law to those who mean  
To justify their actions by their swords.

PROV. My lord, some honour I have gotten in  
The face of enemies ; and will not lose  
It in the sight of friends.

BEN. You must give Claudio and Julietta liberty ;

And then your other pris'ners, and your self,  
Shall, undisturb'd, be at your own dispose.

PROV. Claudio, by sentence, is condemn'd ; and,  
sure,

My office does engage my honour to  
Make good the sentence of the law.

BALT. Provost, we come not here to make a war,  
Like women, with vain words.

BEN. Accept of peace by yielding that which I  
Would gain by a request, or else expect  
The worst event of force.

PROV. Your force I will  
Oppose ; and when my temper is too much  
Provok'd, perhaps the extremity may make  
Me shew you such an object, as will hurt  
Your eyes.

*Enter LUCIO.*

LUC. My lord, retire to face your brother's pow'r,  
Which now is doubled by a sally from  
The citadel.

BEN. Make good the passage at Saint Laurence  
Gate :  
And, whilst my squadron does advance,  
You, Balthazar, must march at distance with  
The rear.

PROV. Ursino ! range your partizans !  
'Tis now our time to make a sally too. [*Exeunt.*  
*[Clashing of arms within.*

*Enter BEATRICE, VIOLA, LACQUEY.*

VIOL. Sister ! sister ! can we not hide our selves ?

BEAT. Fear nothing, Viola, till you are in love.  
But then our faces we like wood-cocks hide ;  
Whilst foolish fear, which is in women shame,  
Makes us but tempt the fowler to give aim.



*Enter 1. PAGE.*

1 PAGE. Madam, all's our own !

BEAT. Well, speak ! you are one of those messengers

Who lost his wages by his diligence ;  
Running so fast to bring good news, that he  
Wanted breath to utter it.

1 PAGE. Count Benedick's a most substantial man.

Would the sun were up, that his friends might see  
How he stands to't, whilst his enemies fly from him.

BEAT. He is a substance fit to stand i' th' sun  
To make a shadow. And, being the substance,  
Lucio must be the shadow ! if Benedick  
Fly first, Lucio will not fail to follow him.

1 PAGE. There is no end of Count Benedick's valour.

BEAT. Valiant without end ; that is, stout to no purpose.

*Enter 2. PAGE.*

2. PAGE. Oh madam ! Count Benedick is lost.

BEAT. How ? This foolish boy was ever given to lying.

Lacquey, go out, and bring me truth ; such truth  
As I shall like, or else return no more.

2. PAGE. Madam, all the maids——

BEAT. Peace ! Your intelligence comes from the laundry.

VIOL. Well ! I fear the news may be too true, then ;

They know what they say. Carlo, tell it me !

*[Page and Viola whisper.]*

BEAT. My eyes are not prophétical ; perhaps  
They melt too soon. Lost, valiant Benedick,  
Lost by thy noble kindness for my sake ;

Who, whilst I pitied Claudio in his danger,  
Had of thy safety no indulgent care.

*Enter BALTHAZAR.*

BALT. Madam, pardon my haste, which is as  
rude  
As my unseasonable visit.

BEAT. Tell me, I pray, the business of this night ?

BALT. Count Benedick began it with success ;  
Who to redeem unhappy Claudio from  
The arms of death, and Juliet from the shame  
Of public penance, did assault the guards  
Attending near the prison gate ; and at  
The first encounter did disperse that force.

BEAT. This is no wonder ; for, in honour's game,  
Where many throw at the last great stake, life,  
As if 'twere but light gold, young gamesters oft  
Are lucky.

BALT. The Provost offered parley, but denied  
To yield the pris'ners, and the cause which made  
Him obstinate grew quickly evident ;  
By old Montano's sally from the citadel,  
And Angelo's advance with all his Zwitz :  
These were by valiant Benedick repulst.

BEAT. I'm not sorry now that I have his picture :  
For the vain gentleman will quickly grow  
So alter'd by success that without his  
Image I should hardly know him.

BALT. Lord Angelo would have retir'd into the  
citadel ;  
But in the strife of that retreat  
Brave Benedick receiv'd a wound.

BEAT. A wound !—excuse me, Balthazar, if I  
Assume the feeling of your friendship to him,  
And pity him for your sake.

BALT. The wound was slight ;  
And rather serv'd t'augment his courage, than

To waste his strength.

BEAT. Well, I'll allow him courage. Pray, proceed !

BALT. With many shouts saluted, he again Summon'd the Provost ; who, enraged at our Resistance of his sally from the prison, Licens'd his anger even to cruelty ; For, as a dire expedient to prevent Th' occasion of a new assault, he doom'd Young Claudio to endure the bloody axe ; And from the battlements shew'd us his head.

BEAT. Enough ! your story grows too dismal to Be heard. Dead Claudio yet more happy is Than living Juliet. Pray be brief, if you Have any other sorrows to reveal !

BALT. The cruel Provost having thus provok'd Count Benedick ; he straight prepares to storm The prison ; and, th' assault was scarce begun When, suddenly our sov'reign Duke breaks forth From the dark cloud of that disguise, in which, It seems, he hath remain'd conceal'd in Turin.

BEAT. The Duke in town ?

BALT. Most visibly in person, and in pow'r. For by his high command victorious Benedick Is now with conquer'd Angelo, and both Are pris'ners to the Provost.

BEAT. Sudden and strange !

BALT. Lord Angelo is kept from visitants, To make him ignorant of what is past ; And, by the strictness of the guards to Benedick, 'Tis whisper'd and suspected that he will Be sentenc'd for rebellion.

BEAT. I'll to the Duke ! He's full of clemency ; A Prince, who, by forgiving, does reclaim, And tenderly preserve for noble use, Many whom rigid justice, by exemplar death, Would make for ever useless to the world.

BALT. 'Tis fit you hasten to him.

BEAT. In his own arms he bred my infancy.

He ever yielded to me when I su'd  
For men who had no other plea to get  
Their pardon but their misery ; and, sure,  
He'll not deny me when in tears I kneel  
For valiant Benedick.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter DUKE in his own habit, ESCHALUS, PROVOST,  
FRIAR THOMAS, ATTENDANTS.*

DUKE. In favour of that pow'r, which I did  
leave

In Angelo's possession, as my substitute,  
I have reliev'd him from his brother's fury.  
But Angelo, in his short government,  
Disfigur'd and disgrac'd that fair  
Resemblance which he wore of me  
By many blemishes.

ESCH. Though your accustom'd clemency should  
give

Him leave to use his eloquence in's own  
Defence, yet he would silence it, and hope  
For no relief but from your gracious mercy.

DUKE. Provost, he is your prisen'er now  
With Benedick. Take care they do not meet.

PROV. Sir, they are sever'd under watchful  
guards.

DUKE. 'Tis well. Go, do what further I enjoin'd  
you.

PROV. I humbly beg your Highness' pardon, for  
my

Ignorance of what you were when you  
Were pleas'd to make your visits in disguise.

DUKE. You need no pardon, but have merited  
My thanks and favour. [*Exit Provost.*]

FRI. THO. Is it your Highness' will that I attend  
you ?

DUKE. I've left your habit, but will ne'er forsake  
Your company nor counsel. Father, now  
You must make haste, and do as I directed.

FRI. THO. I shall be diligent in both of your  
Commands. *[Exit Friar Thomas.]*

DUKE. You, Eschalus, complain of being wrong'd  
By having been made ignorant of all  
These evils past. I left you not to sleep  
Away your time.

ESCH. If you vouchsafe me not your pardon,  
I shall with shame receive my punishment ;  
Though it is better to be ignorant  
Than to be guilty.

*Enter BEATRICE, VIOLA, 2 PAGES, LACQUEY.*

BEAT. As virtuous virgins, by their vows to  
Heaven,  
Have brought you here, so may their prayers  
Preserve you long amongst us.

DUKE. I thank you, beauteous maid. But I  
perceive  
Affliction in your eyes. Whence does it come?

BEAT. I am a lowly suitor to your Highness.

DUKE. I hope you are not so unfortunate  
As to desire a benefit, which I  
Unwillingly shall grant.

BEAT. If no offenders were, then sov'reign pow'r  
Would have no use of mercy :  
Though Benedick has much offended, yet  
Forgive that valour which by yours was bred ; -  
And let him not be lost who was misled.

DUKE. Your heart is alter'd since I saw you last.  
Can Benedick in his affliction now  
Prevail ; and be petition'd for by you  
Who scorn'd him when he did in triumph sue ?  
This riddle I will leave to Eschalus.  
Give me a quick account of it. I shall

Consider and take care of your request.

*[Exeunt several ways.]*

*Enter* ANGELO, FRIAR THOMAS.

ANG. In the perplexity of fight, when I  
Was forc'd to a retreat, I did suppose  
My brother, to procure the people to  
His side, had publish'd but in artifice  
The Duke's return.

FRI. THO. The Duke is certainly in town, and  
has,  
During the time of your vicegerency,  
Remain'd here in disguise. He did converse  
With Isabella, and continually  
Receiv'd from her true knowledge of her griefs,  
And by what art you have afflicted her.

ANG. Oh, Father, I am lost !

FRI. THO. Could you suppose  
You were your brother's prisoner here ?

ANG. In the dark mist of our encounter,  
I was led to that mistake.

FRY. THO. 'Twas a mistake indeed ;  
For Benedick's your fellow prisoner now,  
And under strict command.

ANG. I know him noble, though by passion urg'd  
To this outrageous violence against  
My ill dispos'd authority : and, had  
He now been free, I easily should have hop'd  
His favour with the Duke might have procur'd  
My peace and pardon too. But, in my strict  
Restraint, how, Father, did you get this visit ?

FRI. THO. By an especial leave to comfort you.

*Enter* PROVOST.

The Provost has perhaps occasion of concernment  
With you. I'll take leave a while. *[Exit Friar.]*

Prov. My lord, with blushes I appear

I' th' presence of your most unhappy fortune,  
 Asham'd of my authority ; but 'tis  
 His Highness' will, that you should now  
 Be subject to my pow'r, who have been long  
 Govern'd by yours.

ANG. You will be civil to me, Provost, if  
 You think I am contented with this change.

PROV. You are so well prepar'd for grief,  
 That I may now ask leave to tell you, he, whom  
 You did hastily condemn, was, with dispatch,  
 As fatal as your sentence, executed.

ANG. Who can you mean ?

PROV. Th' unhappy Claudio.

ANG. Is he executed ? The Marshal had his  
 pardon seal'd.

PROV. The Marshal, who is now in hope of cure,  
 Was by his wound last night in the first charge  
 Depriv'd of speech ; so, by the law of destiny,  
 Your purpos'd remedy against your law  
 Was known too late : for, to divert  
 The fury of th' assault, by taking from  
 His friends that hope which was the cause of strife,  
 I did appoint him for the axe ; and from  
 Our battlements shew'd them his head.

ANG. All my sinister stars have met at once  
 In consultation how to ruin me.

PROV. A moment ere his death, a friar, who  
 was

Official here, did marry him to Juliet :  
 And therefore now I come to know, how far  
 You, by your plentiful estate, will please  
 To give subsistence to his mourning widow ?  
 You know that his possessions, and her dowry,  
 He dying guilty by the sentence of  
 The law, are both confiscate to the Duke.

ANG. My bosom is too narrow for this grief ;  
 I give her all I have.

*Enter ESCHALUS.*

ESCH. My lord, I grieve to tell you, that the Duke,  
As a reward to Isabella's virtue for  
Her sufferings, has already, by his promise,  
Given her th' intended confiscation of  
Your lands and treasure.

ANG. 'Tis righteously bestow'd. But where,  
alas !

She having all, is Juliet's recompence ?

PROV. Let's leave him, signior, to his thoughts.  
[*Exit Provost.*]

ANG. How wisely fate ordain'd for human kind  
Calamity, which is the perfect glass  
Wherein we truly see and know our selves.  
How justly it created life but short ;  
For, being incident to many griefs,  
Had it been destin'd to continue long,  
Fate, to please fools, had done the wise great  
wrong.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

ISAB. I come, my lord, to see you in eclipse :  
You did too hurtful to mine eyes appear,  
When with your glory you did fill your sphere.

ANG. Is it revenge that hath this visit bred ;  
Or are you hither by compassion led ?

ISAB. With no revenge nor pity I comply,  
But come, perhaps, in curiosity ;  
As in a great eclipse the curious run  
T'inform themselves exactly of the sun :  
For, when his light is lessen'd, they see more  
Of his unevenness, than they saw before.

ANG. The spots in him only imagin'd be ;  
But all reported stains are true in me.

ISAB. As your confession of the worst of you  
Seems now to utter more than does seem true,



So of the best of you, which is your love,  
Perhaps you told much more than you could prove.

ANG. In an ill season you require a test,  
T'assure you of that love which I profess;  
When I can offer nothing that is fit,  
To be a pledge to make you credit it;  
Since all I had is by the Duke, as due  
To injur'd virtue, freely given to you.

ISAB. Take back your wealth! improperly consign'd

To me, who prize no wealth, but of the mind.

ANG. How, Isabell? would you a present make  
Of such a gift as you disdain to take?  
It would more worthy of your bounty prove,  
To keep such trifles, and to give me love.  
But I would have what you can never give;  
Claudio is dead, whose life should make me live.

ISAB. I shall redeem you now from half your fear;

I must be gone, but Claudio shall appear. [*Exit.*]

ANG. What may this mean? Virgins so soft as she  
Can never pleasure take in cruelty.  
Heav'n oft in wonders does propitious grow,  
Fortune no faster ebbs than it can flow.

*Enter* CLAUDIO, JULIETTA.

CLAUD. Let those who lost their youth retire to  
graves,  
Death's closets, where, though there be privacy,  
Yet there is never use of thoughts. Let us thank  
Heaven that we have life, since we together  
May enjoy it.

JUL. From a wild tempest, where we both were  
lost,  
Heaven lands us strangely on a flow'ry coast.

CLAUD. Since none could thus recover'd be by  
Heaven,

Were not the crimes which lost them quite forgiven,

Let us express a kind forgiveness too.

JUL. Honour, would that without religion do ?

ANG. Are you the mortal substances of forms  
Which you resemble, Claudio and Julietta ;  
Yet, like immortal angels, can so much  
Of good forgiveness speak ?

CLAUD. What act hath Angelo severely done,  
For which his brother Benedick hath not  
By kindness ample satisfaction given ?

ANG. How is this wonder to be understood ?

*Enter* BENEDICK.

BEN. The Provost, brother, has to happy purpose  
Deceiv'd us by the death of Bernardine.  
Let us embrace and mutually exchange  
Forgiveness !

ANG. Sure, our offences to each other will  
Admit excuse, since the authority of mighty love  
Did sway us both. This meeting has much comfort

In it though it be in prison.

*Enter* BEATRICE, VIOLA.

BEAT. Where is the rebel ?

BEN. No rebel, lady, to your pow'r.

BEAT. If you had err'd that way y'had never  
been

Forgiven ; but you may offend your Prince  
As often as you please. There's your pardon !  
*[Gives him a paper seal'd.]*

BEN. I hope you will not undo me.

BEAT. How so, sir ?

BEN. I am afraid 'tis a licence for marriage.

BEAT. No, sir, plays that end so begin to be

Out of fashion.

BEN. Do you not see your cousin Juliet ?  
She has been advis'd by a bald dramatic poet  
Of the next cloister, to end her tragi-comedy  
With Hymen the old way. [*Beatrice salutes Juliet.*

BEAT. Alas, poor cousin ! Love has led thee a  
dance

Through a brake of thorns and briars.

JUL. Madam, take heed ! though he be blind  
He may find the way to lead you too.

VIOL. 'Warrant ye I'll run from that foolish boy,  
And then let him try to overtake me.

[*A shout within.*  
(*Within*). The Duke ! the Duke !

*Enter DUKE, ISABELLA, ESCHALUS, PROVOST,  
FRIAR THOMAS, GUARDS, ATTENDANTS, BAL-  
THAZAR, LUCIO, behind the rest.*

DUKE. The motive, which last caus'd my visits  
To this prison, was to give good counsel and to  
Reclaim the ill-advis'd. But now I come  
To count'nance the reclaim'd I can relate  
Your latter story, Angelo : and am  
Not ignorant, Benedick, of yours ; but in  
Remembrance of your former merits I  
Forget your late attempts.

ANG. Your Highness makes  
An hourly conquest of our hearts, and we  
Most humbly bow in thankfulness for your  
Continual clemency.

DUKE. The eye of pow'r does not alone observe  
The heights, but lower regions of the world.  
I have a convert here, whom I would see.

PROV. Call Bernardine !

BEN. Is he alive ?

DUKE. I am more willingly pleas'd, because  
The fury of the last encounter has

Not lost me any of my subjects' lives.  
 The marshal's free from danger of his wound ;  
 And as the military sword has not  
 Prevail'd so far as life, so Justice, with  
 Contrition satisfied, did sheathe up hers.

*Enter JAILOR, FOOL, BERNARDINE.*

BALT. There's no harm yet.

LUC. I hope we shall all 'scape !

DUKE. The Provost, whose fidelity I shall  
 Reward, did in the storm preserve from wrack  
 This penitent ; and from the battlements  
 Deceived you with the head of one, who of  
 A natural sickness died i' th' prison.

LUC. Under your Highness' favour, I suspected,  
 Afar off, that 'twas not Bernardine's, by  
 A small wart upon his left eye-lid.

DUKE. You were not bid to speak.

LUC. No, an't please your Highness,  
 Nor wisht to hold my peace.

BALT. Lucio, you will be talking.

DUKE. Remember, Bernardine, your vows to  
 Heaven ;  
 And so behave yourself in future life,  
 That I shall ne'er repent my mercy.

BERN. I am your Highness' debtor for this life,  
 And for th' occasion of that happiness  
 Which may succeed it after death.

DUKE. Is there not, father, in this company  
 One too much troubl'd with a lib'ral tongue,  
 Who hath traduc'd me to a brother of  
 Your cloister ?

FRI. THO. Yes, sir, and here behold the man !

LUC. Who, I, father ? I know you not.

FRI. THO. No, sir, but I know you.

LUC. I shall be glad, sir, of your acquaintance,  
 For my confessor is lately dead.

DUKE. But, Lucio, you perhaps would know me too,  
Should I again put on the habit which  
I wore, when boldly to my face you did  
Traduce me in this prison.

LUC. If your Highness, forgiving now so many,  
Will pardon me too, I'll hereafter hang  
A padlock at my lips, and this good father  
Shall keep the key of it.

DUKE. Your slanders, Lucio, cannot do me harm.  
Be sorrowful and be forgiven.

BALT. Thy mother hath bewitcht thee the right way,  
For no sword can pierce thee.

DUKE. Think me not singular, because  
I did myself a while depose ;  
For many monarchs have their thrones  
Forsaken for a cloistral life, and I,  
Perhaps, may really that habit take,  
Which I have worn but in disguise.

ANG. That were t' undo the world by leaving it.

BEN. Whilst so you seek imagin'd happiness,  
We all shall find essential misery.

DUKE. My resolutions are not soon remov'd ;  
I'm old and weary of authority.

But, ere I leave it quite, since I have no  
Successors of my own, let me dispose  
Of best advantages to those whom I  
Esteem, who may enjoy my pow'r. Lend me,  
Chaste Isabella, your fair hand ; which with  
Your heart I dedicate to Angelo ;  
He now sufficiently that virtue knows,

Which he too much, too curiously has tried

ISAB. I have so long your council follow'd with  
Success, as I am taught not to suspect  
Much happiness will still attend

Th' obedience which does yield  
To your command.

ANG. I fear my joys are grown too great to last.

DUKE. I have a good occasion, Benedick,  
To thank you now for your successful toils  
And victory in the Millain war ; for which,  
In ample recompense, I give you but  
The heart, which I perceive you had before.  
The witty war, which you so long have had  
With virtuous Beatrice, now must gently end,  
In joyful triumphs of a nuptial peace.

BEAT. Take heed ! our quarrel will begin again ;  
And th' end of this long treaty will but bring  
The war home to your own doors.

BEN. I'll venture. 'Tis but providing good  
store of  
Cradles for barracadoes to line my chamber.

DUKE. Be happy, Claudio, in your faithful Juliet,  
The persecutions of your loves are past.

CLAUD. They feel not joy who have not sorrow  
felt.

We through afflictions make our way to Heaven.

LUC. Fool, I've a mind to marry your grand-  
mother.

FOOL. She stays for you in the church, and will  
prove

A sweet bed-fellow, for she has not been  
Buried above a month.

DUKE. Provost ! open your prison gates, and  
make

Your pris'ners free. The story of this day,  
When 'tis to future ages told, will seem  
A moral drawn from a poetic dream.

---



THE RIVALS.



*The Rivals. A Comedy. Acted by His Highness' the Duke of Yorke's Servants. Licensed September 19, 1668 (Roger L'Estrange). London, Printed for William Cade-man, at the Pope's Head, in the Lower Walk of the New Exchange 1668. 4to.*

The comedy of the Rivals is an alteration of the "Two Noble Kinsmen" which was first printed in 1634, with the following title:—"The Two Noble Kinsmen, presented at the Blackfriars by the King's Majesties Servants, with great applause: written by the memorable worthies of their time, Mr John Fletcher, and Mr William Shakespeare, Gent. Printed at London, by Thomas Cotes, for John Watersone, and are to be sold at the signe of the Crowne in Paul's Church-yard, 1634."

The question of the real authorship of the "Two Noble Kinsmen," more particularly in so far as relates to Shakespeare, has frequently been discussed, but without any very satisfactory result. Professor Spalding in 1832 published "a letter on Shakespeare's authorship of the 'Two Noble Kinsmen': a drama commonly ascribed to John Fletcher" *Edin.* 8vo, in which the argument is in favour of Shakespeare, while Mr Charles Knight, who ingeniously suggests that Chapman rather might have been the coadjutor of Fletcher, includes this play among the doubtful plays of Shakespeare in his pictorial edition of the Poet's dramatic works. In concluding his notice he says: "We have only one word to add. Chapman died in the very year that the first edition of the 'Two Noble Kinsmen' was published, with the name of Shakespeare in the title-page. If the title-page were a book-seller's invention, the name of Shakespeare would be of higher price than that of Chapman." A fair conclusion, and warranted by the fact that the play was not printed until eighteen years after the death of Shakespeare, while the date of its first performance is unknown, but if Fletcher was concerned in it, Mr Knight says: "the inferences to be deduced from the prologue—that it was acted during his lifetime, and that he either claimed the sole authorship, or suppressed all mention of the joint authorship—are to be weighed against the assertion of the title-page, that it was

'written by the two memorable worthies of their time.' "

The plot of the "Two Noble Kinsmen" is derived from Chaucer's "Knight's Tale," which is best known at the present time through the medium of Dryden's "Palamon and Arcyte."

When Queen Elizabeth visited Oxford, 1566. Wood informs us, "at night the Queen heard the first part of an English play named, Palæmon, or 'Palamon Arcyte,' made by Mr Richard Edwards, a gentleman of her chapel, acted with very great applause in Christ Church Hall." Another play is mentioned in Henslow's "Diary" under the date of September 1594, of "Palamon and Arsett," which was acted four times; and in the collection of MSS. presented to the British Museum by Patmore occurs: "Palamon and Arcite; or, the Noble Kinsmen, altered from Beaumont and Fletcher. A tragedy in five acts."

Kippis says: "In the supplement to the edition of 'Shakespeare's Plays' published in 1778, it is ingeniously and decisively shewn by Mr Stevens, that Shakespeare had no hand in writing the play of the 'Two Noble Kinsmen.' It has not been proved, by evidence of any kind, that he had the slightest connection with Beaumont and Fletcher."

While the authorship of the "Two Noble Kinsmen" is a matter of doubt, that of the alteration which we now print under the title of "The Rivals" has also been questioned, but the name of no one else than Sir William Davenant has ever been associated with it.

"The Rivals" is one of the principal or stock-plays given in Downes' list as performed during 1662 and 1665. He thus introduces it: "'The Rivals,' a play wrote by Sir William Davenant; having a very fine interlude in it, of vocal and instrumental music, mixt with very diverting dances; Mr Price introduced the dancing by a short comical prologue which gain'd him an universal applause of the town. The part of Theocles was done by Mr Harris; Philander, by Mr Betterton; Cunopos, the jailer, by Mr Underhill; all the women's parts admirably acted, chiefly Celia, a shepherdess, being mad for love; especially in singing several wild

and mad songs—"My lodging is on the cold ground, &c." She performed that so charmingly, that not long after it raised her from her bed on the cold ground, to a bed royal. The play, by the excellent performance lasted uninterruptedly nine days, with a full audience." Davies in his notes on Downes' "*Roscius Anglicanus*," Waldron's edition, 1789, 8vo, says: "I know not on what authority this play of '*The Rivals*' is ascribed to Davenant; it is not in the folio collection of his works, nor does the 4to edition of it bear his name. It is a very indifferent alteration of Shakespeare and Fletcher's '*Two Noble Kinsmen*,' and contains several songs, &c., not in the original; particularly a hunting dialogue sung by foresters, hunters, and huntresses; the ideas and hunting terms in which are entirely borrowed from Ben Jonson's '*Pastoral of the sad Shepherd*.'" In a subsequent note, he, in quoting the colophon of the title of the edition of 1668, observes of the publisher: "If this was Cademan, the actor, Downes might in addition to his own official knowledge as prompter, have been certified by him that Davenant was the author or alterer of it; which supposition clears up the doubt expressed in former note."

But our chief authority for classing "*The Rivals*" among the works of Sir William Davenant is Langbaine, who, in his account of the English dramatic poets, 1691, says: "*Rivals*, a tragi-comedy in quarto, which at present I have not; but have heard Mr Cademan, for whom, as I think, it was printed, say it was writ by Sir William Davenant."

Waldron remarks: "I think, from what we may gather from Downes and Langbaine, there can be no doubt of Davenant being the alterer of the '*Rivals*' from the '*Two Noble Kinsmen*'; though he did not think the alteration worth owning."

"Downes" Davies goes on to observe, "has forgot to tell us the name of the actress who performed Celia, which name likewise he has mis-written for Celania; the character was represented, according to the 4to, 1668, by Mrs Davis."

Mary Davis, certainly was "raised to the bed-royal" of Charles II., and had, by him, a daughter, Mary, who took

the surname of Tudor, and who, in 1687, was married to the son of Sir Francis Ratcliffe, who became Earl of Derwentwater.

Granger's "Biographical History of England" vol. 5, page 392, notes her portraits, thus:—

"Madame Davis; *Lely p. Valk f. 1678, 4to, mezz.*

"Madam Davis; *Lely p. Thompson exc. b. sh. mezz.*"

"She is represented playing on a guitar, which was fashionable at court, and especially among the King's mistresses, who were greater leaders in fashions of all kinds than the queen herself.

"No wonder then, when all was love and sport,  
The willing muscs were debauch'd at court;  
On each enervate string they taught the note  
To pant, or tremble through an eunuch's throat."  
POPE.

At Billingbere in Berkshire, the seat of Richard Neville Neville, Esq., is a fine portrait of her by Kneller, with a Black. This picture, which is in the painter's best manner, was the property of Baptist May, who was privy purse to Charles, and of singular service to him in his private pleasures."

"It would be too indelicate to mention the particular consequences of the jalup which was given to Moll Davis at supper by Nell Gwynn, who knew that she was to lie the same night with the king. It is sufficient to hint at the violence of its operations and the disastrous effects, such effects as the ancients would have attributed to Anteros, a malignant deity, and the avowed enemy of Cupid."

F. G. Waldron, in his appendix to Downes' *Roscins Anglicanus*, notes: "The earliest instance I recollect of the title of *Miss* or *Mis* is in the following lines, the subject of which, I have no doubt, was *Miss* or *Madam Davis*, the celebrated performer of *Celania*, in the 'Rivals.'

" ' *To Mis Davies on her excellent dancing.*

" ' Dear Mis, delight of all the nobler sort,  
Pride of the stage, and darling of the Court,  
Who would not think, to see thee dance so light,  
Thou wer't all air? or else all soul and sp'rite !

Or who'd not say, to see thee only tread,  
 Thy feet were feathers / others' feet but lead !  
 Athlanta well could run, and Hermes flee,  
 But none e'er mov'd more gracefully than thee ;  
 And Circe charm'd with wand and magick lore,  
 But none, like thee e'er charmed with feet before.  
 Thou miracle ! whom all men must admire,  
 To see thee move like air, and mount like fire,  
 Whoe'er would follow thee, or come but nigh  
 To thy perfection, must not dance, but fly."

*Flecknoe's Epigrams. Lond., 1669.*

Downes is of opinion that elevation to the "bed royal" conferred the title of "Madam" on Mrs Davis, as it had previously done on her rival, Nell Gwyn.

Pepys mentions having seen "The Rivals" acted, but as on that occasion Mrs Davis did not perform the part of Celania, it is probable that it had been revived after she had procured admittance to the royal household, she having then left the stage.

"10th Sep., 1664.—All the morning much troubled to think what the end of our great sluggishness will be; for we do nothing in this office like people able to carry on a war. We must be put out, or other people put in. My wife and I, and Mercer, to the Duke's house, and there saw 'The Rivalls,' which is no excellent play, but good acting in it; especially Gosnell comes and sings and dances finely; but, for all that, fell out of the key, so that the musique could not play to her afterwards; and so did Harris also go out of the tune to agree with her."

Mrs Gosnell is noticed in vol. iv., p. 6, and Mr Harris in Crowne's Works, vol. i. p. 6, in this series.

The following notice of the death of Mrs Davis's daughter occurs in the Historical Register for the year 1726, vol. 11, a periodical which was printed at the charge of the Sun Fire Office, behind the Royal Exchange:—

"1726, Nov. 5.—Dy'd at Paris, aged 53 years or thereabouts, the Lady Mary Tudor, Countess of Derwentwater, relict of Francis Ratcliffe, second Earl of Derwentwater, who had issue by her, three sons and one daughter, viz., James, who succeeded his father in the Earldom, and was beheaded for high treason on Tower-Hill in 1716, Francis, and Charles, and the Lady Mary

Tudor. She was twice marry'd after the death of the Earl her first husband, viz., first to Henry Grahme, Esq.; and, after his decease, to ——— Rooke, Esq., son of Brigadier-General Rooke."

Although the play of "The Rivals" is characterised as "an alteration" of the "Two Noble Kinsmen," they bear little resemblance to each other either in the scenes or dialogue, very few lines of the original having been retained in the "alteration."

# THE ACTORS' NAMES.

ARCON,	<i>The Prince of Arcadia.</i>	MR YOUNG.
POLYNICES,	<i>His General.</i>	MR SMITH.
PROVOST,	{ <i>Mr. and keeper of the Citadel.</i>	{ MR SANDFORD.
THEOCLES,		
PHILANDER,	{ <i>Rivals to the Prin- cess Heraclia.</i>	{ MR HARRIS. MR BETTERTON.
CUNOPES,		
	<i>The Provost's Man.</i>	MR UNDERHILL.
HERACLIA,	<i>Niece to the Prince.</i>	MRS SHADWEL.
CELANIA,	<i>Daughter to the Provost.</i>	MRS DAVIS.
LEUCIPPE,	<i>Celania's Maid.</i>	MRS LONG.

*Attendants and Guards.*





## THE RIVALS.

---

### ACT FIRST.

*Enter ARCON, POLYNICES, and SOLDIERS as from victory.*

ARCON. The tyrant's high designs found ill success ;

'Twas not so easy as he fondly hop'd,  
To make this country subject to his pow'r  
By violence.

POLYN. Sir, he presum'd,  
That your Arcadians were grown weak with ease ;  
And love had soften'd us to cowardice.

ARCON. But he has found the heat of love in them,

Had not so stiff'd all their sparks of valour,  
But that they still retain'd enough to make  
A lightning which did blast his spreading pow'r.

POLYN. And that they had not so much courage  
lost,

Amongst the myrtles, as not to deserve  
A victor's laurel, though they seem inclin'd  
Only to pastoral delights ; yet when  
They quit the sheep-hook to assume the sword,  
They can write tragedies on those who shall  
Intrench upon their liberty, in wounds,  
And characters made legible by blood.  
Our soft Arcadians conquer'd these who were  
By tyranny and war to hardship bred.

ARCON. But yet, Polynices, the day was bloody.  
The tyrant fought with so much resolution,

And made such massacre amongst our troops,  
 As if he had been arm'd with innocence,  
 Or, at the least, intended to atone  
 The butcheries his spleen had caus'd in peace ;  
 By slaughters which his valour made in war.

POLYN. Your justice lyes in Harpacus, his death,  
 Rising more splendid in his being set.  
 He was a most unbounded tyrant, sir ;  
 And though his actions in this bloody war  
 Merited life, yet his precedent deeds  
 Deserv'd a death more infamous than that,  
 Your sword vouchsaf'd him. Yet 'twas justice in  
 you

And you derive a lustre from his crimes.  
 His blackness makes your glory shew more bright :  
 Thus darkness always ushers in the light.

ARCON. Ascribe it to a justice more supreme,  
 From whose disposure we must own success.  
 A grave contains him, that usurp'd a throne,  
 Grasping at other's crowns he lost his own.  
 But, where's the Provost of our citadel ?

POLYN. He guards the pris'ners hither. The  
 old man

Is valiant to a miracle : he fought as if he  
 Reinforc'd his aged blood,  
 And gather'd life by taking it from enemies.

*Enter PROVOST, with THEOCLES and PHILANDER,  
 as prisoners and guards.*

ARCON. Welcome, brave man ! What chronicle's  
 enough

For thy deserts ? The actions of thy age  
 Shall keep thy memory from growing old.  
 Thy worth which seem'd declining has broke out  
 With such surprizing splendour in the fight  
 As dazzl'd all our eyes who did behold it.  
 We now have nothing else left but wonder

To entertain thy merits.

PROV. Royal sir !

Supported by the justice of your cause,  
I might do things perhaps beyond my age,  
But ne'er out-do my duty. I owe more  
To this my country and your sacred person ;  
Than my exhausted blood or life can pay.

ARCON. The tempest is dispell'd, now thou  
shalt set

In a full glory which no future cloud,  
Or storm of war, shall ever overcast ;  
Thou shalt wear out the remnant of thy days  
In peace. Th' invader of our country's dead.

PROV. But how shall these his kinsmen be dis-  
pos'd,

Who did so long support his reeling cause ?  
Whose valour oft restor'd their army's health,  
By letting ours blood.

ARCON. They are gallant spirits !  
Treat 'em as pris'ners, but as noble ones.  
I pity their engagements in this war,  
Who never own'd the tyranny that caus'd it.  
Their valour seem'd distracted in the fight,  
As if they did desire to save the person  
Of Harpacus, and yet disgust his cause.  
Their courage was inflam'd with loyalty  
To him, but quench'd with pity towards us.

PROV. They kill'd  
With such regret, as if they did embrue  
Their swords in blood to blush for those they slew

ARCON. How are they call'd ?

PROV. One is call'd Theocles,  
Th' other Philander.

POLYN. This is that Theocles, who, in reward  
Of what he pleas'd to praise in me as valour  
Rescu'd my life when I was pris'ner tane  
By his own troop, and gave me liberty.

V.

P

A debt which I will strive to pay.

ARCON. They are not wounded much ?

PROV. Not mortally ;

But yet their wounds are not contemptible.

ARCON. Let 'em have noble usage : Summon all  
Our surgeons to their cure ; their lives concern us  
Much more than millions do of common rank.

I value pris'ners of their quality

Too much to let 'em captives be to death.

Yet, Provost, let their persons be secur'd  
I'th' citadel, till we give further order.

PROV. Sir, I shall obey !

My lords, I am sorry I must guard you both  
Into restraint : But 'tis my Prince commands  
I shou'd convey you to the citadel.

THEO. Lead on, sir ! we have seen the cruelty  
Of Harpacus to others, and have learnt  
By eyesight how to undergo misfortunes.  
The tide of blood shed by our cruel uncle  
Has our compassion so much wasted, even  
For strangers, that we scarce have any left  
Now for ourselves ; we can with patience bear  
Imprisonment or death.

PHILA. We have so often mourn'd when we  
were free,  
That we can smile at our captivity.

*[Exeunt Provost, Theocles, Philander, and Guard.]*

ARCON. They have almost melted my severity  
Into compassion.

POLYN. I'm full of pity, sir, for Theocles.

ARCON. But why not for Philander too ?  
He seems as full of merit.

POLYN. Theocles is he,  
Who from the oppression of a multitude  
In the late battle rescu'd me from death,  
And checking the oppressor's violence,  
In such a cowardly and base assault

Dismiss'd me, not discovering his name,  
 Making his courtesy the more obliging  
 By his not owning it.

ARCON. I have heard you speak of it. 'Twas  
 bravely done !

*Enter HERACLIA, and her woman.*

POLYN. The Princess, sir.

ARCON. Where is she ? My return is yet so  
 new

I have not seen her.

POLYN. She's ent'ring, sir.

HERA. What welcome shall give vent [*She kneels.*  
 To my excess of joy for your return ?

ARCON. Rise, dearest niece, we have fought  
 hitherto

For liberty, and to preserve your knees  
 From such a disobliging posture ; as  
 Too much resembles bondage. You must rise !

[*Lifts her up.*

HERA. Your presence brings me a transport of  
 bliss

Proportion'd to the fears your absence caus'd,  
 As if that passion had instructed this.

ARCON. Cou'd you then fear ?  
 How cou'd your innocence so much distrust  
 The justice of our cause, as to admit  
 A jealousy or doubt of the success ?

HERA. Fear's ever credulous. I know not but  
 Some sword, ambitious of the blood of Princes,  
 Might drink too deep of yours, although at ebb  
 Leaving your orphan-subjects to be drown'd  
 In floods of tears occasion'd by your fall,  
 Weeping their own i'th' Prince's funeral. [*Weeps.*

POLYN. How seriously she recollects a storm  
 [*Aside.*

Rais'd by her fancy, or at most but threat'n'd,

And talks her eyes into a real shower.

ARCON. How strangely does her love reveal  
itself! *[Aside.*

She, since her joys with violent supplies  
Silence her tongue, wou'd speak 'em with her eyes.

HERA. But since y'are safe return'd, why should  
I weep

Strange joys, which do in tears their revels keep.

Since all your country now enjoys it's peace,

The conflict of my passions here shall cease.

Noble Polynices, I justly am transported

But shall soon return to you with praise.

When in Fame's-Temple I've enthron'd

The Prince, then give you those respects

Which you for loyalty and valour have deserv'd.

POLYN. Though my merits were

As great as may deserve your notice, ma'am,

Yet they are no more than what may still be  
nam'd

My duty.

HERA. But, Royal sir, your own joys seem  
Clouded with something that resembles grief.

ARCON. I much rejoice in that felicity

Our subjects from the victory derive ;

But that exempts me not from discontent

Whilst I foresee the posture of my throne,

When I expire. No remnant of my blood

Shall ere survive th' interment of my bones,

Or solemnize my burial with a tear

Of kin to those my aged eyes let fall.

Had I a child, my joys would then be full,

Which now prove empty and not worth a smile.

HERA. Wave, sir, such melancholy thoughts ;  
they prove

But wings to death : Those who so oft reflect

Upon their end come soonest thither. First

They thereby grow disconsolate, and then

Live out their days faster than other men.

ARCON. What other object may deserve my thoughts?

POLYN. Think, rather sir, on that solemnity  
Which by th' Arcadian customs is allow'd  
In honour of your birthday, and is still  
With so much lustre celebrated here  
'Tis as 'twere day-break to all the year.

HERA. That day shall still retrieve you from the  
grave,

And, when one day i'th' year shall put on black  
To mourn your loss, the sight and solemn shows,  
Which intimate your death, shall so be drown'd  
I'th' annual joys, wherein we still express  
Your happy birth, that it shall still be said  
You are new born and not that you are dead.

ARCON. You have almost persuaded me to lay  
These serious thoughts asleep.

HERA. Your birthday, sir,  
Comes as a triumph to your victory.  
Your happy birth you shall see solemniz'd  
With greater splendour by the tyrant's death.  
They are preparing for the celebration.

ARCON. You have prevail'd: I am resolved to  
soften

My thoughts of war by this solemnity.  
Thus fields of blood may us to gardens bring,  
As furious winter ushers in the spring. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter PHILANDER, and THEOCLES, walking on the  
tarras in the citadel.*

PHIL. The Provost does oblige us by permitting  
The freedom of this walk upon the tarras.

THEO. Cousin, how d'you? I am concern'd  
So much in your wisht health that I enquire  
After my own exactly from your pulse.

PHIL. I'm strong enough, I hope, for misery,



Although I fear we are for ever pris'ners.

THEO. My thoughts are of the same complexion too ;

Our fears do sympathize, just like our loves.

PHIL. O, cousin Theocles, how are we lost ?  
Where are our kindred, friends, and country now ?  
Those comforts we shall never meet agen.  
No more shall we behold the games of honour  
Where youths, with painted favours hung  
Like tall ships under sail, striving for fame,  
Rival each other's glory. We no more  
Like twins of honour e'er shall exercise  
Our arms again. Our swords which lightn'd in  
The people's eyes, must now like trophies hang  
To deck the temples of the gods that hate us,  
And signify our ruin and defeat.

THEO. Our hopes are pris'ners with us, we review  
Our former happiness in vain. Our youth  
Too soon will wither into age, and prove  
Like a too timely spring, abortive. Here,  
Which more afflict us, we shall both expire  
Unmarried ; no embraces of a wife,  
Loaden with kisses and a thousand cupids,  
Shall ever clasp our necks, no issue know us,  
No figures of our selves shall we e'er see  
To glad our age, and, like young eagles, teach 'em  
To look against bright arms.

PHILA. No more shall we e'er hollow to our  
hounds  
Which shook the aged forest with their echo :  
All pleasures here shall perish, and, at last,  
Which is the curse of honour, we shall die  
Children of grief and ignorance.

*Enter CELANIA and LEUCIPPE as at a window.*

LEUC. This window, madam, looks into the  
tarras

Where they are walking, you may over-hear  
All their discourse, the curtain being clos'd,  
Without discovery.

CELA. Their looks betray  
No great dejection at their misery.

THEO. Though our misfortunes are as black as  
midnight,

I see two comforts rising. We may here  
Exercise patience, and enjoy each other,  
Philander being with me I can ne'er  
Think this a prison.

PHILA. Cousin, 'tis most true  
That our misfortunes are together twisted  
Which to our misery brings some redress :  
Affliction thus by spreading becomes less.  
Our mutual society will teach us  
To under-go what Heav'n in wrath design'd,  
And never weep for necessary fate.  
That man is free, who bondage bravely bears ;  
But he does sink himself, who swims in tears.

CELA. How sweetly they express themselves,  
Leucippe.  
Trust me, methinks their words might melt the  
stones

And make their passage through the prison walls,

LEUC. Let's listen, madam !

THEO. Shall we make worthy uses of this place  
Which all men hate so much ?

PHIL. How, cousin Theocles ?

THEO. What can we want ?  
Wealth we need none, we are each other's mine ;  
Each other's wife, begetting every hour  
New births of love ; we're father, friends, acquaint-  
ance,

We are, in one another, families.

I am your heir and you are mine, this place  
Is our inheritance ; and no oppressor

Dare take this from us. Here, with patience  
We may live long. No surfeits seek us here.

PHIL. Here no man falls by the rude hand of war,  
And by his groans half kills the next with fear.  
Nor shall these as here swallow up our youth.

CELA. How they forget their miseries: they  
brook

Affliction with so smooth a brow, they seem  
Pictures of patience, and drawn in oil.

THEO. Were we at liberty and unconfin'd,  
A wife might disunite us lawfully,  
Bus'ness divide us.

PHIL. Or I might sicken, cousin,  
Where you should never know it, and so perish  
Without your noble hand to close my eyes.

CELA. What charming language his affection  
speaks!

What kindness wou'd he to a woman show  
That is enamour'd on his kinsman so?  
How happy were a maid which shou'd receive  
So sweet assurances of love!

PHIL. I'm almost wanton with captivity.  
What misery it is to live abroad,  
And everywhere! methinks 'tis like a beast:  
I here enjoy a court: I'm sure I find  
A greater satisfaction.

THEO. What had we been,  
Had we grown aged in our uncle's court?  
Where sin was justice, lust and ignorance  
The commendable virtues of great men.  
Had not the loving gods found this place for us  
We shou'd ha' died as they did, ill old men,  
Without the charity of one man's tear,  
But with their epitaphs, the people's curses.

*Enter CUNOPES.*

CUNO. Gentlemen, the clock has struck!

PHIL. Cousin, our time of walking is expir'd,  
We must submit to this man's insolence.

CUNO. What haste you make!

THEO. Well, cousin, let's retire,  
We'll sing our cares asleep, and then to bed.

CUNO. You will a time for catches in your  
chamber. *[Exeunt.]*

CELA. Hard-hearted Cunopes; how could'st thou  
have

So little mercy?

LEUC. Madam, I have power  
To make him much more civil.

CELA. What's your meaning?

LEUC. He is in love with me.

CELA. In love with thee?

LEUC. Yes, madam, have you not observ'd his  
looks

And carriage towards me of late?

CELA. Now I remember I have seen him smile,  
And shew you more respect than he was wont;  
But I am indispos'd to entertain  
The cause of mirth or scorn. I weep to think  
The gentlemen are so ill treated.

LEUC. So much concern'd? I guess what wind  
blows up  
This show'r, they both deserve to be belov'd.

Madam, may I know which you've pitched upon?

CELA. What is thy meaning, wench?

LEUC. Nay, ne'er conceal it!

I know by the distilling of your eyes,  
There's fire underneath. Madam, confess!

CELA. Confess? what, prithee?

LEUC. Which of the gentlemen  
May boast the conquest? which do you affect

CELA. I affect both of 'em, they are a pair  
In whom the world is rich.

LEUC. Love both of them?

I have so much experience in love  
To know then, that it must be neither.

CEL. Well !

Suppose I'm inclin'd to one of them,  
Am I oblig'd to tell you which it is ?  
Love is a grief of which few e'er had cause  
To boast, and love is boasted when reveal'd.

LEUC. Is love a crime, that it must be conceal'd ?

CELA. Love may grow cold when public it be-  
comes.

Flames best preserve their heat in lesser rooms.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

### THE SECOND ACT.

*Enter ARCON, POLYNICES, and PROVOST.*

ARCON. To what does all this mediation tend ?  
Why shou'd you intercede for Theocles ?

POLY. Sir, since I owe my liberty and life  
To his unequall'd generosity,  
Enable me to pay him with his own.

ARCON. That were to give him a capacity  
Of making new attempts upon our peace.  
The tyrant's subjects, animated by  
The presence of a person so renown'd,  
Will undertake revenge.

POLY. You may secure yourself by articles.

PROV. Or set him free,  
Upon condition that he shall with speed  
Arcadia leave, and never more return.

POLY. His noble nature will so well resent  
Your clemency, he'll easily obey,  
And stifle all desires to be reveng'd  
In grateful recollections of your love.

ARCON. But whilst for Theocles you freedom ask,

You seem forgetful of that solitude,  
By which Philander's strict confinement will  
Become to him more insupportable.

POLY. You may give him some hopes of liberty.

PROV. Upon a ransom that may correspond  
To so much worth as he is owner of.

ARCON. Polynices, your suit is granted! Set  
Theocles

Free from prison: But forbid him  
E'er to return to Arcadia,  
So he his liberty enjoys, and we  
From jealousies of new attempts are free.  
Provost, take order for his liberty.

POLY. But let him still remain in ignorance  
Who 'twas procur'd it, as he rescu'd me,  
Yet kept his name and quality conceal'd  
Leaving me to admire, not thank my friend.

ARCON. But let Philander not so soon receive  
The news of my resolves. I first will see  
With what reluctancy he shall resent  
The other's loss and his imprisonment.

PROV. I shall obey, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter HERACLIA, and CELANIA, severally.*

HERA. Welcome, Celania! I must give you  
thanks

For your kind visit.

CEL. Madam, I am happy  
To have the privilege of waiting on you.  
Your thanks will make me proud.

HERA. Your company  
Does merit more. How oft have I receiv'd  
A respite from the pressure of those fears  
Which did present me with the chance of war,  
And my dear uncle's hazard, by your talk,

Your sweet converse, I have forgot the thoughts  
Of trumpets, and the music of your voice  
Has charmed me to forget all threatening sounds.

CEL. My duty did instruct me to divert  
Your troubles, madam, by concealing mine.  
I often have spoke fearless of the war,  
When my own thoughts have been in mutiny,  
And my heart bandy'd between hope and dread  
For my dear father.

HERA. But, Celania !  
I hear there are two pris'ners, whose repute  
Fame speaks with great advantage, very lately  
Committed to your father's custody.

CELA. There are such, madam,

HERA. How do they support  
Their strict confinement ?

CELA. With such constancy  
As if they had forgot they e'er were free ;  
Tis pity that they are in prison, and pity  
They should be out. I overheard their  
Mutual discourse, which does discover  
A patience, that wou'd make adversity  
Asham'd. The prison's proud of 'em. They turn  
Their misery to mirth. They have all the world  
Within their chamber. Though the prison seems  
To mourn for their restraint, 'tis holiday to look  
on 'em.

HERA. Are they both alike  
So unconcern'd in their unhappiness,  
That neither of 'em e'er does yield a sigh  
To hint out some reflections upon what they have  
been ?

CELA. Sometimes one of 'em perhaps  
Will unawares vent a divided sigh,  
Martyr'd as 'twere in the delivery,  
Which strait the other does so calmly chide  
And then so sweetly comforts him who sigh'd it,

That I cou'd almost wish myself a sigh,  
To be so chid ; or at the least a sigher,  
To be so comforted.

HERA. But what can he  
Reply in vindication of himself ?

CELA. He strait redeems the error of that sigh  
By singing, which he does to that degree  
Of ravishing that even the prison walls,  
Which only echo others' misery,  
Bear a part in's music ; and, as if  
They were in love with whatsoe'er he sings,  
Repeat his notes again.

HERA. But does he not  
Sometimes let fall a tear as well as sigh ?

CELA. Though tears, when wept by you in time  
of war

For your dear uncle's peril, seem'd to be  
Refreshing showers let fall upon your cheeks  
To make the roses look more fair ; yet they  
Wou'd seem too much effeminate in him,  
They wou'd like mildew, taint his blooming youth  
And stain his courage : therefore still his eyes,  
Like suns dry up that dew before it falls.

HERA. She loves him, sure ?——I'll try her.  
You cannot tell, how long the citadel  
Shall be their prison ?

CELA. Madam, are they like to be remov'd ?

HERA. I left my uncle  
Together with the general and Provost  
In consultation, how they shou'd dispose  
O'th pris'ners : and amongst the rest of these,  
Polynices employs his interest  
For the release of one, that he may make  
Retaliation for the liberty  
He gave him, when oppress by multitudes  
In some encounter.

CELA. Shall one be released ?



HERA. 'Tis very probable.

CELA. Good madam, which ?

HERA. I suppose Theocles.

CELA. That pleases me. And yet I know not why

I wish the other better, yet methinks

I'm glad he shall a pris'ner still remain :

I willingly cou'd wish his happy state

Yet seem to hope he'll rest unfortunate.

HERA. She likes the news, yet seems not fully pleas'd ;

I'll try her further ! Theocles shall be

Acquitted, but it is presum'd the other

Being too considerable to be freed,

Will——

CELA. Do what, madam ?

HERA. Die.

CELA. Die ?

HERA. Have I found you ?

Die ? Yes, Celania. You are naught concern'd

Whether he die or live.

CELA. Madam, 'tis true ;

And yet, alas, I know not what I am.

I find a lively advocate within

That wou'd not have him die : I must withdraw,

Or else I shall betray my passion.

HERA. Celania ! You are grown thoughtful.

CELA. Madam, I'm scarce recover'd from the fears

Begot by the late war. My company

Will be but troublesome. Your goodness will

Pardon my too abrupt departure. *[Exit.]*

HERA. She is too visibly in love : Alas !

I have deceiv'd her into too much fear :

I willingly cou'd undeceive her now.

But she'll soon find the fallacy. I'll take

A turn i'th' garden whose kind walks and air,

Make the evenings oft to me delightful prove,  
She's scorch'd i'th' fiery element of love. [*Exit.*]

*Enter PHILANDER, and THEOCLES, as in the balcony,  
walking in the palace-garden.*

PHIL. Is there record of any two that lov'd  
Better than we do, cousin?

THEO. There cannot be.

PHIL. Our friendship is by long continuance  
Become so ardent and invincible,  
And by our resolution so confirm'd,  
I think it is beyond the power of time  
Or any accident e'er to infringe it.

THEO. Our love's bright fire has been preserv'd  
so long,  
The flame is, like the vestals', sacred grown,  
Which nothing e'er can violate or quench.

PHILA. Nothing but death: and, cousin, after  
death

Our spirits shall be led to those that love  
Eternally. Free from allay of flesh  
Our love shall be refin'd to that degree  
Of purity, that it shall kindle us  
Into one constellation, by whose rays  
Surviving friendships shall be so inflam'd,  
They shall not languish, or know how to die.

*Enter HERACLIA, and CLEONE, in the garden.*

THEO. Cousin, why proceed you not?

HERA. What flower is this?

CLEO. 'Tis call'd Narcissus, madam.

HERA. That was a pretty, but a foolish boy,  
To lose himself. Were there not maids enow?

THEO. Pray, forward.

HERA. Or were they all hard-hearted?

CLEO. They cou'd not be to one so fair.

HERA. Thou wou'dst not?

CLEO. I think I shou'd not, madam,

THEO. Will you proceed, cousin ?

HERA. Canst thou not work such flowers in silk,  
wench ?

CLEO. Yes !

HERA. They will shew rarely on a valence.

THEO. Cousin ! cousin ! how d'ye ?

PHIL. Never till now was I a pris'ner.

THEO. Why, what's the matter ?

PHIL. Behold and wonder ! She is not mortal,  
sure !

THEO. Ha !

PHIL. She is divine, and now the sun draws  
low,

Comes to revive the drooping flowers, and make  
Them, like herself, immortal, by the beams  
Proceeding from her eyes.

HERA. Of all the flowers methinks a rose is  
best.

CLEO. Why, gentle madam ?

HERA. Because it is the emblem of a maid,  
For when she's gently by the west wind woo'd,  
How modestly she blows, with a complexion  
Made up of smiles and blushes ; when the north  
Comes near, impatient then, like chastity  
She locks her beauties in her bud again,  
And leaves him then to blow on nought but briars.

CLEO. Yet, good madam,  
Sometimes her modesty will bloom so far  
She falls for't : which a maid of any honour  
Will hardly imitate.

HERA. Thou art grown wanton !

THEO. She's very fair.

PHIL. She's all the beauty extant.

HERA. The sun is set. Let's walk in ! keep the  
flowers

To see how near art can resemble them. [Exit.

PHIL. Might not a man well lose himself and love her ?

THEO. I cannot tell what you have done, I have ;  
Beshrew my eyes for't : now I feel my bondage.

PHIL. You love her then ?

THEO. Who would not ?

PHIL. I saw her first.

THEO. What if you did ? that poor pretence  
will prove

Too weak. There's no priority in love :  
I saw her too.

PHIL. Yes, but you must not love her.

THEO. I will not, as you do, to worship her  
As she's divine ; I love her, to enjoy her  
As she's a woman : and thus both may love.

PHIL. You shall not love at all.

THEO. Who shall deny me ?

PHIL. I that first took possession with my eyes  
Of all those beauties, which in her reveal  
Themselves to mortals : If thou entertain'st  
A hope to blast my wishes, Theocles,  
Thou art as false as is thy title to her.  
If thou dar'st love her, I disclaim all bonds  
Of love and friendship.

THEO. Sir, I must love her,  
If that can shake Philander off, adieu !  
I say, again, I love ; and will maintain,  
I have as just a title to her beauty,  
As any man who dares pretend a claim.  
Let me deal coldly with you. Are not we  
Of the same blood ? Have not our souls combin'd,  
As 'twere in correspondence with our blood,  
To twist us into one by friendship ?

PHIL. Yes !

THEO. Am I not liable to those affections  
And passions, unto which my friend's expos'd ?

PHIL. You may be.

THEO. Why would you so unkindly deal ;  
To love alone ? Speak truly, do you think me  
Unworthy of her sight ?

PHIL. No, but unjust, if thou pursue that sight.

THEO. Because another first sees the enemy,  
shall I

Stand still, and never charge ?

PHIL. Yes, if he be but one.

THEO. What if that one had rather combat me ?

PHIL. Let that one tell me so, and use thy freedom ;

But otherwise thou art a monster, black  
As guilt can make thee.

THEO. You are mad, Philander.

PHIL. I must be so, till thou art worthy, Theocles.

THEO. Fy, sir, you play the child extremely. I must

Dare and ought to love her.

PHIL. O that now indulgent fortune  
Wou'd vouchsafe us swords,  
And one hour's freedom, to dispute thy claim,  
I'll make thee soon recant it. Put thy head  
Once more without this window, and I'll nail thy  
life

To't.

THEO. Alas ! your fury threatens what  
You are too impotent to act, Philander.  
But put my head out ! To advance your rage  
I'll cast my body down into her arms,  
When next I see her.

*Enter CUNOPES.*

CUNO. My errand is to you, sir.

THEO. To me ?

CUNO. The Provost sent me for you.

THEO. I am ready !

PHIL. But one word, Theocles.

CUNO. Sir, take another hour : I have other business,

Than to waste time, in minding your discourse.

[*Exeunt Cunopes, and Theocles.*]

PHIL. Why, was the message sent to him alone ?

Am I so undeserving to be thought

Less worthy of the Provost's conference ?

This is the palace-garden, and I've heard

The Princess us'd to bless it with her presence.

This sure was she. O blessed garden, and more  
blessed flowers,

That blossom at the sun-shine of her eyes !

I wish I were that blooming apricock

I would expatiate my wanton arms,

And be a bold intruder at her window,

And bring her fruit which should endear me to  
her ;

*Enter CUNOPES.*

[*Above.*]

Fruit that might tempt the palates of the gods.

Now, keeper, where's Theocles ?

CUNO. Set free,

The general has begg'd his liberty

Upon condition never to set foot

Within Arcadia : But, as for you,

We shall be troubl'd somewhat longer with you ;

I am afraid.

PHIL. O Theocles, my rage

Converts to envy. Thou hast liberty

To make some brave attempts, and reinforce

The dissipated army. Were I free

I wou'd do things of such immensity,

This blushing virgin shou'd take manhood to her,

And seek to ravish me.

CUNO. You are tedious, sir !

I wou'd desire less of your tongue, good sir,

And more of your ears. I have a charge to you.

PHIL. Hast any orders for my death ?

CUNO. Not yet, sir,

But I'm in hopes of having it ere long,

I find it troublesome attending you.

My present orders reach no further, sir,

Than to remove you from these windows : th'are too open.

PHIL. Curse upon their envy ! prithee do me  
The courtesy to kill me.

CUNO. Yes, and hang for't afterwards. I hope  
ere long

To have authority for doing it.

You shall not find me backward, sir, to serve you

In any kindness of that nature.

PHIL. Troth, had I a sword I wou'd kill thee.

CUNO. I thank you !

PHIL. Thou bringest such scurvy news, I will  
not go.

CUNO. Sir, I shall call those who shall try the  
mastery.

You should give better answers till you are free.

PHIL. May I see the garden ?

CUNO. No !

PHIL. Then I'm resolv'd I will not go.

CUNO. When I clap shackles on you, you'll obey  
More readily.

PHIL. Good keeper, do it ;

I'll knock thy brains out with them ! or at least I'll

Shake 'em so, the house shall never sleep.

I'll make you a new morrice. Must I go ?

CUNO. Yes, you must go !

PHIL. Farewell, kind window,

May rude wind never hurt thee ! O my lady,

If ever thou hast known what sorrows are,

Let dreams my sorrows to thy breast declare.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter CELANIA.*

CELA. Why should I love this gentleman ? 'tis  
odds,  
He'll never find a feature in my face,  
To tempt so much as a kind look from him.  
But who can love and give a reason for't ?  
At the first sight I lik'd him, lov'd him, infinitely  
lov'd him.  
And though he had a cousin fair as he too,  
Yet in my heart Philander is ; and there,  
Lord, what a coil he keeps ! but he must die :  
Philander, thou must die. For Theocles  
Is by my father set at liberty,  
Who stay'd not to resolve me of thy fate.  
We shall not need to strew thy grave with flowers,  
From such a root they cannot chuse but grow ;  
Thy body shall not into dust dissolve,  
But into spices to perfume those flowers.

*Enter LEUCIPPE, hastily.*

LEUC. Madam, here's a comedy at hand  
Will make you die with laughter ! Cunopes  
Is grown enamour'd on you.

CELA. Ay me, there is no hope !

LEUC. I know that, madam, but he's resolv'd  
To prosecute his love, and I have given him  
Encouragement. He'll presently be here.

CELA. Alas, he's gone !

LEUC. Madam, I say, he's here, just upon entrance.

CELA. He must die ! he is  
Too good to live on earth ; for wheresoe'er  
He does reside, he makes it fair Heav'n there.

LEUC. I'd rather think he makes it hell, because  
He looks so like the devil—but she sure  
Misunderstands me. She is taken up



With her affection to Philander——ha——  
She's in a trance. Cunopes, madam,——ha !

CELA. Ha !

LEUC. Is entering to make love to me.

CELA. Make love !

LEUC. Yes, truly, he's grown the very farse !  
He lays aside his surly looks, and falls  
To fawning with a screw'd and mimic face,  
As if he had been tutor'd by an ape.  
He sings, and makes legs to the looking-glass :  
Is pleas'd with's face, because he smiles again.

CELA. In love with thee ?——It shall be so,  
Leucippe,

Thou may'st procure Philander's liberty ;  
Use him with kindness, wench ; perhaps the man  
May be induc'd to be officious  
In freeing him I love, or may resign  
The keys into thy custody.

LEUC. I'll try him, madam.

*Enter CUNOPES.*

CUNO. Madam, I'm glad to understand——

CELA. It seems your understanding is improv'd——

CUNO. Madam, I say I'm glad to understand  
Your ladyship approves of my affection  
To mistress Leucippe.

CELA. There will be use of him ; he must be  
sooth'd.

She cannot sure refuse a handsome——you have a  
face

Methinks might tempt a stone.

LEUC. To break his head.

*[Aside.]*

CELA. The pressure of my fears forbid my  
Mirth ; Leucippe, what think you ? can you deny  
him ?

LEUC. I scarce shou'd e'er be angry at his smiles.

CUNO. I thank you, madam ; 'tis for your sake,  
[*He sneers.*

If her looks keep me alive.

CELA. I'll venture it—but yet perhaps he'll  
scarce

Resign the keys, Leucippe, in my presence.

I will withdraw a while. Cunopes, I'll leave you  
To your courtship, wishing you success.

[*Ex. Celia.*

CUNO. I humbly thank your ladyship.

LEUC. You cannot surely be in love with me,  
Though your deportment seems to say you are ?

CUNO. If deportment had said otherwise,  
I wou'd have made him eat his words.

LEUC. Wherein

Can you convince me that your love is true ?

I wou'd lose a smile upon a love

Consisting in pretence.

CUNO. Make trial, mistress, in what command  
you please.

LEUC. True lovers will  
Adventure through the frowns of all the world,  
To gain a smile from those whom they affect.

CUNO. So would Cunopes ; if you wou'd but  
try him ;

If you'll but smile, let me see who dare frown.

LEUC. You shall be tried. I know you prize  
those keys

And wou'd resign their custody to none but one

You lov'd : now, if your love be true,

Entrust me with their keeping but till to-morrow.

CUNO. The keys ? mistress, you know I have a  
pris'ner.

LEUC. I knew how real your affection was.

When you're brought to the test, you run for  
shelter

Under excuses.

[*Offers.*

CUNO. Pray, stay a while !  
Are you in earnest to make this trial of my love ?

LEUC. Yes, and do you try me with them if  
you dare.

CUNO. Dare ! there, take 'em !

LEUC. This shows you're hearty. Early in the  
morning

I will restore 'em, and be satisfied  
With this experiment of your affection,  
Since I cou'd have no other.

CUNO. But have a care o' the pris'ner. I'd be  
loth

To have those looks your lady did commend  
Be turn'd into an ugly face at last  
Under the gallows.

LEUC. You begin to repent you.

CUNO. I never repent till I am half hang'd.

LEUC. Well, as the last mark of your love, be  
gone and trust me !

Madam, I have 'em.

[*Ex. Cunop.*]

*Enter CELANIA.*

CELA. Thanks, dear Leucippe !  
Philander, now I'll manifest my love  
In thy release : thy glories are too bright  
To set in clouds exhal'd from thy own blood.  
I'll free thee from th' eclipse of these sad walls,  
And like a shadow ever by thee run,  
There's still a shadow where there is a sun.  
[*Ex. Celania.*]

*Enter THEOCLES as at liberty.*

THEO. Sent back to my own country ! 'tis a  
gift  
Outspeaks my gratitude ; but then forbid  
Th' Arcadian ground, and, in that prohibition,  
The vision of Heraclia, for whom

I die! O! 'tis a studied punishment.  
 I'm ever lost by having liberty,  
 By kindness kill'd, undone by courtesy.  
 Philander, thou hast now the start: she still  
 Shall bless thy eye-sight with her evening walks.  
 Who knows but thou mayst come to speak with  
     her?

And then she will be thine: thou hast a tongue  
 Fit to allure a tiger from his prey:  
 So charming that 'twould make a tempest tame.  
 But let me recollect myself a little: ere long  
 The birthdays of the Princess and the Prince  
 By the Arcadians will be solemniz'd  
 In pastoral delights, why may not I  
 Take sanctuary in another shape?  
 I could, not long since, wrestle well, and run  
 As swift as the wind upon a field of corn.  
 I'll venture in some poor disguise; who knows  
 Whether my brows may not a garland wear,  
 And happiness prefer me to a place,  
 Where I may see the vision of her face?

[*Ex. Theocles.*]

*Enter CELANIA with the prison keys and PHILANDER.*

PHIL. Madam, from whence can you derive your  
     courtesy?

CELA. Were I less courteous, nature would not  
     own me;

Call't my humanity to save your life. Good sir,  
 Begone! These keys shall make your way,  
 Y'are sav'd by flight, but ruin'd if you stay.

PHIL. I'd rather nobly die than thus be free,  
 And give my life than steal my liberty.

CELA. You'll not be innocent if so you die,  
 He kills himself who stays when he may fly.

PHIL. So clandestine and cowardly a flight  
 Wou'd gather so much blackness from the night,

As soon wou'd blot the glories I have won  
By valour, in the prospect of the sun.

CELA. The sun you speak of has withdrawn his  
light

To give the more advantage to your flight.  
He seem'd to say, whilst setting in a smile,  
Philander fly, and I will wink the while !

PHIL. You are an ill interpreter : for he  
Only withdrew, as 'twere, asham'd to see  
A soldier start at death, and basely fly :  
Thus to survive were to deserve to die.

CELA. He's an ill soldier, that, when danger's  
great,  
Loses the day for want of fair retreat.  
Good sir, consent !

PHIL. Suppose I shou'd, when I  
Am miss'd, your father must my place supply ;  
By giving me a life, you leave him none,  
And he that gave you yours must lose his own.

CELA. That makes me weak, but does success-  
less prove,  
My duty has resign'd all place to love.  
If they should shorten his decaying breath  
'Twill but a little antedate his death.  
His glories are grown old, yours but begun ;  
Men court the rising not the setting sun.

PHIL. But when he's dead, his blood will still  
remain  
Upon my fame an everlasting stain.

CELA. If it a stain to any eye appears,  
My eyes shall quickly wash it off with tears.  
His death, in saving you, wou'd merit more  
Than all his fighting life had done before.  
Come, sir ! I'm sure he will a pardon find,  
The Prince to his late valour will be kind.  
His slaughter'd foes may save him from the grave ;  
And those he slew may plead for one I save.

PHIL. Her last conjecture slackens my resolves ;  
[*Aside.*

The Prince may pardon him : he cannot be  
Severe to him who has deserv'd so well :  
But then, alas, what will become of her ?

CELA. My loss is gain,  
If you secure from loss of life remain.

PHIL. Why shou'd I refuse  
To accept her kindness ? I may here reside  
Under the shelter of some mean disguise,  
And, if th'are doom'd to death, prevent that fate  
By off'ring up my life : I can but die  
At last. I will accept her courtesy.

CELA. I pray, let's go ! I shall, sir, if you stay,  
Weep out those eyes that shou'd direct your way.  
Pray, follow me ! I'll bring you to the door,  
And tell you where to stay, whilst I provide  
Some habit more convenient for your flight.

PHIL. This gen'rous act is stretch'd to an extent  
Beyond the prospect of all precedent.  
Lead on ! what makes her thus obliging prove ?  
I hope 'tis pity, but I fear 'tis love. [*Exeunt.*

---

### THE THIRD ACT.

*Enter ARCON, POLYNICES, PROVOST, HERACLIA,  
CLEONE, THEOCLES (in disguise with a garland.)*

ARCON. Whoe'er you are, that wreath becomes  
you well :  
The beauty of the garland does receive  
Advantage from the blossom of your youth.  
You run and wrestle well, I have not seen  
A man of more activity and strength.  
What country owns your breeding ?

THEO. Part of this, sir,  
But much unhappy in the distance from

Your royal court.

ARCON. Are you a gentleman ?

THEO. Sir, I have always thought so, and have had

An education as refin'd as I

Presum'd my blood to be.

ARCON. May I demand wherein ?

THEO. In somewhat of all noble qualities ;

I could have kept a hawk and hollow'd well

To a deep cry of dogs. I dare not praise

My horsemanship, yet those who know me well

Give me a character I blush to own.

But I am most ambitious to be thought a soldier.

POLY. A most accomplish'd gentleman !

PROV. What place has wrong'd us by concealing him

In time of war ?——but in a cloudy day

We only view those things which nearer are,

And distant glories when the weather's fair.

POLY. What is your judgment of him, madam ?

HERA. His being young makes him appear more noble,

His worth increases by his want of years ;

Because new risen he more bright appears.

Unless in him the wonder's rarely seen,

That fuel clearer burns for being green.

PROV. Mark how his virtue, like a hidden sun,  
Breaks through his baser garments.

ARCON. What made you seek this place ?

THEO. Royal sir ;

Hopes to advance my education here,

And perfect quickly what was well begun :

Fruits ripen soonest that are near the sun.

ARCON. Sir, we are much indebted to your travel ;

Nor shall you lose your hopes. Polynices,  
Dispose of this brave gentleman.

POLY. Your Highness  
 Obliges me by that command. Whoe'er  
 You are, you are mine ; and I'll prefer you  
 To the Princess' service. This is her birth-day,  
 Which you have honour'd, and only one day  
 Does intervene betwixt her's and the Prince's.  
 Now you are hers : your virtues have deserv'd it.  
 Kiss her fair hand, sir.

THEO. You are a noble giver.  
 Thus, madam, let your servant seal his faith,  
 Whose studies shall be to deserve your favour ;  
 And if he shall offend you, frown him dead.

HERA. Frowns are too weak artillery to kill  
 So stout a man ; if you shall merit well  
 I quickly shall discern it : you are mine,  
 And somewhat better than your rank I'll use you.

ARCON. My birth-day now draws near : we'll  
 spend the time  
 Till then, in some diversion. Niece, to-morrow  
 You must be ready, with the rest, to hunt  
 In Dian's wood. Your servant will attend you.  
 I'm confident he will deserve your estimation.

HERA. His faithful service shall not want my  
 favour.

THEO. And when my service shall unfaithful be,  
 Let fame recant what she has said of me,  
 And may my falsehood be as much reveal'd  
 To all the world as now my love's conceal'd.

[*Ezeunt omnes.*]

*Enter LEUCIPPE and NURSE, CUNOPES dogging 'em.*

CUNO. I'm sent for by the Provost, yet I'll stay  
 To over-hear my mistress and the nurse ;  
 For methinks they are in counsel : and perhaps  
 'Tis about love, and I may be concern'd.

LEUC. You have left the keys in Cunope's  
 chamber ?



NURSE. Yes, mistress !

LEUC. Philander is releas'd, my lady fled ;  
And I according to appointment going  
To meet 'em at the brake in Dian's wood.

CUNO. Ha ! I shall pay as dear for love as those,  
Who marry all to whom they promise marriage.

LEUC. Farewell ! good Cunopes, if thou art  
hang'd

Thou'lt meet this comfort at the fatal place,  
Hanging can never spoil so bad a face.

Nurse, farewell !

NURSE. Farewell ! be sure you make haste.

*[Exeunt Leucippe and Nurse severally.]*

CUNO. Though she saw me not, she took her  
leave of me

After the old phrase ; farewell, and be hang'd,  
Besides her commendations sent to my face.  
Those have good stomachs who can love the meat,  
Having been beaten with the spit. And yet  
I cannot hate her. There's some witch-craft in't !  
But let me think. Philander free'd ! perhaps  
The Provost sent for me to give accompt  
Of him : Celania fled ? Leucippe gone !  
The brake in Dian's wood ? I shall be hang'd.  
But the hangman, being no man of quality,  
Cannot expect that I should be civil  
To stay here for him, till he find me.

*Enter MESSENGER.*

MESS. The Provost wonders you make no more  
haste,  
His bus'ness is——

CUNO. Yes, yes, I know his bus'ness——

MESS. Why don't you bring him word then,  
how Philander  
Carries himself since Theocles is gone ;  
That he may know how to inform the Prince ?

CUNO. Bring word how Philander carries himself?

I know his meaning well enough ; go, tell him  
I'll only step to see, and bring him word.

[*Exit Messenger.*]

I must be gone ! If I can find Philander,  
I may bring off myself by bringing him  
Back hither, but if not, I am out of rope reach.

[*Exit.*]

*Horns in several places, noise and hollaing as of people hunting.*

*Enter THEOCLES in the wood.*

THEO. I have lost the Prince and all the company :  
They are all divided. O Heraclia !  
Sweeter than spring and all the golden buttons  
On her fresh boughs ;  
How fortunate am I in such a mistress !  
Alas, poor pris'ner ! poor Philander !  
Thou little dream'st of my success : thou think'st  
Thyself more bless'd to be near Heraclia.  
Me thou presum'st most wretched, though I'm free ;  
Because thou think'st me in my country, but  
Wert thou acquainted with my happiness,  
How I enjoy the lustre of her eyes,  
What passion, cousin, wou'd possess thee ?

*Enter PHILANDER out of a bush.*

PHIL. Traitor kinsman ! thou should'st perceive  
my  
Passion, were this hand but owner of a sword ;  
And were my strength a little reforc'd with one  
Meal's meat, thy wounds shou'd shew the justice of  
my love.  
I'd soon let out the blood which makes us kin,  
And prove thee a perfidious lord, not worth

The name of villain : dar'st thou call her thine ?

THEO. Cousin Philander !

PHIL. Treacherous Theocles !

THEO. I am not conscious of a crime that may  
Deserve those attributes with which you now  
Defile my fame ; and therefore I avoid  
Replies in language of so coarse a web.  
Passion transports you, cousin. Pray be pleas'd  
To show in noble terms your grief. I am  
Ready to vindicate my love by reason,  
Or by the sword of a true gentleman.

PHIL. O, that thou durst !

THEO. Cousin, you know I dare :  
I'm confident you wou'd not tamely hear  
Another blast my valour.

PHIL. I confess

I've seen your sword do wonders :  
But treachery makes men impotent, and then  
They shun decisions by the sword. Their courage  
Droops into fear and cowardice. Supply me  
But with the charity of one poor meal,  
And with a sword though rusty ; and, if then  
Thou dar'st pretend to love Heraclia,  
I will forgive the trespass thou hast done me ;  
And if thou kill me, I'll acquaint those souls  
In shades, which have died manly, that thou art  
A soldier brave and noble.

THEO. Be content ! agen betake you to your  
hawthorn-house.

I'll gratify your wishes : you shall have both  
sword and meat.

PHIL. O, you heavens ! Dare any venture so  
nobly in a cause so guilty ?  
Sure none but Theocles cou'd be so daring.  
Sir, I embrace your offer, and shall thank  
Your person with my sword.

*[Wind horns and cornets.]*

THEO. You hear the horns ! enter your guise.\*

Take

Comfort and be strong. I'll keep my word. Give me your hand.

PHIL. Pray hold your promise, cousin Theocles, And do the deed with a bent brow ; I know You love me not : be rough with me, and pour This oil out of your language.

THEO. My anger and content have but one face.

[*Horns wind.*

I'm call'd ! I have an office there.

PHIL. Your office is unjust, and your attendance cannot please Heaven.

THEO. Talk of that no more. Leave it to the decision of the sword.

PHIL. But this one word. You are going now to gaze

Upon my mistress ; for sir, mine she is.

THEO. Nay, then —

PHIL. You talk of feeding me into my strength : But you are going to inforce yourself By feeding on her eyes. There, Theocles, You have advantage over me. Adieu ! My cause gives me advantage over you. [*Erit.*

*Enter CELANIA.*

CELA. He has mistook the beech, and is pursuing The way his fancy leads. 'Tis now near morning ! No matter, wou'd it were perpetual night. Hark ! 'tis a wolf, but grief destroys my fear, I care not though the wolves shou'd me devour, If he had but this meat, and this disguise. What, if I holla'd for him ? I cannot holla ! He has no sword, and wolves 'tis said have sense To know a man unarm'd. Who knows but he

\* Muse, also Muset. A hole in a hedge through which game, and more especially the hare, passes.

V.

R

Is torn in pieces? Many howl'd together,  
 And then they fed on him. So much for that :  
 There is an end of all, now he is gone.  
 No, no, I lie ; my father's life must answer  
 For his escape. Alas, I grow mad ! I've eaten  
 No meat these two days, nor have clos'd my eyes ;  
 I find my sense unsettl'd. Which way now ?  
 The best way is the next way to the grave,  
 Each erring step besides is torment. Lo !  
 The moon is down ! the crickets chirp ! The  
 screech-owl  
 Has bid the night farewell : but my misfortunes  
 Ne'er will find the break of day. [*Exit Cela.*]

*Enter THEOCLES with wine and meat.*

THEO. Sure ! this is near the place. Ho ! cousin Philander !

*Enter PHILANDER.*

PHIL. Theocles ?

THEO. The same ; I've perform'd my promise, sir.  
 Here is your meat, you shall not want a sword  
 When y'have recover'd strength. Come forth and  
 fear not !

Here is no Provost.

PHIL. Nor any one so honest.

THEO. That shall be  
 Decided another time. Take courage !  
 I know you're faint ; here cousin, drink !

PHIL. Thou might'st poison me now.

THEO. But I must fear you first.  
 Well, coz, no more of this. Here, to your health !  
 I'll drink you into blood, and then I'll drain you.

PHIL. Do, coz !

THEO. Sit down, sir, and let me request you that  
 You mention not this lady : 'twill disturb us.  
 We shall have time enough.

PHIL. Well, sir, I'll pledge you.

THEO. Drink a good hearty draught, it breeds good blood.

Do not you feel it thaw you ?

PHIL. By and by, I'll tell you of what operation 'tis.

THEO. Is't not mad lodging in the wild woods, cousin ?

PHIL. For them who have wild consciences, 'tis.

THEO. How taste's your meat ? Your hunger needs no sauce !

PHIL. Not much ! but if it did, your's is too tart.

Give me more wine ! here, Theocles, a health

To all the ladies of our old acquaintance !

Your memory retains the marshal's daughter ?

She knew, sir, how to chuse a handsome man

To make the object of her love.

THEO. Alas ! that's no news, cousin, amongst ladies.

PHIL. And I have heard some call him Theocles.

THEO. What then, sir ?

PHIL. Nothing, but 'twas conceiv'd

You were so charitable to her sighs,

You turn'd 'em into groans for nine months after.

Because she was enamour'd on your face

You did supply her with your picture, drawn

Exceedingly lively, cousin.

THEO. I presume you yet remember the young count's sister.

You'll pledge her, cousin ?

PHIL. Yes, sir, yes.

THEO. She lov'd you well ! a pretty wench ! but brown,

As if by often gazing on your eyes,

Which she call'd bright, she had been sun-burn't.

You have not yet forgot the song too, coz ;

No, nor the willows ?

PHIL. Well, let's have the song.

THEOCLES *sings*.

THEO. Under the willow shades they were  
 Free from the eye-sight of the sun,  
 For no intruding beam could there  
 Peep through to spy what things were done,  
 Thus shelter'd they unseen did lye  
 Surfeiting on each other's eye.  
 Defended by the willow shades alone,  
 The sun's heat they defied and cool'd their own :  
 Whilst they did embrace unspy'd  
 The conscious willows seem'd to smile,  
 That they with privacy supplied  
 Holding the door as 'twere the while.  
 And when their dalliances were o'er,  
 The willows, to oblige 'em more,  
 Bowing did seem to say, as they withdrew,  
 We can supply you with a cradle too.

PHIL. You are merry, cousin !

THEO. I hope we may reflect upon our loves,  
 And never cry—heigh—ho !

PHIL. 'Twas for Heraclia, upon my life. Away  
 With thy strain'd mirth ! I say that sigh  
 Was for Heraclia breath'd, ignoble cousin.

THEO. Fy, you are mistaken !

PHIL. By all that's good there's no goodness in  
 thee.

THEO. Nay, then I'll leave you : now you are a  
 child.

PHIL. As thou hast made me, traitor.

THEO. I'll leave you meat, sir, to recruit you.  
 I'll return

With that shall quiet all, and speak my passion  
 Much better than my tongue.

PHIL. You mean a sword.

THEO. Cousin, distrust me not, feed heartily !  
 I wish you all fair weather in your bush !  
 May no storm fall out, but what our swords shall  
 raise.

Farewell, you shall not want for any thing.

PHIL. Ha ! sir ?

THEO. I'll hear no more ! [Exit.

PHIL. But thou shal't much more feel,  
 If thou perform thy promise. I will search  
 Each angle of thy heart to find thy love,  
 And mak't a victim to Heraclia,  
 That heart is fittest for her sacrifice  
 Which is already kindl'd at her eyes. [Exit.

*Enter CELANIA (distracted), LEUCIPPE.*

LEUC. Alas ; she's distracted ! I have found her,

*Enter CUNOPES.*

But she has lost herself. Ha, Cunopes !

CUNO. Yes, mistress !

LEUC. I am betray'd.

CUNO. I have made bold to try how you could like  
 This face here in the wood. I will remember  
 You gave it a good character at home.

LEUC. I would have rather seen a satyr,  
 But rough words may as soon  
 Blow down these trees

As do us any courtesy ; he must be sooth'd !  
 Ah, Cunopes, reflect no more on these things ;  
 You are opportunely come to give attendance  
 Upon my lady : she's distracted !

CUNO. Ha ! Is she mad ?

LEUC. Alas, her senses are all gone !

CUNO. And mine too, out of compliment,  
 Are gone to bear 'em company. 'Tis grown  
 The fashion to be mad and wear plain heads,  
 Without the least trimming of wit. The Prince



By this time's mad with anger of the loss  
 Of's pris'ner ; And the Provost's mad with fear,  
 Lest he should take his turn : I'm almost mad  
 To think I was a fool in lending you  
 The keys. And mistress, if you have any reason,  
 You'll run mad too. 'Tis fit your wits should  
 Wait upon your lady's.

CEL. I'm very cold ! and all the stars are out  
 too ;

Ev'n all the little stars which look like spangles :  
 The sun has seen my folly. Ah, Philander !  
 Ay me ! He's in Heav'n, where am I now ?

LEUC. How wildly she discourses.

*She sings.*

CEL. For straight my green gown into breeches  
 I'll make,  
 And my long yellow locks much shorter  
 I'll take :  
 Sing down a down, down a, down a,  
 Then I'll cut me a switch, and on that ride  
 about,  
 And wander and wander till I find him out,  
 With a heigh down, down a, down, down a.

O for a hawthorn ; like a nightingale  
 To lean my breast against, or else I shall sleep  
 like a top.

LEUC. Let's follow her and see she injure not  
 herself !

CUNO. I hope she is not so mad yet. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter COUNTRY-MAN, and WOMEN preparing for the  
 Solemnizing of the KING's birthday.*

1 COUN. Draw up the company ! Where's the  
 Taberer ?

TAB. Here, boys, here !

*Enter TABERER.*

1 COUN. You all know how to make your honours.

ALL. Yes, yes. [*All make honours.*]

1 COUN. Sr. Reverence! You make an honour, you s—?

Cast yourselves decently into a body

By a trace, and turn boys thus.

2 COUN. And sweetly we will do't, neighbours.

1 COUN. Where are your ribbands, maids? swim with your bodies.

3 COUN. That they may do, they are light enough.

1 COUN. Couple then and see what's wanting.

Friend, pray carry your tail without offence

Or scandal to the ladies; and be sure

You dance with confidence, without being mov'd,

And when you stand still do it with judgment.

3 COUN. I'se warrant you I'se not stand a step amiss.

1 COUN. You, Mr Mason, you betray your trade too much.

You dance as if you were treading of mortar.

Taberer, strike up!

[*He strikes up, and 1 Country-man dances a jig.*]

1. COUN. Thou a Taberer, thou a tinker? we as Well may dance after the tunes of grasshoppers.

*Enter CELANIA, CUNOPES, LEUCIPPE.*

CELANIA *sings.*

He deserv'd much better than so

In the thick wood to be lost,

Where the nut-trees grew so low

As if they had been nip'd with the frost,

O whither, whither, my love, dost thou go?

1 COUN. Woman avoid : if it be your vocation  
to be mad,  
Pray be mad in some more fitting place ;  
This is no place for mad folks.

CUNO. But 'tis for fools.

1 COUN. For though we have bells here ; yet we  
have no whips.

Tho' we are about a morrice, 'tis no mad morrice.

CUNO. Who says she shan't be mad ?

1 COUN. That do I, sir ! we have business here  
that does concern

The Prince, matters of state and will not be disturb,  
sir.

I cannot bear with her affronts.

CUNO. Can you bear with that, sir ?

*[Cunopes strikes him.]*

1 COUN. Sir, I wou'd have you know I con ta'  
any thing at a man's

Handz, but my spirit is too big to put up the  
least

Affront offer'd me by a woman.

*CELANIA sings.*

There were three fools at mid-summer run mad !

About an howlet a quarrel they had,

The one said 'twas an owl, the other he said  
nay,

The third said it was a hawk but the bells were  
cut away.

1. COUN. Woman, I say leave thy singing ! or  
I'll give thee a good douze i'th' chop.

CUNO. Say you so, sir ? *[Strikes him.]*

1. COUN. Good sir, command your hands to be  
more civil ; what,

Are you mad ?

CELA. Give me your hand !

2. COUN. Why ?

CELA. I can tell your fortune. You are a fool,  
tell ten ! I have  
Pos'd him—fa, la, la, la.

1. COUN. Come, let's go and practice in some  
other place, Prince  
Will else be here ere we are perfect.

[*Ex. Country Men and Women.*]

CELA. Well ! I'll go seek Philander : I shall find  
him  
Under some primrose : I am thirsty. Fetch  
A glass of milk stript from the pretty dugs  
Of some milch lady-cow.

Lady-cow, lady-cow, quick, go flee !  
And tell me now where my true love shall be.

LEUC. Let us keep close to her, good Cunopes.  
[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter* ARCON, POLYNICES, PROVOST, HERACLIA,  
and attendants.

ARCON. They have found a pretty place within  
the wood  
For the solemnity. Methinks, Heraclia, y'are  
melancholy.

HERA. Sir, I cannot chuse,  
But bear a part in the good Provost's cares,  
And mingle tears with him : he mourns, you see,  
For his dear daughter's loss, poor lady !  
Good sir, cheer the Provost up.

ARCON. Provost, take comfort !  
Your daughter's not irreparably lost,  
Nor yet the pris'ner : we'll send out to find 'em.

PROV. My grief, sir, will but discompose your  
joys ;

Pray let your Highness now permit my absence.

ARCON. You will receive some ease by staying  
here.

PROV. I shall not see for tears : Let me retire  
 Into some solitary place alone,  
 To bless your birthday, and to curse my own.

ARCON. You have leave, Provost. But I hope,  
 ere long,

Your daughter's presence will dry up those tears.

POLYN. Good man ! how has her loss dejected  
 him ?

Methinks his face too much resembles death.

Each character of age does seem a grave.

HERA. Now I lament that e'er I tried Celania,  
 By telling her, Philander was to die.

POLYN. Madam, you should suspend your grief  
 awhile,

Custom sometimes must nature overrule.

Think now not on Celania : but reflect

On this solemnity, and entertain

The birthday of the Prince, with thoughts that are  
 Of a serene complexion. See, they are coming !

*Enter FIRST COUNTRY-MAN as Master of the revels.*

ARCON. This seems to be the country poet.  
 What

Represent you first ?

1 COUN. We represent a morrice for the first thing,  
 Whose coutrements hang heavy on my  
 purse-string,

Tho' lightly on the hobby-horse and  
 dancers,

He learns to wighy,\* and the rest to  
 prance, sirs.

They are all so skittish, that when you  
 behold 'em,

You may e'en swear the hobby-horse has  
 foald 'em,

ARCON. Are they ready ?

\* Wihie, or whinny. To neigh.

1 COUN. Th' are entering and, to shew I 'do not  
 bob ye,  
 The horse comes first here which is call'd  
 the hobby.

*Enter hobby-horse.*

Some with long spoons, quoth proverb  
 stale and addle  
 Eat with the devil ; this, sir, has a ladle.

*Enter TABERER.*

Next comes the man with taber, which  
 by some  
 Among the pigmies is yclep'd a drum.

*Enter all.*

Then with the rest comes in that ugly  
 carrion  
 Which country batchelors do call maid-  
 Marrion.

*[They dance the morrice here.]*

ARCON. You have your thanks for this ! what is  
 your next ?

1. COUN. The next, sir, if your grace will be con-  
 tented,  
 A hunt in music will be represented.  
 If that your Highness' worship think it  
 good  
 To saunter but a little in the wood.  
 Good sir, be pleas'd to raise yourself and  
 go forth  
 To hear the horns, then see the hunt, and  
 so forth.

ARCON. Since you are master of the hunt, we'll  
 take  
 Our stand where you appoint us : lead the way !

We'll change the scene awhile to see your sports :  
 Princes for pleasure may remove their courts.  
[*Ex. omnes.*]

#### THE FOURTH ACT.

*Enter* ARCON, POLYNICES, HERACLIA, ATTENDANTS  
*and* COUNTRY-POET.

POET. Let man of might sit down in dainty arbour,  
 Where trees are trimm'd as periwig is by  
       barber ;  
 And huntsmen soon shall come with horns  
       call'd bugle  
 Which are but few, because we will be  
       frugal. [*Exit Poet.*]

ARCON. Well ! we will be directed :  
 This wood has various places of delight,  
 It can afford both privacy and pleasure.  
 The call begins——

*Enter* TWO FORESTERS.

[*The call at distance representing the sound of  
 horns by instrumental music.*]

1 FOR. Hearn, heark ! the call ! at distance it  
       appears  
       So gently that it softly courts our ears.  
       Whilst echo newly waken'd with the noise  
       Does drowsily reverberate the voice.

[*The call again louder.*]

2 FOR. Now 'tis come nearer, and does reach  
       the sky :

Objects grow greater by their being nigh.

1 FOR. Woods tremble with the wind, as if they  
       were  
       For some of their inhabitants in fear.

2 FOR. For one of them they well may fearful  
seem,

For I myself did help to harbour him.

1 FOR. If so, you can with ease inform me then,  
Of what head is he ?

2 FOR. A brave hart of ten.

1 FOR. But do his port and entries \* promise  
game ?

2 FOR. That both his slote † and fumes ‡ do pro-  
claim. [*A single recheat winded.*]

1 FOR. Hearn! the recheat! § the stag now quits  
his lair,  
And sprightly bounds into the open air.

*Music expresses the chase by voices and instru-  
ments like holloing and winding of horns.*

2 FOR. Now, now the dogs in a full cry pursue  
The hart as fast as he does them eschew,  
Whilst they with hollow mouths, foretel  
his fall;

And in a concert chime his funeral.

Prithee let's take our stand here.

1 FOR. No ; they are at a loss, let's to 'em !

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter HUNTRESS.*

[*Hollaing and shouting within.*]

HUNT. The dogs when at a loss their voice sup-  
press'd,

And by that silence soon their fault con-  
fess'd,

\* Entries. Places in thickets where deer have recently passed through.

† The pit of the stomach.

‡ Fumes. Ordure. "And gif men speke and ask him of the fumes, he shal clepe fumes of an hart." *Mayster of the Game*, MS., Bodl., 546.

§ A lesson which the huntsman winds on the horn, when the hounds have lost their game, to call them back from following a counter-scent.



Most of 'em were staunch-hounds ; \* and  
it is strange,

They made a loss which never hunted  
change :

But now th'ave got the game agen in  
view,

And do with violence the chase renew ;

Now, now, the stag is more in danger far

Of sinking soon. Relapses fatal are !

(HUNSMEN *within*) There blue-cap ! there, there,  
there ! so ho, ho !

HUNT. Hearn ! heark ! The noise is now more  
lively grown,

Their clamour shews the stag is plucking  
down.

He sinks, he sinks ! their voice proclaim  
his fall,

As thunder speaks a monarch's funeral.

[*A noise of dogs representing the death of the stag.*]

*Enter* TWO FORRESTERS, FOUR HUNTERS, and  
FOUR HUNTRESSES, *with the stag's head.*

1 FOR. They have made both essays.

2 FOR. A brave fat deer.

1 HUNT. See the stag's head which so did spread  
his beam,

The small trees did seem to envy him.

1 FOR. When the relays were set of hound and  
horse,

2 FOR. We all resolv'd to hunt it out at force.

HUNT. When first we rous'd him, and he fled,  
the wind

Was with the dogs left equally behind.

1 FOR. But when the game their following sight  
out-went,

The dogs pursu'd him hotly by the scent.

\* " Well entered for the game."

- 2 FOR. Then wearied to a bay he quickly fell ;  
 And in a groan his tragedy did tell.  
 1 FOR. Nature with music did that groan out-vie,  
 A quire of birds did sing his obsequy.

*Chorus.* That chorus was, for fear they should  
 Forget their melting strain,  
 Taught by the echoes of the wood  
 To sing it o'er again.

POET. Now for our dance, wherein we have no  
 small hope,  
 Because it does both amble, trot, and gal-  
 lop.

*A Dance.*

HERA. This entertainment's parcel-gilt, made up  
 Of various diversions.

POLY. We have had a country muse, who  
 Has set up with the help of a town poet.

ARCON. Since all is done, 'tis time we shou'd  
 retire ;

Polynices, reward him ; we'll away !  
 We must not keep too long a holiday.

*[Exeunt omnes.]*

*Enter CELANIA, LEUCIPPE, and CUNOPES.*

CELA. Hearn ! heark ! the grasshoppers—Phil-  
 ander's gone,  
 Gone to the wood to gather mulberries ! I'll find  
 Him out to-morrow.

LEUC. Alas ! how shall we do to get her home ?

*CELANIA sings.*

The heifer was lost in the green wood,  
 In the green wood, in the green wood,  
 Where she had gone astray.  
 By a bank of strawberries she stood  
 Lowing till break of day,

Then did the strawberries upon her smile  
And sweetly seem'd to beg for cream the while.

CELA. Is not this a fine song ?

LEUC. O, a very fine one.

CUNO. So fine, I'm sure it set my mouth a-  
water.

CELA. I can sing twenty more.

LEUC. I think you can.

CELA. Yes truly, can I. Are you not a tailor ?

CUNO. A tailor, madam ? Troth, I think I am  
none,

Because I eat so little bread : I'm sure

I have not touch'd a bit these two days.

LEUC. Fy, you must humour her ! say you are a  
tailor.

CUNO. Must I then lie to call myself a thief ?  
Well, madam, I am a tailor.

CELA. Where's my wedding gown ?

CUNO. I'll bring it home to-morrow.

CELA. Do. Very early ! I must be abroad else,  
To call the maids and pay the music too ;  
'Twill never thrive else : but suppose Philander  
Is taken, he must die then.

*She sings.*

And when Philander shall be dead,  
I'll bury him, I'll bury him,  
And I'll bury him in a primrose bed :  
Then I'll sweetly ring his knell,  
With a pretty cowslip bell.

Ding, ding, &c.

D'ye know Philander ?

CUNO. Know him ? Yes, yes,  
Wou'd I cou'd see him, that I might renew  
My old acquaintance with him.

CELA. Is't not a fine young gentleman ?

CUNO. Too fine it seems to bear me company.

LEUC. By no means cross her : she'll be then  
distemper'd,  
Far worse than now she seems.

CELA. You have a sister ?

CUNO. Yes, and a handsome one ; of my complexion.

CELA. Many are now with child by him ; yet I  
Keep close as any cockle. All are boys,  
And must be eunuch'd for musicians,  
To sing the battles of the king of pigmies :  
They say he lately conquer'd all the cranes :  
And took 'em pris'ners with his lime-twigs.

CUNO. 'Tis very strange !

CELA. As e'er you heard : but say nothing.  
Come hither !——you are a wise man.

CUNO. So, so, madam, I have a spice of policy :  
But yet I fear, I hardly shall be made  
A privy-counsellor, because I let  
Philander 'scape.

CELA. And are not you the master of a ship ?

CUNO. Yes ! here's the vessel ! 'tis a man of  
war : [Views himself.]

Only it wants due stowage. I am hungry,  
My guts are grown artillery, and roar  
Like cannons.

CELA. Set your compass to the north  
And steer towards Philander.

See how the dolphins caper there,  
The fish keep holiday.

They dance corantos in the air,  
And thus they shoot away. [Exeunt.]

*Enter PHILANDER, as from a bush.*

PHIL. I did not think so little time could have  
Restor'd a health so much decay'd : methinks  
I am stronger than I was before, and long

Till we encounter, as if valour's heat  
 Grew, like a fever's, greater by a meal.  
 Cousin, thou hast built a buttress to support  
 My falling fabric and to crush thy own.  
 My thirst's allay'd : but, Theocles, thy blood  
 Must quench the draught rais'd by the heat of love !  
 —He promis'd to come double-sworded. That  
 Which he refuses I will kill him with.  
 One of us with this ev'ning sun must set.

*Enter THEOCLES with two swords.*

THEO. How d'ye, sir ?

PHIL. A little stomach sick ;  
 But opening of a vein in you will cure me.

THEO. Be your own surgeon ; here are instruments.

PHIL. I've given you too great a trouble, sir.

THEO. 'Tis but a debt to honour and my duty.

PHIL. I wish you would so well consult your honour,

In your affection as your enmity,  
 Then my embraces not my blows should thank you.

THEO. Either well done is a brave recompence.

PHIL. I shall not be behind hand with the payment.

THEO. These soft defiance oblige me, sir.  
 When I am wounded, some such words as these  
 Will fall like oil into my wounds, and cure 'em.  
 But for your rougher terms they are like bullets  
 Chaw'd into poison. Let our language be  
 Serene, and if a tempest must be seen,  
 Let our swords shew it : here I have brought you  
 one,

But if you feel yourself not fitting yet,  
 I'll stay till you recover health.

PHIL. Cousin ! thou art so brave an enemy,  
 That none is fit to kill thee but a kinsman ;

I'm well and lusty : choose your sword ! I have  
Advantage of you in my cause.

THEO. Choose you, sir !

PHIL. Wilt thou exceed in all ! Or dost thou do  
it

To make me spare thee !

THEO. If thou think so, cousin,  
You are deceiv'd, for I shall not spare you.

PHIL. That's well said ! this is mine, then ;  
And be sure I shall strike home.

THEO. I'll give you cause enough ! Is there  
ought else to say !

PHIL. This only, and no more, sir : If there be  
A place prepar'd for those who sleep in honour,  
I wish his weary soul, who falls, may have it,  
Whilst the survivor does enjoy the pleasure  
Of an unrivall'd love. Give me your hand !

THEO. Philander, here ! This hand shall never  
more

Come near you with such friendship.

PHIL. Once more stand off !

*[They fight. Horns within. They stop.]*

THEO. Hark, cousin, hark ! our folly has undone  
us.

PHIL. Why !

THEO. The Prince is returning from the celebra-  
tion

Of his nativity. Dear sir, retreat  
Into your bush agen ; if you are seen  
You perish instantly, for breaking prison.  
And I, if you reveal me, for contempt of  
The Prince's order.

PHIL. I'll no more be hidden ; I know your cun-  
ning and I know  
Your cause ; I'll not refer this great adventure  
To a second trial. Stand upon your guard !

THEO. You are mad !

PHIL. Let what will threaten me ; the beauty of  
Heraclia  
Makes me scorn the frowns of fortune — for Heraclia.

THEO. Then come what may come, you shall see  
I can as well fight  
As talk, only I fear the law will have the honour of  
our

Ends.—Philander—at thy life !

PHIL. Guard well thy own !

*Enter ARCON, POLYNICES, HERACLIA, Attendants  
and Guards.*

ARCON. What insolent and unadvised men  
Are these, which here attempt each other's life  
Against the tenour of my laws ? You both  
Deserve to die for striving thus to kill each other.

PHIL. I know it, sir : we are both  
Contemnners of your mercy ! I'm Philander  
Who broke your prison. This is Theocles !

ARCON. Ha !

PHIL. A bolder traitor never trod your ground.

POLYN. Alas ! I have been generous in vain.

PHIL. 'Tis he contemns you, and in this disguise,  
Forgetting your command, attends that lady,  
Whose servant, if there be a right in seeing  
And first bequeathing of the soul, I am ;  
Yet he dares think her his, which treachery  
I call'd him here to answer. If you e'er  
Deserv'd the attributes of great and just,  
Bid us to fight again, and you shall see  
Such justice as you'll envy ; then you may  
Divest me of my life. I'll woo ye to it.

HERA. What miracle is this ? Both fight for me ?

ARCON. You are a bold defyer of your fate.

THEO. Your breath of mercy, sir, I shall not  
court,

I can as resolutely die as you command it ;  
 Only let me say I am no traitor, tho' Philander  
 Calls me so ; unless my love be treason. Then  
      indeed

I'm the greatest traitor, and am proud on't :  
 If you ask why I slighted your command,  
 Ask why I love, and why that lady's fair ?

HERA. Can both be kind'd into love by me.  
 And love enflame 'em into so much hate ? [*Aside.*]

PHIL. Monarch ! as you are just, shew us no  
      mercy :

Let us expire together ; only, sir,  
 Let Theocles a while before me fall,  
 That I may tell my soul he shall not have her.

ARCON. Your wish is granted ! he offended most,  
 And first shall die : nor shall you long survive  
      him.

Polynices, secure them till the morning !  
 Then they shall wake to sleep for ever.

POLYN. Good sir, be pleas'd to moderate their  
      doom.

ARCON. You supplicate in vain : convey 'em  
      hence !

POLYN. I shall obey you, sir, but heaven can tell  
 With what reluctance : Now, madam, you must  
 Intercede for 'em, or else your face,  
 Wherein the world reads beauty, yet will be  
 With curses blotted of succeeding youth,  
 For these lost gentlemen.

[*Ex. Polyn., Philan., Theocles.*]

HERA. My face is guiltless of their ruin ; but  
 The misadventure of their own eyes kills 'em,  
 Yet I have pity and will plead for 'em.  
 Good sir, retract your sentence ! if they fall  
 Virtue will suffer in 'em.

ARCON. Why should you intercede ? if they  
      survive



The public danger will be kept alive.  
I'm sorry niece, they love you !

HERA. 'Tis their fate !

Can love to me deserve my uncle's hate ?  
Should they for loving me untimely fall ?  
Tho' now Heraclia they may gentle call,  
Their groans will speak me cruel at the last,  
And every sigh my reputation blast.

ARCON. Suppose I should permit 'em both to  
live,  
'Twould but a little time their death relieve :  
They'd love you still, and loving you would fight,  
Rivals' affections do to death excite.  
Whilst they survive they will foment that fire  
Which in their ashes quickly would expire.

HERA. But when that flame, sir, with their ashes  
dies,  
Another flame will from my beauty rise ;  
And that, which kindl'd their unhappy love,  
To other's hate will provocation prove ;  
Their deaths will make me loath'd ; my honour  
shall

Contract a blackness from their funeral.

ARCON. Since with such violence you intercede,  
One shall find pardon, though th' other bleed,  
Your breath shall have the liberty to save  
One, and condemn the other to the grave.

HERA. The death of one alone then shall  
suffice,

I'll make him the survivor's sacrifice.  
The noble Theocles shall live—but why ?  
Philander is as much too good to die :  
Distracted thus I know not which to choose,  
One I would save, but not the other lose.  
May not both live ?

ARCON. Not in regard of them,  
But for your sake, I do not both condemn.

You cannot marry both, and, when I save  
 But one, you can no more from hymen crave ;  
 By love's great law you can but one enjoy,  
 Him you must quickly choose or both destroy.

[*Exit Arcon.*]

HERA. With rigid honour, gentle pity join'd  
 To plead for those whom he to death design'd,  
 He thinks I spake from principles of love,  
 Now both of 'em I from my thoughts remove.  
 He told me I by one should be enjoy'd,  
 Which partial fortune that I may avoid,  
 I'll equally permit 'em both to die,  
 That so I may do neither injury. [*Exit Princess.*]

#### THE FIFTH ACT.

*Enter MESSENGER and NURSE.*

NURSE. How sir ? Did Cunopes assist you then  
 To bring my lady back ?

MESS. Yes, but he stood a long time in suspense,  
 And scarce would have return'd, had not two men,  
 Who cross'd the way in haste, acquainted us  
 That not far off the Prince had in the wood  
 Surpris'd Philander fighting with his cousin.

NURSE. Alas ! poor gentleman.

MESS. This news made him hope  
 He might be pardon'd, then he assum'd courage,  
 And with Leucippe's help we have brought home  
 Celania, though distracted.

NURSE. Blessing on your heart !  
 We have some hopes she soon will be recover'd,  
 The Prince's physician gives the Provost comfort,  
 He says Philander's and her want  
 Of sleep caus'd her distemper : He prescrib'd

A cordial, which by this time she has taken  
To force her to a slumber.

MESS. They are ent'ring !

NURSE. I dare not stay to see her ! 'las, poor  
lady :

I cannot look upon her without weeping.

[*Ex. Nurse.*]

*Enter PROVOST, CELANIA, LEUCIPPE, and CUNOPES.*

PROV. O ! May the cordial rectify her senses,  
Or mine will else unsettle ; I shall grow  
Distracted with her madness : as if reason  
Might be infected, like related blood.

CELA. Have you seen the crop'd horse Phil-  
ander gave me ?

CUNO. A horse ? Yes, yes ! I thank him too :  
he did

His good-will to bestow a horse on me,  
A wooden one that must be rid forsooth  
With a halter instead of a bridle.

CELA. He's a fine horse ! you never saw him  
dance ?

LEUC. No, madam.

MESS. Alas, poor lady !

CELA. He'll dance the morrice twenty mile an-  
hour,

And that will founder the best hobby-horse in  
Arcadia : he gallops to the tune of green-sleeves,  
What think you of him ?

CUNO. Having these virtues  
I think he might be brought to play at tennis.

CELA. Alas, that's nothing !

CUNO. Can he write and read too ?

CELA. O yes, a fair hand, and casts himself  
Th' account of all his hay and provender.  
That hostler that does cozen him must rise betimes.

CUNO. This horse has so much reason, I believe

The Trojan-horse begot him whilst he had  
So many men in's belly.

CELA. The Prince's chest-nut mare's in love with  
him.

CUNO. What portion has she ?

CELA. Two hundred bottles of hay, and twenty  
strike

Of oats : he lisps in his neighing too, and that  
entic'd

Her first : but he'll ne'er have her.

How far is't to the world's end ?

CUNO. That's a hard question. Had Philander  
ne'er been found,

Again, I might within these two days

Have been so much a traveller as to resolve her,

But as things stand she may know best herself :

For she's the next door to't ; at her wit's end.

CELA. I must go to the world's end, and must  
meet

Philander there. We shall be ferried o'er

Into the shades where blessed spirits walk

To gather nose-gays and sometimes to play

At barley-break.

MESS. How prettily her fancy wanders !

CELA. They lead a sore life in the other place,

Burning, frying, boiling, hissing, cursing !

There some are put in cauldrons full of lead

And users' grease, amongst a million

Of cutpurses, and there boil like a gammon

Of bacon that will never be enough.

PROV. Alas ! will the cordial never work ?

CELA. O 'tis fine sport to hear a city wife

And a proud lady howl together there :

One cries out : O, this smoke ! the other, this fire !

One curses the day-bed and garden walks,

The other all her husband's customers ;

But in the other place we dance and sing.

*Here she sings.*

My lodging it is on the cold ground,  
 And very hard is my fare,  
 But that which troubles me most, is  
 The unkindness of my dear,  
 Yet still I cry, O, turn love,  
 And I prithee love turn to me,  
 For thou art the man that I long for,  
 And, alack ! what remedy ?

I'll crown thee with a garland of straw then,  
 And I'll marry thee with a rush ring,\*  
 My frozen hopes shall thaw then,  
 And merrily we will sing :  
 O turn to me my dear love,  
 And prithee love turn to me !  
 For thou art the man that alone canst  
 Procure my liberty.

But if thou wilt harden thy heart, still,  
 And be deaf to my pitiful moan,  
 Then I must endure the smart still,  
 And tumble in straw alone,  
 Yet still I cry, O, turn love,  
 And I prithee love turn to me !  
 For thou art the man that alone art  
 The cause of my misery.

*[That done, she lies down and falls asleep.]*

Prov. At last it has prevail'd !  
 Oh ! in mercy Heaven, to-day,  
 Restore her senses or take mine away.

*[Exeunt, bearing Celania out.]*

\* A custom extremely hurtful to the interests of morality appears anciently to have prevailed in England as well as in other countries, of marrying with a rush ring ; chiefly practised, however, by designing men for the purpose of debauching their mistresses, who sometimes were so infatuated, as to believe that this mock ceremony was a real marriage.—*Brand*.

*Enter ARCON.*

ARCON. My niece, whilst she refuses to disclose  
Which she affects, does both to death expose,  
But I've contriv'd a means to end the strife,  
And, saving one, destroy the other's life.  
If by her love their fate cannot be known,  
It shall be soon discover'd by their own ;  
I've sent to try their honour and their love,  
He, who possesses most of both, shall prove  
His own absolver, and who ever shall  
Merit the least will best deserve to fall.

*Enter HERACLIA.*

HERA. Though I was once resolv'd to let 'em  
die,  
The Prince's temper I again will try.  
I then for neither any pity felt,  
But now I find that resolution melt.  
For one of 'em I needs must intercede,  
Yet for the other I alike shou'd plead.

ARCON. She comes ! I'll try her ! Welcome my  
fair niece,  
Come you to bring Philander a release  
Or Theocles ? Which choose you ?

HERA. Sir, I come  
To implore that you would mitigate their doom.

ARCON. My justice and my mercy in me strive,  
Both to destroy and both to keep alive.

HERA. Both to destroy would look like cruelty.

ARCON. In saving both I should too gentle be.

HERA. I'm disoblig'd if you take eithers' life,  
Because their love to me begot their strife. [*Aside.*

ARCON. This intercession must proceed from  
love,

Else so importunate she could not prove.  
Yet then, methinks, she but for one should sue,  
Affection never hovers betwixt two,

I'll try which way her inclination lies,  
If either she affects the other dies.

HERA. Why are you silent, sir? your mercy  
may

Be shown without consulting or delay.

ARCON. My justice bids me neither to respect,  
But when I do on Theocles reflect,  
My justice into mercy does relent.  
To save him I could easily consent.

HERA. Have you forgot Philander's manly looks,  
And with what courage he misfortune brooks?  
Valour enthron'd upon his brow does sit,  
Commanding pity yet disdaining it;  
So brave a spirit who could not forgive?  
By scorning life he more deserves to live.

ARCON. Pardon should to entreating looks be  
shown;

Philander's face presents us threats alone.  
He has no winning feature to allure:  
He has wherewith to kill but not to cure.

HERA. Though killing frowns sit on his fore-  
head now,

He when he pleases can unbend his brow;  
And then his face, which did appear ere while  
All overcast, clears up into a smile.  
His face would make a winter and a spring,  
What his frowns nipt his smiles to life would  
bring.

ARCON. Now I'm a little satisfi'd, I know [*Aside*  
On whom my justice rightly to bestow;  
Poor satisfaction made of grief and joy  
To be instructed whom I may destroy.  
Heraclia! I must needs approve your choice,  
Philander highly does deserve your voice.

HERA. How, sir? [*Starts*

ARCON. His sadness does become him well,  
Pleasure does in his graver aspects dwell.

Theocles then must die.

HERA. Theocles die ?

The man whom you but now extoll'd so high ?  
Your voice exalts his worth before he dies,  
As beasts are garnish'd for a sacrifice :  
How can you, sir, brave Theocles conceive,  
Too good to die, and yet too bad to live.

ARCON. My commendations only were design'd  
To try which way your fancies were inclin'd ;  
And since you do Philander's worth approve,  
Straight Theocles must yield his life and love.

HERA. Shall his bright glories in their east decline,  
And must they set before they fully shine ?

ARCON. Now my distraction's greater than  
before, [Aside.

Hoping to make it less I've made it more ;  
Her fancy's at a loss, and knows not whom  
To choose : 'Tis like a gazing child become,  
Which when two toys alike do please his eye,  
Cannot distinguish but for both does cry.  
Yet she shall see her rival-lovers tried,  
Her kindness, through some blush may be descried.

*Enter POLYNICES, PHILANDER, THEOCLES, and  
guards.*

Polynices ! How find you them inclin'd ?

POLY. Your trial, sir, will best disclose their  
mind ;

According to your orders here they are !

Both alike hope, and both alike despair.

ARCON. The strange affection which in both I  
see,

I can admire, but cannot remedy ;  
Both love her whom you both cannot possess,  
Whilst neither more affects, and neither less,  
Both being kindl'd with such equal fires,



Each to the other's prejudice conspires,  
 Theocles makes Philander's hope in vain.  
 Who equally does Theocles restrain ;  
 My resolution staggers into doubt.

POLYN. The hand of fortune may perhaps find  
 out

The most deserving and whom fates decree  
 To be most happy they by lottery  
 May so reveal as may your doubts remove,  
 Blind chance oft guides in blind intrigues of love.

ARCON. Are you content that fortune shall  
 decide

This intricate dispute ?

PHIL. I'll not be tried

By chance ; fortune has cruel been to me,  
 Which makes me now defy her courtesy.  
 Sir, I have felt her injuries so long,  
 That I presume in this she'd do me wrong :  
 I have so long contemn'd her frowning brow,  
 That for a smile I scorn to court her now.

HERA. Bravely resolv'd !

ARCON. But, Theocles, do you  
 Refuse to trust your cause with fortune too ?

THEO. This lady's beauty, and the judge  
 assign'd,

Both inconsistent are,

Why should a judge so altogether blind  
 Bestow a prize so fair ?

PHIL. We scorn the hands of fortune, and alone  
 Request we may decide it with our own ;  
 Let's fight it out !

THEO. The sword must end the strife, and the  
 same bell

Ring one his wedding and the other's knell.

ARCON. Neither does to his rival yet give place,  
 Nor any index in Heraclia's face  
 Does yet discover which she does affect ;

She knows not which to choose nor to reject.  
Will you then both remit it to her choice,  
And either be contented if her voice  
Elect the other, calmly to resign  
His title ?

PHIL. Calmly, sir ! If she incline  
To Theocles then let her bid me die,  
And willingly I'll on her voice rely.  
Let the same breath bless him, and me destroy,  
'Tis not so much to live as to enjoy.

POLYN. 'Tis bravely spoken !

HERA. His last charming breath  
Has almost won my love by courting death.

ARCON. His words have mov'd her, in her face  
I find

She quickly to Philander will be kind.  
But what says Theocles ?

THEO. I only crave,  
That if she bless Philander with her bed,  
She wou'd in pity bless me with the grave.  
Why should I live after my hopes are dead ?  
If her enliv'ning smile his love shall crown,  
I beg the mercy of some killing frown.  
Let her eyes lighten and destroy me so,  
I shall be happy in the shades below :  
Where in some melancholy cypress grove,  
Transform'd into a ghost, I'll always love,  
As well as ghosts may do, for there I will  
Be blest in courting her idea still.

HERA. I'm lost again !

ARCON. Ha ! she's concern'd ! it was an error then  
To think she lov'd Philander, yet I'll make  
Some farther trial, lest I should mistake.  
Go, call in the men !

POLYN. Royal sir, I shall ! [*Exit Polyn.*]

HERA. What can these be whom he in haste  
does call ?

One of my servants ? What can they design  
By introducing any man of mine ?

*Enter POLYNICES with TWO MEN.*

POLYN. What is't that you of Theocles can  
say ?

I MAN. That he disguis'd himself in mean  
array

To be admitted in the Princess' train,  
Hoping an opportunity to gain  
Of singling out her person, when she shou'd  
Be hunting next within Diana's wood.  
Having resolv'd first to convey her hence  
Then to assault that love by violence :  
Which by his courtship he might well despair  
Of gaining.

PHIL. These, thy black aspersions are  
As false as Theocles to honour true.  
He offer violence ! O Heavens can you  
Permit this blasphemy ? Can you endure  
To see so black a cloud his worth obscure ?  
Which wou'd, but that he does unjustly love,  
So bright appear, as wou'd all envy move.

ARCON. Can you be guilty, sir, of this attempt ?  
THEO. Sir !

PHIL. From such designs I'm sure he is exempt.

ARCON. Will you your rival vindicate ?

PHIL. I must !

Else to his honour I shou'd be unjust.

THEO. Cousin, you are too civil. Let me be  
Judg'd of by circumstance.

HERA. Methinks I see

The brightness of Philander's worth increase,  
Whilst he would clear the worth of Theocles.  
Now my respects more evident will grow :  
The world Philander's equal cannot show.

ARCON. I see she fixes on Philander ; yet

I'll try her somewhat further. Friend, repeat  
What of Philander you but now confess'd.

2 MAN. Philander, sir, deserves not to be bless'd  
With such a lady.

PHIL. Villain!

ARCON. Calm your rage.  
And let your reason passion now assuage,  
Till you have heard him out. Let him proceed!

2 MAN. His glories are all sullied by a deed  
As black as she is fair: for he has shewn  
A cowardice which he will blush to own.

THEO. Detracting villain, could Philander fly  
Each motion of his sword gives thee the lie,  
Whose light'ning took perhaps thy sight away,  
As bats and owls are dazzl'd with the day:  
That sword which brandish'd made all others  
quake,

Blinded thy eye-sight into this mistake.

POLYN. How equally these miracles of men  
Do share in honour!

HERA. I'm lost again!  
O Theocles, a parallel to thee  
Can be produc'd by no chronology.

ARCON. Ha! my confusion then must still re-  
main;

My trials do but more distraction gain.  
They are alike deserving and belov'd,  
But, if perhaps Philander were remov'd,  
On Theocles she then may fix her mind,  
Which is unconstant now, and unconfin'd.  
Polynices! Convey Philander hence.

PHIL. Wherein have I committed more offence  
Than Theocles, that I no longer may  
Have equal happiness by equal stay?

POLYN. Stand not disputing, sir! you must away.

[*Ex. Polyn. with Phil.*]

*Enter PROVOST, CELANIA, LEUCIPPE, CUNOPES, at another door.*

ARCON. Provost, you are welcome ! 'Tis some joy to me  
That such fair weather in your face I see.

PROV. If I appear serener than before,  
It is because kind fortune does restore  
My long lost daughter to me, and to her  
Those wandering senses which distracted were.

HERA. I heard she was return'd, but that which  
you  
Relate of her distraction, never knew.

CELA. You have falsely said  
That I shou'd find Philander here : He's dead !  
Ay me, he's walking in some pleasant shade  
Amongst the ghosts, singing the songs he made  
Concerning love.

PROV. O, where's Philander, sir ?  
She will relapse again, if we defer  
To bring her to him.

ARCON. Some of you make haste,  
To bring Philander back. [*Ex. for Philander.*]

CELA. Now does he through each pleasant  
meadow go,  
And then he walks through all the groves below,  
Where, when his eyes shine brightly through the  
glades,  
The ghosts may walk in groves, but not in shades.

PROV. His speedy presence must her sense re-  
store,  
Or it will farther wander than before.

*Enter POLYNICES, PHILANDER, and Guards.*

CELA. Ha ! Can Philander yet be living ? No,  
He's not above, but I am sure below  
Amongst the blessed spirits, and, at most,  
I do but now behold Philander's ghost.

Alas, why fly you, sir ? can ghosts be coy ?  
Or is't because none e'er can ghosts enjoy ?

HERA. I see ;

Except Philander there's no remedy.

CELA. I'll follow you through every myrtle grove,  
Through all the thickest labyrinths of love,  
As shadows always with the substance move.

PHIL. Madam——

HERA. Celia, I have done you wrong,  
And I have suffer'd by my fault too long.

ASCON. Now I'm well instructed to proceed :  
I see to whom Heraclia is decreed ;  
The controversy I shall soon decide,  
Both now shall live, and both be gratified.  
Here, Theocles, on you I will bestow  
Heraclia.

PHIL. Ha !

THEO. Will she herself say so ?

HERA. Celia, to Philander's love does lay  
So great a claim that I must needs obey ;  
Sir, you have my consent. I cannot defer  
To give myself lest I should injure her.

PHIL. Then I am happy made to that degree,  
That the most fortunate should envy me.

THEO. Must I be to Heraclia lost ?

ARCON. You must,  
Else to Celia you will be unjust.

HERA. I weep when I your obstinacy see,  
And sigh when I remember her. Good sir,  
Permit my tears to quench your flames to me,  
And let my sighs kindle your love to her.

PROV. Her reason has to love a martyr been,  
O, let your pity give it life again !

PHIL. My heart did first Heraclia's captive  
prove,  
To her I am oblig'd in bonds of love.  
Celia gave my person liberty,

To her by honour I should grateful be,  
 I owe myself to both, what shall I do  
 To be to love, and yet to honour, true?

THEO. Cousin, the Princess does herself bestow  
 On me, so that whatsoever debt you say,  
 You, in affection, still to her may owe,  
 You are oblig'd in honour not to pay.

PHIL. 'Tis true—she has forsaken me.

POLYN. You may,  
 Without entrenching on your love, defray  
 The debt you owe to honour, since you see  
 The Princess from the other sets you free.

ARCON. Stand not demurring, sir: give me your  
 hand!

With that I doubt not but I shall command  
 Celania into health. See how her eye  
 Is fix'd on you as on her remedy.

CELA. What do I feel? Can apparitions be  
 So liable to sense?—Or is it he,  
 And living still?

Speak, sir, may we with truth conceive  
 That you still live? I shall your voice believe  
 Though I distrust my senses.

PHIL. I am still  
 The same Philander which you freed.

CELA. And can you love?

PHIL. Ay, there's the question which I knew  
 she'd move.

Know I can love, and since that love does want  
 Growth in Heraclia's bosom I'll transplant  
 It into yours.

CUNO. Mistress, I wish you'd be  
 As pliant and as merciful to me.

LEUC. I am flesh and blood.

CUNO. I would not wed a ghost.

LEUC. I cannot see so good a servant lost.

HERA. Dear Celania! nought greater can ensue

May do this bliss in Theocles and you.

THEO. My admiration and my love contest,  
Which shall out-vie the other in my breast.

PHIL. My quarrel here with Theocles shall end,  
I lose a rival and preserve a friend ;  
Celania does our cause of strife remove,  
We only shall contend which most shall love.

CELA. How much am I to love and fortune  
bound ?

Finding Philander I myself have found.

ARCON. Those senses which excessive grief  
destroys,

May be recovered by excessive joys.

[*Ereunt omnes.*]





**MACBETH.**

*Macbeth, a Tragedy; with all the Alterations, Amendments, Additions, and New Songs, as it is now acted at the Theatre Royal. London, printed for Hen. Herringham, and are to be sold by Jos. Knight and Fra. Saunders at the Blue Anchor, in the Lower Walk of the New Exchange.* 1678. 4to.

*Ib.*, 1687. 4to.

*Ib. As it is now acted at the Queen's Theatre. London, printed for J. Tonson, and sold by John Phillips at the Black Bull, over against the Royal Exchange in Cornhill.* 1710. 4to.

THE Tragedy of "Macbeth," as adapted for representation by D'avenant, "was brought forward with machines for the Witches, with dancing, and with all that singing which still continues to disgrace this admirable tragedy. In this shape it was very successful, and proved a lasting play. It was published in 1674 with all the alterations, amendments, additions, and new songs, as acted at the Duke's Theatre."\* The name of D'avenant does not appear on the title, but Downes expressly attributes it to him; and as it was produced at his Theatre with those scenic additions which had in previous dramas delighted the public, the presumption is that he it was who ventured upon the bold experiment of disfiguring Shakespeare.

The play was reprinted in 1687, 4to, but this has not been noticed in the *Biographia Dramatica*.

A verbatim reprint again of that edition, retaining even the printer's blunders, appeared in 1710, and the following was then the cast of the characters:—

#### MEN.

KING OF SCOTLAND . . . . .	MR KEEN.
MALCOLM . . . . .	MR COREY.
DONALBAIN . . . . .	MR BULLOCK, Junr.
LENOX . . . . .	CAPTAIN GRIFFIN.
MACBETH . . . . .	MR BETTERTON.
BANQUO . . . . .	MR MILLS.
MACDUFF . . . . .	MR WILKS.
SEYMOUR . . . . .	MR HUSBAND.
SEYTON . . . . .	MR BICKERSTAFFE.
BANQUO'S SON . . . . .	MRS B. PORTER.
1 MURDERER . . . . .	MR FAIRBANK.
2 MURDERER . . . . .	MR CROSS.

#### WOMEN.

MACBETH'S LADY . . . . .	MRS KNIGHT.
MACDUFF'S LADY . . . . .	MRS ROGERS.
HECCATE . . . . .	MR JOHNSON.

A waiting Gentlewoman, Witches, Servants, and Attendant .

\* Geneste, Vol. I., p. 139.

There is no decisive evidence of the first performance of Davenant's "Macbeth." Pepys says that on the 5th November 1664 he went "to the Duke's house to see Macbeth, a pretty good play, but admirably acted." \* He did not again return until the 28th of December 1666, when he went to the "Duke's house, and there saw Macbeth most excellently acted, and a most excellent play for variety." † Upon the 7th of January following, he was at the same Theatre, "and saw Macbeth, which, though I saw it lately, yet appears a most excellent play in all respects, but especially in *divertissement*, though it be a deep tragedy; which is a strange perfection in a tragedy, being most proper here and suitable." ‡

These remarks establish that Pepys was greatly gratified with the "*divertissements*," and considered it a "strange perfection" in a deep tragedy—but proper here and suitable. This appears to have been the prevalent opinion at the time.

Betterton originally performed Macbeth; on one occasion, having been taken ill, his part was assigned to a Mr Young, who, according to Pepys, was a bad actor, so much so that when he went § to witness the performance, he says, "what a prejudice it wrought to me against the whole play; and every body else agreed in disliking this fellow." Mrs Pepys was so much displeased that she left the Theatre in disgust, and went home, where her husband found her. It may be suspected that he had been looking too much about him, and that it was the pretty faces of the ladies, and not the bad acting of Young, that was the cause of the lady's anxiety to get away from the theatre.

The last entry in his diary, when he went on a subsequent occasion to the Duke's playhouse once more to see "Macbeth" is amusing. ¶ 21st December 1667,—"The King and Court there; and we sat just under them, and my Lady Castlemain, and close to a woman that comes into the pit, a kind of a loose gossip, that pretends to be like her, and is so, something. And my wife by my troth appeared, I think, as pretty as any of

\* Diary, Vol. II., p. 395.

† Vol. III., p. 372.

‡ Vol. III., p. 367.

§ 16th October 1667.

¶ Vol. V., p. 70.

them, I never thought so much before." "The King and the Duke of York minded me, and smiled upon me, at the handsome woman near me; but it vexed me to see Moll Davies, in the box over the King's and my Lady Castlemain's, look down upon the King and he up to her; and so did my Lady Castlemain once, to see who it was; but when she saw Moll Davies she looked like fire, which troubled me."

Langbaine, who formed one of the audience, when "Macbeth" was reproduced at the Duke's Theatre after D'avenant's death, mentions that "at the acting of this tragedy, on the stage, I saw a real one acted in the pit; I mean the death of Mr Scroop, who received his death's wound from the late Sir Thomas Armstrong, and died presently after he was removed to a house opposite the Theatre in Dorset Garden."

Downes writes thus of "Macbeth," when acted at the Theatre in Dorset Garden:—"The tragedy of Macbeth, altered by Sir William D'avenant, being drest in all its finery, as new cloaths, new scenes, machines, as flyings for the witches, with all the singing and dancing in it (the first composed by Mr Lock, the other by Mr Channel and Mr Joseph Priest), it being all excellently performed, *being in the nature of an opera*, it recomenced double the expence; it proves still a lasting play." *Roscius Anglicanus*, p. 33.

"Macbeth" found its way to Edinburgh, probably brought there by Thomas St. Serfe, or Sydsarf, a son of the Bishop of Orkney,—the only Bishop of the Scotch Episcopalians, who after the restoration, was restored to his original position. Sydsarf was the author of a Comedy taken from the Spanish, called "Tarugo's Wiles," which was acted for three nights in the Theatre at Lincoln's Inn. As it did not meet with the encouragement the author expected, he returned to Scotland, and became the manager of a Theatre in the Canongate, which from its vicinity to the Palace of Holyrood, was very convenient for those living at what was then the court-end of the city of Edinburgh.

Sir John Foulis of Ravelston, Bart., was a gentleman of good family and estate, and moved in the best society, at a period when the Metropolis of Scotland could boast

of having a resident nobility and a society of highly cultivated gentlemen not excelled in any other capital.

Sir John, after the good old fashion of his times, kept a regular note of his expenditure, and his representative, the late excellent Sir James Foulis of Woodhall, Bart., found, in searching through some old boxes of papers, a series of small MS. volumes, neatly written and minute in their entries, so much so that they afforded a curious and interesting picture of the mode of living, amusements, and expenditure of the higher class of gentry towards the latter portion of the seventeenth century.

Among the many entries of the prices paid for visiting the Theatre in which the name of the play is generally withheld, this occurs, March 6, 1682:—

For a box of Anderson's pills,	£1 13 5
Paid for myself, my wife and Christian,	
to see MACBETH acted, and for sweatmeats	
to Lady Collingtoun, Lady Margaret	
M'Kenzie, and others,	£6 2 0

The Lady Collington was Barbara Ainsley, wife of Sir James Foulis of Collington, Baronet, the head of the family.\* Lady Margaret M'Kenzie was eldest daughter of Kenneth, third Earl of Seaforth. She subsequently became the wife of James, second Lord Duffus. The prices paid are in Scots, not sterling money.

The only other dramatic piece of which the name is given in his note books, is under the date of the 21st December 1682.

To see Sir Solomon acted, £1, 9s.

This comedy—the second title of which is “The Cautious Coxcomb,” was printed in London, small 4to, 1671, and was the production of John Caryl of West Grimstead, Sussex, a Roman Catholic gentleman, subsequently secretary to Mary of Modena, the second wife of James II., whose fortunes he followed, and from whom he received the honour of Knighthood. He was one of the St Germain's noblemen, having been created by the exiled monarch, Earl Caryl and Baron Dartford. After the death of his royal master he returned to this

\* He was a Lord of Session in 1661, and Lord Justice-Clerk in 1684.

country, where his honours were not recognised. Pope dedicated to him his beautiful poem of "The Rape of the Lock." He was alive in 1717.\*

Sir John Foulis was the heir of George Bannatyne, the compiler of that venerable volume of early Scottish poetry, which gave the name to the Club, which has done so much and so well for the early literature of the north. Until the year 1828, nothing was known farther about Bannatyne, than that a person of that name was the compiler of the precious miscellany of ancient verses which was called after him. When Sir James Foulis was going through the family papers he found a volume in MS. which he was desirous that the writer of these observations should see, as he could not comprehend what connection there could be between the family of Foulis and that of Bannatyne. Upon examining the MS., the mystery was unravelled. It removed all question as to who the compiler of the far-famed volume was, and established that his only surviving offspring Janet had been married to George Foulis of Ravelston, who thus came to inherit the considerable property of George Bannatyne, as well as his papers and family documents. By the permission of Sir James, to whom the papers and family portraits had come, but not the family estates—the editor had the pleasure of communicating the discovery to the office-bearers of the Bannatyne Club, and a volume was compiled and circulated among the members, under the title of "Memorials of George Bannatyne, MDXLV. MDCVIII." Edinburgh 1829.

Malone† fixes the date of the first production of the revived play in 1663, but gives no authority for this:—

"Davenant's alteration of Macbeth was preferred to our author's Tragedy, from its first exhibition in 1663, for near eighty years."

The death of Davenant, and the cessation of the diary of Pepys so soon thereafter, prevent any satisfactory account being obtained of the subsequent representations of "Macbeth," but there can be little doubt they were not unfrequent, from the fact, that in 1674, the musical

\* Biographia Dramatica, Vol. I., p. 91.

† Historical Account of the English Stage.



portion of this drama—what Pepys calls the “divertissement,” induced Thomas Duffet, who is represented by the author of the *Biographia Dramatica*, as exercising the calling of a “milliner in the new Exchange,” to ridicule “Macbeth” in that year, and the “*Tempest*” in 1675.

Elkanah Settle had written a tragedy called “the Emperor of Morocco,” which had become popular, and excited the envy of the dramatic milliner, who vented his spleen by the production of “the Empress of Morocco. A Farce, acted by his Majesties servants. London: Printed for Simon Neale, at the Sign of the Three Pidgeons in Bedford Street in Covent-Garden, 1674.” There is a portrait of her black Majesty prefixed, and the “scene opens with Morena the apple-woman, Empress of Morocco, discovered sleeping. Thunder and lightning,” &c. The females are represented by males, Morena is allotted to Harria, Laula, the Queen Mother, to Griffin, and Mariamne to Goodman. The piece is very coarse and absurd, and is followed by this epilogue.

“A new fancy, after the old and most surprising way of MACBETH, perform’d with new and costly MACHINES, which were invented and managed by the most ingenious operator, Mr Henry Wright, P. G. Q.” Heccate and Three Witches, “according to the famous mode of Macbeth, commence the most renowned and melodious Song of John Dory, being heard as it were in the Air, sung in parts by Spirits, to raise the expectation, and charm the audience with thoughts sublime, and worthy of that Heroick Scene which follows.” Then the scene opens—“Thunder and lightning is discovered, not behind painted Tiffany to blind and amuse the senses, but openly, by the most excellent way of Mustard-bowl and Salt-Peter.” Three Witches fly over the pit, riding upon besoms. Then Heccate descends over the stage “in a glorious Charriott adorn’d with pictures of Hell and Devils, and made of a large Wicker Basket.”

A strange colloquy ensues, wherein the witches inform their mistress of the mischief they have done, and receive appropriate rewards. Then—

“Enter Two Spirits with brandy burning, which they drink, whilst Heccate and the Witches sing

*To the tune of A Boat, a Boat, &c.*

*Hec. A health, a health, to Mother [reswell],  
From Moor-fields fled to Mill-bank Castle ;  
She puts off a rotten new-rigg’d Vessel,”*

and so on, the remaining verses being of a similar description, relating to several ladies who followed the profession of Mrs Creswell, of whom a portrait is given in Tempest's "Cryes of London."

Heccate thus addresses the audience—

"Bank-side Maulkin thrice has mew'd ! No matter :  
If puss of t'other house will scratch—have at her !  
T'appease your spirits, and keep our farce from harm,  
Of strong ingredients we have powerful charm.

Hail ! hail ! hail ! you less than wits and greater ;  
Hail fop in corner, and the rest now met here,  
Though you'l ne'er be wits, from your loins shall spread  
Diseases that shall reign when you are dead.

Deed is done !

War's begun,

Great Morocoo's lost and won."

She then gives an enumeration of charms for the critics, not precisely adapted for republication. A voice below exclaims, "Huff ! no more !" a "hellish noise" being heard within.

When Heccate is called, thunder and lightning follow. While the witches are flying up she sings—

"The goose and the gander went over the green,  
They flew in the corn that they could not be seen.

*Chorus*—They flew," &c.

A trio by the three witches concludes this strange show.

1.

"Rosemary's green, Rosemary's green !  
Derry, derry down.  
When I am King thou shalt be Queen,  
Derry, derry down.

2.

"If I have gold thou shalt have part,  
Derry, derry down.  
If I have none thou hast my heart,  
Derry, derry down."

The whole ends with verses also called an epilogue, worse in every respect than those just quoted. It may be noticed that Powel, the actor and dramatic author, performed the part of Heccate, and that Harris threw off his regal attire and became the first witch.

The "tune" of "A boat, a boat," is evidently the popular catch yet occasionally sung. This farce is the earliest instance of a travesty of Shakespeare—a species of drama peculiarly suited to the taste of the present times. None of the Shakespeare travesties have much fun about them; *Macbeth* travesty, and it has three different versions, is really abominable; *Rummio and Judy*, 1841, has a dash of odd wit in it; *Hamlet* travesty, by John Poole, 1812, is perhaps the best of the lot. *The Rehearsal* by the Duke of Buckingham, and *The Critic* by Sheridan, are full of wit and point, but are intended to turn into ridicule certain classes of writers, and not to ridicule any particular play. As mock dramas, the "*What d'ye call it*" of Gay, the *Tom Thumb* of Fielding, *The Tailors*, attributed to Foote, the *Chrononhotontologos* and *Dragon of Wantley* of Carey, the *Court of Alexander the Great*, and *Distress upon Distress* of his son, J. Saville Carey, and the *Bombastes Furioso* of Rhodes, have never been surpassed by any modern productions of the kind.

Duffet's travesty of the "Tempest" is still more wretched than his *Macbeth*. The only thing tolerable is the parody upon Ariel's song of "Where the bee sucks," with which most musical persons have become familiar by means of Dr Arne's charming air.

"Where good ale is, there suck I,  
In a cobbler's stall I lie,  
While the watch are passing by,  
Then about the streets I fly,  
After Cullies merrily.  
And I merrily, merrily take off my cloose  
Under the watch and the constable's nose."

Geneste says, this is by far the best thing in the piece,\* and he is probably right; if so, "bad's the best." The lines of Langbaine are appropriate enough.

"The dullest scribblers, some admirers found,  
And the mock Tempest was a while renown'd.  
But this low stuff, the town at last despis'd,  
And scorn'd the folly that they once had priz'd."

Acting, in all probability upon Dr Johnson's opinion,

\* Vol. i. p. 160.

that puppets "were so capable of representing even the plays of Shakspeare, that Macbeth might be performed by them as well as by living actors," a person named Harry Rowe, master of a puppet-show, did for a number of years towards the end of the last century, cause his wooden actors to go through the action of that play, while he repeated the dialogue. He published his own edition of *Macbeth* at York in 1797, 8vo, "with new notes and various emendations," and adorned it with his own portrait. Rowe was born at York in 1726, whither he retired, after the rebellion of 1745, and, until the day of his death in 1800, was known by the appellation of "the York Trumpeter," said to have been conferred upon him in consequence of his having "blown a battle blast" at Culloden, but more likely from the circumstance of his attending with the Sheriff and announcing the entry of the judges into York, twice a-year, by sound of trumpet.

At his decease, the following lines written upon him appeared for the first time in print in Mr Payne Collier's interesting notice of "The origin and progress of Puppet Plays in England," prefixed to "Punch and Judy," published in 8vo, 1828, with illustrations, drawn and engraved by the inimitable Geo. Cruikshank.

"When the great angel blows the judgment trump,  
He also must give Harry Rowe a thump:  
If not, poor Harry never will awake,  
But think it's his own trumpet, by mistake.  
He blew it all his life, with greatest skill,  
And but for want of breath had blown it still."

A notice of the death of Harry Rowe occurs in the monthly obituary of the *European Magazine* for October 1800.

"In the poor-house at York, Harry Rowe. This well-known character was born at York in 1726. At the battle of Culloden in 1746, he was a trumpeter in the Duke of Kingston's Light Horse; and attended the High Sheriffs of Yorkshire as trumpeter at the assizes upwards of forty-five years. He was also the master of a puppet-show, which he for many years exhibited in different parts of the kingdom. There was lately published, under the name of Harry Rowe, the play of Mac-

beth, with annotations, which went through two editions. If we mistake not, however, this was in reality the work of an eminent Physician of York."

Prior to Lord Lytton's bill to regulate theatres, which was passed into an act some thirty years ago, the Theatres Royal in London—Drury Lane, Covent Garden, and the Haymarket—had the right secured to them by Letters Patent, of a monopoly of what was called "the Legitimate Drama," i.e., the power to perform tragedy, comedy, and such other pieces as were regarded as in the higher class of dramatic art, while the performances in the minor theatres, originally confined to *Ballets d'Action*, embracing music, dancing, and dumb show, gradually expanded into melo-drama and broad farce. So long as this monopoly lasted, it was the great ambition of an actor to attain the dignity of being enrolled as a permanent member in one of the royal theatres, the highest of these being Drury Lane. In those days, there was thus brought together, three standing companies of the best actors in the kingdom, capable of performing the best plays, in a style complete in every part; but since free trade in theatricals has been legalised, where we find one or, at most, two good actors at a theatre, the residue of the company are of a class which formerly would not have been tolerated in a barn, and "incapable of nothing else but dumb show and noise."

Mr Elliston, who was, for many years, the presiding genius at the Royal Circus, in St George's Fields, was, in consequence of his theatre being a minor one, debarred from playing the higher characters in the drama, which was his ambition. In order to secure him an opportunity of exhibiting his talents in this direction, Mr J. C. Cross, the author of numerous dramatic pieces, written for the Royal Circus, turned Shakespeare's "Macbeth" into a *Ballet d'Action*, retaining the music and the witches, with several portions of the text, for Macbeth to speak. There are several new scenes introduced, one being a bed-chamber in which Duncan is murdered, while asleep, by Macbeth. The same scene is again shown, after the alarm has been given,—all the principal characters come on, Macbeth stabs the "sleepy

grooms," and a picture of horror and surprise is formed to end the first act. It was titled "the History, Murlers, Life, and Death of Macbeth. A Ballet of music and action, as performed, with enthusiastic applause, to overflowing houses, a number of nights, at the Royal Circus, St George's Fields, London."

The cast of the characters was as follows :—

SCOTCH.—Macbeth, Mr Elliston ; Duncan, King of Scotland, Mr James ; Malcolm (his heir) and Donalbain, his sons, Mr Taylor and Master Hatton ; Macduff, Mr Gomery ; Banquo, Mr Makeen ; Fleance, his son, Miss C. Giroux ; Ross, Mr Cooke ; Seyton, Mr Rivolta ; Lenox, Mr Jefferies ; Physician, Mr Ellar ; Officer, Mr Isaacs ; Chamberlains, Messrs H. Elliston and Mezzia ; Gentlemen, Messrs Day, Thomson, &c. Lady Macbeth, Mrs Hatton ; Lady Macduff, Mrs Makeen ; Gentlewoman, Miss Evans ; Ladies, Mesdames Slader, James, Wilmot, Stacey, &c.

ENGLISH.—Edward the Confessor (King of England), Mr Payne ; Siward (a general), Mr James ; Young Siward, Mr Giroux.

WITCHES, &c.—Weird Sisters, Messrs Johannot, Slader, and J. Taylor ; Hecate, Mr S. Slader ; Choral Witches, Messrs Williamson, J. Williams, Dickinson, Greenard, Burden, Macartey, Tett, Tett, junior, Giroux, &c. ; Mesdames Sarrat, Parkinson, May ; Misses Stubb, Green, Goodchild, Taylor, Two Giroux, &c. Apparitions raised by the Weird sisters, Mr E. James, Master Hosson, and Miss C. Giroux. Sprights, Misses Aducline, Moseley, Hart, O'Brian, and Mortram.

An occasional address, spoken by Mr Elliston, pre-  
faced the piece,—the concluding lines of which are :—

" Faithful to nature and the Drama's law,  
From this great source our promised scenes we draw :  
Macbeth, the regicide Macbeth pourtray—  
His ruthless consort and her direful sway.  
Though not indulg'd with fullest powers of speech  
The poet's object we aspire to reach ;  
The emphatic gesture, eloquence of eye,  
Scenes, music, every energy we try,  
To make your hearts for murdered Banquo melt,  
And feel for Duncan as brave Malcolm felt ;  
To prove we keep our duties full in view,  
And what we must not say, resolve to do ;

Convinc'd that you will deem our zeal sincere,  
Since more by *deeds* than *words* it will appear."

"Every department under the direction and inspection of Mr Elliston.

"Reduced to a Ballet by Mr Cross; the music principally the composition of the late Matthew Locke; the overture by Dr Busby, as well as other introductory music, and performed with the assistance, and under the direction of Mr Sanderson, leader of the band.

"The scenery by Messrs Greenwood, Marshbank, Mortram, Williams, &c.

"The banquet prepared by Mr A. Johnson.

"The dresses executed and designed by Mrs Brett, Mrs Williams, Misses Smith, &c.

"Property-man, Mr C. Sutton, and property-woman, Mrs Freelope.

"The dances by Mr Giroux.

"Scene, principally in Scotland, with the exception of—scenes which are in England. Time, sixteen years at least, and by some historians, twenty-one years.

"The play originally written by the immortal Shakespeare, in 1606, and performed in the reign of James I., founded on the records of Buchanan and Boethius, Scottish Historians.

"The Ballet in three acts."

The frontispieces to the several plays in Pope's Edition of Shakespeare, 10 vols, 12mo, 1728, were executed partly by Lewis du Guernier, while the others are merely reduced copies, by Fourdinier, of those plates, designed and executed, by Edward Kirkall, for Rowe's Edition, 1709, which was the first attempt at illustrating the works of the Bard of Avon.

The absurdity of employing Guernier, a Frenchman, to decorate plays, written in a language which he understood but imperfectly, is amusing enough. In his frontispiece to "The Merry Wives of Windsor," Falstaff figures as a moderate-sized young man, in coat, waistcoat, and flowing peruke of the period, 1728; and one of the phantom kings in Macbeth, in place of a mirror, holds a common wine-glass in his hand, Shakespeare's lines having been taken by the artist in a literal sense:—

" And lo ! the eighth appears,  
Who bears a glass that shows me many more."

It is not credible that D'avenant would condescend to prefix what is called the "Argument" to the present operatic and injudicious perversion of "Macbeth." No edition, so far as can be traced, was printed until after the demise of its reputed interpolator. There was no occasion for it, as the tragedy told its own tale, and required no elucidation. From the beginning to the end it is a tissue of mis-statements. It is singular that no attempt has ever been made to rescue the character of Macbeth from the obloquy that has been so perpetually attached to his name. Sir Arthur Wardour, in the "Antiquary," takes exception to Jonathan Oldbuck's distrust of the imaginative historians of Scotland, and his refuting Hector Boece by some old parchment proving the venerable chronicler to be a romancer.

Modern investigation has done much to sweep away the accumulation of rubbish by which the early history of Scotland has been obscured, and the publications of the literary clubs have materially contributed to this. These associations originated with private noblemen and gentlemen, through whose exertions, and at whose expense, the invaluable chartularies and authentic muniments of the north were made accessible to the historical student ; and amongst the very many benefits conferred on his native country by Sir Walter Scott, not the least was the great interest he took in the formation of the Bannatyne Club, of which he was President until his death. Other clubs followed of a similar description, and of nearly equal benefit to general literature. But the Bannatyne was the first, and we venture to think the most important, from its having been the means of putting beyond the chance of loss nearly all the invaluable chartularies of Scotland.

Wyntoun, in his "Chronicle of Scotland," asserts with truth that the name of Macbeth's wife was Gruoch, and this is put beyond all doubt by an entry in the "Registrum Sancti Andree," one of the most important of the monkish records,\* of a gift to the Culdees of Lochleven of

\* Edinburgh, 1841. The contribution of O. Tyndall Bruce, Esq., of Falkland.



Kyrknes, by MACHBET, the son of Finlach—and GRUOCH, the daughter of Bodhe, REX ET REGINA SCOTORUM.

Boedhe, according to the Irish chronicles, was a son of Kenneth, King of Scotland, and his daughter Gruoch was his heiress, and the rightful heir of the crown.\* Thus her marriage with Macbeth, according to the courtesy of Scotland, vested her claims in her husband.

Malcolm the Second died upon the 25th November 1034, when he was succeeded by his grandson Duncan, the son of Beitoc or Beatrice, by Crinan, Abbot of Dull. Two years before the death of Malcolm—that is to say, in 1032,—Gillacomgau, son of Maelbrigde, Marmor of Moray, was burnt in his own castle, with fifty of his men. He was a married man, and had at least one son, called Lulach, who reigned after the death of Macbeth, as his lawful successor, from August 1057 to 17th March 1057-8. Who was the wife of Gillacomgau? Gruoch, we venture to think—and he was destroyed for the purpose of uniting her to Duncan, by which act her right of succession to the crown would merge in him. To support this supposition Wyntoun may be appealed to. He was keeper of the “Archivum seu Armarium publicum,” of the priory and cathedral church of St Andrew; and as Prior of St Servanus, in the Isle of Lochleven, produced judicially in a certain law-suit, upon the 22d day of December 1413, the veritable register of the charters of St Andrew above referred to.

The Prior of St Serf tells his readers, in his invaluable chronicle, that Macbeth took as his wife “*Dame Gruok*,” the relict of Duncan—

“ And held hyr bathe hys wyff and qweyne,  
As befor than scho had beyne,  
Tyll hys eme qwene lyvand,  
Quhen he wes Kyng wyth crowne ryngmand;  
For lytyll in honowro than had he  
The greys off affynye.  
All thus quhen his eme wes dede  
He succedyt in his stede.” †

Accordingly, Macbeth, despising the degrees of affinity, took Gruoch, the queen of his “eme” Duncan, as his

\* See Preface, by W. F. Skene. Esq., to “The Chronicles of the Picts and Scots.” Edin., 1867, p. cxlvii.

† B. VI., c. xviii.

wife, and they, as has been proved by the St Andrews' register, reigned together as King and Queen of Scotland.

Thus the "Lady" Macbeth of the tragedy had no reality, but was a myth, the creation of the poet. Until the death of Duncan, his widow Gruoch could not have become the wife of his successor.

Neither was Duncan murdered in Macbeth's castle at Inverness, whilst on a friendly visit to his relative, accompanied by a train of courtiers. On the contrary, whilst invading the dominions of which Macbeth was Marmor or Sub-king, he was grievously wounded in an encounter with his kinsman, at a place called Bothergouenan,\* was carried to Elgin, which appears to have been the seat of government of his victor, and died there. His body was removed to Iona, and deposited in the royal sepulchre. This event occurred in the year 1040.

The elevation of Macbeth to the royal dignity, whether as next lawful heir, or in right of his wife, does not seem to have been disputed until the year 1045, when we learn from the annals of Ulster that Duncan's father, Crinan,† the husband of the Princess Beatrice or Beitoc, raised a rebellion against him, but was defeated in battle and slain.

Five years afterwards, that is to say, in 1050, the King of Scotland, taking example by Canute, King of England, visited Rome, where, according to Marianus Scotus, a cotemporary, "*Rex Scottiæ Macbethiad, Romæ argentum pauperibus seminando distribuit.*"

It could hardly be expected that after the death of the defeated monarch his memory should be treated with any respect by his successor, especially if his own title to the throne was more than questionable. Boethius, although carefully recording all sorts of fables calculated to darken the character of Macbeth, is silent on one point on which Andro of Wyntoun dilates at considerable length. He asserts with every appearance of truth, that Malcolm Canmore was the natural son of Duncan. The Prior of St Serf has the reputation of not drawing upon his imagination for his facts, and he never asserts anything as true that he believes to be false. As an instance of this, he mentions the tradition that Mac-

\* Chronicles of the Scots, 302.

† P. 369.

beth was of Satanic origin, but does not give it as his own opinion that such was the case. With him the witches make their appearance *in a dream*. He mentions the trial of Macduff's faith, and the conversation between him and Malcolm, no doubt as he had found it amongst the documents in the "Armorum," or "Awmyr," of which he was the custodian. But when referring to Malcolm Canmore, he asserts *positively* that he was begotten by Duncan, when a youth, upon the daughter of the miller of Forteviot, with whom he had formed an acquaintance whilst hunting in the vicinity of that place.

Nor does the historian stop here, for he says Duncan was so fond of her that there was no saying to what height she might not have risen, but for his death.

"Thus, this Kyng Dunkane dede,  
Hys lemman will wes off gud red ;  
But scho a batward efftyr that  
Till hyr spowayd husband gat,  
And off land in heritage  
A peys till hyr and hyr lynage :  
Efftyr that mony day  
The Batwardy's \* Land that callyd thai."

After reigning seventeen years, his dominions were invaded by an English army, raised by Siward, Earl of Northumberland, and Macbeth was defeated and slain in battle in the year 1059. His remains were deposited beside those of his predecessor in Iona. His step-son, Lulach, was proclaimed his successor, but unable to resist the English army, increased as it would be by the accession of the Scottish malcontents, he after a short resistance was also defeated and slain, and Malcolm Canmore was recognised as King of all Scotland.

The claim of Gruoch to the kingdom has already been shown, but that of Macbeth is by no means clear. It may be conjectured that his connection arose from his mother having been a younger sister of the Princess Beitoc or Beatrice—a connection which, if correct, would make him cousin-german of Duncan. He could hardly be a nephew of Duncan, as he has been called, as this would have made him a direct descendant of Crinan, who it

\* Boatman, or keeper of a boat. See Jamieson, who quotes this passage. Wyntoun, B. VI., c. xv.

cannot be supposed would have taken up arms against his own grandson. But whether this theory be sound, or the reverse,—if we may believe Wyntoun—and his general accuracy has never been questioned—

“ All hys tyme wes gret plente  
 Abowndand bath in land and se ;  
 He was in justice rycht lawchfull,  
 And till hys legis all awfull  
 Quen Leo the Tene was Pape of Rome,  
 As pylgryne to the Curt he come,  
 And in hys almshouse he saw sylver  
 Till all pure folk that had myster,  
 And all tyme oysyd he to wyrk  
 Profytably for Haly Kyrke.”

A monarch who could reign for seventeen years over the Scottish kingdom, during which time it abounded with plenty, both by land and sea ; who was a just ruler, and could leave his kingdom so quiet and contented as to be able to visit Rome as a pilgrim, is a very different monarch from the one painted in the drama.

Having disposed of Malcolm's mother to the boatman, Wyntoun observes that the Empress Maude\* was descended of the Millar “in the first degree,” and the catalogue of Malcolm's descendants thus concludes—

“ Swa Pape and Kyngis cummyne were,  
 As yhe have herd off this Mylnare.”

Whatever truth there is in all this, it is plain that Wyntoun fully believed in the bastardy of Malcolm. It is certainly strange that after Malcolm had got safely on the throne, Donalbain and his younger brother fled from Scotland, one to the Hebrides, and the other to Norway. The former returned to Scotland only to claim the crown after Malcolm's death, which he enjoyed not very long, having been ultimately deposed by his nephew, who, to extinguish his claim, deprived him of his eye-sight, and confined him in a monastery. The fate of the latter is uncertain.

\* The Empress Maude was granddaughter of Malcolm Canmore, his daughter Maheda having been the Queen of Henry I.

# THE PERSONS' NAMES.

KING OF SCOTLAND . . .	MR LEE.
MALCOLM, <i>his Son, Prince of</i> } <i>Cumberland</i> . . .	MR NORRIS.
DONALBAIN . . . . .	MR CADEMAN.
LENOX . . . . .	MR MEDBOURN.
ROSS . . . . .	
ANGUS . . . . .	
MACBETH . . . . .	MR BETTERTON.
BANQUO . . . . .	MR SMITH.
MACDUFF, . . . . .	MR HARRIS.
MONTETH . . . . .	
CATHNESS . . . . .	
SEYMOR AND HIS SON . . .	
SEYTON . . . . .	
DOCTOR . . . . .	
FLEAN, <i>Son to Banquo</i> . . . }	
PORTER, OLD MAN, TWO MUR- }	
DERERS . . . . .	
MACBETH'S WIFE . . .	MRS BETTERTON.
MACDUFF'S WIFE . . .	MRS LONG.
HER SON . . . . .	
WAITING GENTLEWOMEN . .	
GHOST OF BANQUO . . .	MR SANDFORD.
HECATE . . . . .	
THREE WITCHES . . . .	
SERVANTS AND ATTENDANTS	

## THE ARGUMENT.

DUNCAN, King of the Scots, had two principal men, whom he employed in all matters of importance, Macbeth and Banquo. These two, travelling together through a forest, were met by three fayry Witches (Weirds the Scots call them), whereof the first, making obeysance unto Macbeth, saluted him THANE (a title unto which that of Earl afterwards succeeded) OF GLAMIS; the second, THANE OF CAWDOR; and the third, KING OF SCOTLAND. "This is unequal dealing," saith Banquo, "to give my friend all the honours and none unto me." To which one of the Weirds made answer, that he indeed should not be a king, but out of his loins should come a race of kings that should for ever rule the Scots; and having thus said, they all suddenly vanished. Upon their arrival to the Court, Macbeth was immediately created Thane of Glamis; and, not long after, some new service of his requiring new recompence, he was honoured with the title of Thane of Cawdor. Seeing, then, how happily the prediction of the three Weirds fell out in the former, he resolved not to be wanting to himself in fulfilling the third; and, therefore, first he killed the King, and after, by reason of his command among the soldiers and common people, he succeeded in his throne. Being scarce warm in his seat, he called to mind the prediction given to his companion, Banquo, whom, hereupon supposing as his supplanter, he caused to be killed, together with his posterity; Flean, one of his sons, escaped only with no small difficulty into Wales. Freed, as he thought, from all fear of Banquo and

his issue, he built Dunsinan Castle, and made it his ordinary seat ; and afterwards, on some new fears, consulted with certain of his wizards about his future estate, was told by one of them that he should never be overcome till Birnam Wood (being some miles distant) came to Dunsinan Castle ; and by another, that he should never be slain by any man which was born of a woman. Secure, then, as he thought, from all future dangers, he omitted no kind of libidinous cruelty for the space of eighteen years, for so long he tyrannised over Scotland. But having then made up the measure of his iniquities, Macduff, the Governor of Fife, associating to himself some few patriots, and being assisted with ten thousand English, equally hated by the tyrant, and abhorring the tyranny, met in Birnam Wood, and taking every one of them a bough in his hand, the better to keep them from discovery ; marching early in the morning towards Dunsinan Castle, which they took by scalado. Macbeth escaping, was pursued by Macduff, who, having overtaken him, urged him to the combat, to whom the tyrant half in scorn returned this answer : " That he did in vain attempt to kill him, it being his destiny never to be slain by any that was born of woman." " Now then," said Macduff, " is thy fatal end drawing fast upon thee, for I was never born of woman, but violently cut out of my mother's belly ;" which words so daunted the cruel tyrant, though otherwise a valiant man and of great performances, that he was very easily slain, and Malcolm Conner, the true heir, seated in his throne.

# MACBETH.

---

## ACT I. SCENE I.

*Thunder and Lightning.*

*Enter THREE WITCHES.*

1 WITCH. When shall we three meet again ?  
In thunder, lightning, and in rain ?

2 WITCH. When the hurly-burly's done,  
When the battle's lost and won.

3 WITCH. And that will be ere set of sun.

1 WITCH. Where's the place ?

2 WITCH. Upon the heath.

3 WITCH. There we resolve to meet Macbeth.

*[A shriek like an owl.]*

1 WITCH. I come, Gray Malkin.

ALL. Paddock calls!

To us fair weather's foul, and foul is fair.

Come hover through the foggy, filthy air.

*[Ex. Flying.]*

*Enter KING, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, and LENOX,  
with Attendants, meeting SEYTON wounded.*

KING. What aged man is that? if we may guess  
His message by his looks, he can relate the  
Issue of the battle.

MAL. That is the valiant Seyton ;  
Who like a good and hardy soldier fought  
To save my liberty ; hail, worthy friend !



Inform the king in what condition you  
Did leave the battle.

SEY. It was doubtful.

As two spent swimmers, who together cling,  
And choak their art : the merciless Macdonald,—  
Worthy to be a rebel, to which end  
The multiplying villanies of nature  
Swarm'd thick upon him—from the western isles  
With kernes and gallow-glasses was supply'd,  
Whom fortune with her smiles obliged a while ;  
But brave Macbeth, who well deserves that name,  
Did with his frowns put all her smiles to flight ;  
And cut his passage to the rebel's person ;  
Then, having conquer'd him with single force,  
He fixt his head upon our battlements.

KING. O valiant cousin ! worthy gentleman !

SEY. But then this day-break of our victory  
Serv'd but to light us into other dangers,  
That spring from whence our hopes did seem to  
rise ;

Produc'd our hazard : for no sooner had  
The justice of your cause, sir, arm'd with valour,  
Compell'd these nimble kernes to trust their heels,  
But the Norweyan Lord, having expected  
This opportunity, with new supplies,  
Began a fresh assault.

KING. Dismay'd not this our Generals, Macbeth  
and Banquo ?

SEY. Yes, as sparrows eagles ; or as hares do  
lions ;

As flames are heighten'd by access of fuel,  
So did their valours gather strength, by having  
Fresh foes on whom to exercise their swords ;  
Whose thunder still did drown the dying groans  
Of those they slew, which else had been so great,  
They'd frighted all the rest into retreat.  
My spirits faint ; I would relate the wounds

Which their swords made, but my own silence me.

KING. So well thy wounds become thee as thy words,

They're full of honour both. Go, get him surgeons !

[*Ex. Sey. and Attendants.*]

*Enter MACDUFF.*

But who comes there ?

MAL. Noble Macduff !

LEN. What haste looks through his eyes !

DONAL. So should he look, who comes to speak things strange.

MACD. Long live the king !

KING. Whence com'st thou, worthy Thane ?

MACD. From Fife, great King, where the Norwegian banners

Dark'ned the air, and fann'd our people cold.

Norway himself, with infinite supplies,—

Assisted by that most disloyal Thane

Of Cawdor,—long maintained a dismal conflict,

Till brave Macbeth oppos'd his bloody rage

And check'd his haughty spirits, after which

His army fled : Thus shallow streams may flow

Forward with violence a while, but when

They are oppos'd, as fast run back again.

In brief, the victory was ours.

KING. Great happiness !

MACD. And now the Norway King craves composition.

We would not grant the burial of his men,

Until at Colems Inch\* he had disbursed

Great heaps of treasure to our General's use.

KING. No more that Thane of Cawdor shall deceive

Our confidence : Pronounce his present death,

And, with his former title, greet Macbeth.

He has deserv'd it.

\* The Island of Inchcolm.

MACD. Sir! I'll see it done.

KING. What he hath lost, noble Macbeth has  
won. [*Exeunt.*]

*Thunder and Lightning.*

*Enter THREE WITCHES flying.*

1 WITCH. Where hast thou been, sister?

2 WITCH. Killing swine.

3 WITCH. Sister, where thou?

1 WITCH. A sailor's wife had chesnuts in her  
lap,

And mouncht, and mouncht, and mouncht; give  
me, quoth I.

Aroint \* thee, witch, the rump-fed Ronyon cried.

Her husband's to the Baltic gone, master o' th'  
Tiger:

But in a sieve I'll thither sail,

And like a rat without a tail,

I'll do, I'll do, and I will do.

2 WITCH. I'll give thee a wind.

1 WITCH. Thou art kind.

3 WITCH. And I another.

1 WITCH. I myself have all the other,

And then from every port they blow,  
From all the points that seamen know.

I will drain him dry as hay;

Sleep shall neither night nor day

Hang upon his pent-house lid;

My charms shall his repose forbid;

Weary-se'nights, nine times nine,

Shall he dwindle, waste, and pine.

Though his bark cannot be lost,

Yet shall be tempest-tost.

Look what I have!

2 WITCH. Shew me! shew me

\* The text has "anoimt."

1 WITCH. Here, I have a pilot's thumb,  
Wrackt as homeward he did come. [*Drum within.*]

3 WITCH. A drum, a drum !  
Macbeth does come !

1 WITCH. The weyward sisters, hand in hand,  
Posters of the sea and land,  
Thus to go about, about,  
Thrice to thine,

2 WITCH. And thrice to mine,

3 WITCH. And thrice again to make up nine.

2 WITCH. Peace ! the charm's wound up.

*Enter MACBETH and BANQUO, with Attendants.*

MACB. Command, they make a halt upon the  
heath !

So fair and foul a day I have not seen.

BAN. How far is't now to Forres ?——What are  
these

So wither'd, and so wild in their attire,  
That look not like th' earth's inhabitants,  
And yet are on't ? Live you, or are you things  
Crept hither from the lower world to fright  
Th' inhabitants of this ? You seem to know me  
By laying all at once your choppy fingers  
Upon your skinny lips. You should be women,  
And yet your looks forbid me to interpret  
So well of you.

MACB. Speak, if you can ! What are you ?

1 WITCH. All hail, Macbeth ! hail to thee, Thane  
of Glamis !

2 WITCH. All hail Macbeth ! hail to thee, Thane  
of Cawdor !

3 WITCH. All hail Macbeth ! who shall be King  
hereafter.

BAN. Good sir, what makes you start, and seem  
to dread

Events which sound so fair? I' th' name of truth,  
 Are you fantastical, or that indeed *[To the Witches.*  
 Which outwardly you show? My noble partner,  
 You greet with present grace, and strange prediction  
 Of noble fortune and of royal hope,  
 With which he seems surprized; to me you speak  
 not.

If you can look into the seeds of time,  
 And tell which grain will grow, and which will not,  
 Speak then to me, who neither beg your favour,  
 Nor fear your hate.

1 WITCH. Hail!

2 WITCH. Hail!

3 WITCH. Hail!

1 WITCH. Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

2 WITCH. Not so happy, yet much happier.

3 WITCH. Thou shalt get Kings, thou shalt ne'er  
 be one;

So, all hail! Macbeth and Banquo.

1 WITCH. Banquo and Macbeth, all hail!

MACB. Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me  
 more;

By Sinel's death I know I am Thane of Glamis;  
 But how of Cawdor, whilst that Thane yet lives?  
 And, for your promise that I shall be King,  
 'Tis not within the prospect of belief,  
 No more than to be Cawdor. Say from whence  
 You have this strange intelligence? or why,  
 Upon this blasted heath you stop our way  
 With such prophetic greeting? Speak, I charge  
 you! *[Witches vanish.*

Ha! gone?

BAN. The earth has bubbles, like the water;  
 And these are some of them: how soon they are  
 vanish'd!

MACB. Th' are turn'd to air: what seem'd cor-  
 poreal

Is melted into nothing. Would they had stay'd !

BAN. Were such things here as we discours'd  
of now ?

Or have we tasted some infectious herb  
That captivates our reason ?

MACB. Your children shall be Kings.

BAN. You shall be King.

MACB. And Thane of Cawdor too ; went it not  
so ?

BAN. Just to that very tune ; who's here ?

*Enter MACDUFF.*

MACD. Macbeth ! the King has happily receiv'd  
The news of your success ; and when he reads  
Your pers'nal venture in the rebels' fight,  
His wonder and his praises then contend  
Which shall exceed : when he reviews your  
worth,

He finds you in the stout Norweyan ranks,  
Not starting at the images of death  
Made by yourself : each messenger which came,  
Being loaden with the praises of your valour,  
Seem'd proud to speak your glories to the King ;  
Who for an earnest of a greater honour,  
Bade me, from him, to call you Thane of Cawdor ;  
In which addition, hail, most noble Thane !

BAN. What ! can the Devil speak true ?

MACB. The Thane of Cawdor lives !

Why do you dress me in his borrowed robes ?

MACD. 'Tis true, sir ; He who was the Thane  
lives yet,

But under heavy judgment bears that life,  
Which he in justice is condemned to lose.  
Whether he was combin'd with those of Norway,  
Or did assist the rebel privately ;  
Or whether he concurred with both, to cause  
His country's danger, sir, I cannot tell ;

But, treasons capital, confess'd, and prov'd,  
Have overthrown him.

MACB. Glamis, and Thane of Cawdor !  
The greatest is behind. My noble partner,  
Do you not hope your children shall be Kings,  
When those who gave to me the Thane of Cawdor  
Promis'd no less to them ?

BAN. If all be true,  
You have a title to a crown as well  
As to the Thane of Cawdor. It seems strange :  
But many times to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,  
And tempt us with low trifles, that they may  
Betray us in the things of high concern.

MACB. [*Aside.*] Th<sup>r</sup> have told me truth as to the  
name of Cawdor :

That may be prologue to the name of King.  
Less titles should the greater still forerun,  
The morning star doth usher in the sun.  
This strange prediction in as strange a manner  
Deliver'd neither can be good or ill ;  
If ill, 'twould give no earnest of success,  
Beginning in a truth : I'm Thane of Cawdor ;  
If good, why am I then perplext with doubt ?  
My future bliss causes my present fears.  
Fortune, methinks, which rains down honours on  
me,

Seems to rain blood too : Duncan does appear  
Clouded by my increasing glories, but  
These are but dreams.

BAN. Look how my partner's rapt.

MACB. If chance will have me King chance may  
bestow [*Aside.*]

A crown without my stir.

BAN. His honours are surprizes, and resemble  
New garments, which but seldom fit men well  
Unless by help of use.

MACB. Come what come may,  
Patience and time run thro' the roughest day.

BAN. Worthy Macbeth! we wait upon your  
leisure.

MACB. I was reflecting upon past transactions.  
Worthy Macduff, your pains are registered  
Where every day I turn the leaf to read them.  
Let's hasten to the King! we'll think upon

*[To Banquo.]*

These accidents at more convenient time.  
When w' have maturely weigh'd them, we'll impart  
Our mutual judgments to each other's breasts.

BAN. Let it be so,

MACB. Till then, enough. Come, friends!

*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter KING, LENOX, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN,  
ATTENDANTS.*

KING. Is execution done on Cawdor yet?  
Or are they not returned who were employed  
In doing it?

MAL. They are not yet come back;  
But I have spoke with one who saw him die,  
And did report that very frankly he  
Confess'd his treasons, and implor'd your pardon,  
With signs of a sincere and deep repentance.  
He told me nothing in his life became him  
So well as did his leaving it. He died  
As one who had been studied in his death,  
Quitting the dearest thing he ever had,  
As 'twere a worthless trifle.

KING. There's no art  
To find the mind's construction in the face.  
He was a gentleman on whom I built  
An absolute trust.



*Enter MACBETH, BANQUO, and MACDUFF.*

O worthi'st cousin !  
The sin of my ingratitude even now  
Seem'd heavy on me. Thou art so far before,  
That all the wings of recompense are slow  
To overtake thee. Would thou had'st less deserv'd,  
That the proportion both of thanks and payment  
Might have been mine: I've only left to say,  
That thou deserv'st more than I have to pay.

MACB. The service and the loyalty I owe you  
Is a sufficient payment for itself.  
Your Royal part is to receive our duties ;  
Which duties are, sir, to your throne and State,  
Children and servants ; and when we expose  
Our dearest lives to save your interest,  
We do but what we ought.

KING. Y'are welcome hither :  
I have begun to plant thee, and will labour  
Still to advance thy growth. And noble Banquo,  
Who hast no less deserv'd, nor must partake  
Less of our favour, let me here enfold thee,  
And hold thee to my heart.

BAN. There if I grow,  
The harvest is your own.

KING. My joys are now  
Wanton in fullness, and would hide themselves  
In drops of sorrow. Kinsmen, sons, and Thanes,  
And you, whose places are the nearest, know  
We will establish our estate upon  
Our eldest, Malcolm, whom we name hereafter  
The Prince of Cumberland : nor must he wear  
His honours unaccompanied by others,  
But marks of nobleness, like stars shall shine  
On all deservers. Now, we'll hasten hence  
To Inverness ; we'll be your guest, Macbeth,

And there contract a greater debt than that  
Which I already owe you.

MACB. That honour, sir,  
Outspeaks the best expression of my thanks.  
I'll be myself the harbinger, and bless  
My wife with the glad news of your approach.  
I humbly take my leave.

KING. My worthy Cawdor!

*[Macbeth going out, stops and speaks, whilst the  
King talks with Banquo, &c.]*

MACB. The Prince of Cumberland! that is a step  
On which I must fall down, or else o'erleap,  
For in my way it lies. Stars! hide your fires,  
Let no light see my black and deep desires.  
The strange idea of a bloody act  
Does into doubt all my resolves distract.  
My eye shall at my hand connive, the sun  
Himself shall wink when such a deed is done.

*[Exit.]*

KING. True, noble Banquo, he is full of worth,  
And with his commendations I am fed;  
It is a feast to me. Let's after him,  
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:  
He is a matchless kinsman.

*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter LADY MACBETH and LADY MACDUFF;*

*LADY MACBETH having a letter in her hand.*

LA. MACB. Madam, I have observ'd, since you  
came hither,  
You have been still disconsolate. Pray, tell me,  
Are you in perfect health?

LA. MACD. Alas! how can I?  
My Lord, when honour call'd him to the war,  
Took with him half of my divided soul,  
Which, lodging in his bosom, liked so well  
The place, that 'tis not yet return'd.

LA. MACB. Methinks

That should not disorder you ; for, no doubt,  
The brave Macduff left half his soul behind him,  
To make up the defect of yours.

LA. MACD. Alas !

The part transplanted from his breast to mine,  
As 'twere by sympathy, still bore a share  
In all the hazards which the other half  
Incurr'd, and fill'd my bosom up with fears.

LA. MACB. Those fears, methinks, should cease  
now he is safe.

LA. MACD. Ah ! madam, dangers which have  
long prevailed

Upon the fancy ; even when they are dead  
Live in the memory awhile.

LA. MACB. Although his safety has not power  
enough to put

Your doubts to flight, yet the bright glories which  
He gained in battle might dispel these clouds.

LA. MACD. The world mistakes the glories gained  
in war,

Thinking their lustre true ; alas ! they are  
But comets, vapours ! By some men exhal'd  
From others' blood, and kindled in the region  
Of popular applause, in which they live  
Awhile, then vanish : and, the very breath  
Which first inflam'd them, blows them out agen.

LA. MACB. I willingly would read this letter ; but  
Her presence hinders me ; I must divert her.

If you are ill repose may do you good ;  
Y' had best retire ; and try if you can sleep.

LA. MACD. My doubtful thoughts too long have  
kept me waking.

Madam ! I'll take your counsel. [*Ex. La. Macd.*]

LA. MACB. Now I have leisure to peruse this  
letter.

His last brought some imperfect news of things  
Which, in the shape of women, greeted him

In a strange manner. This perhaps may give  
More full intelligence.

*Reads:*—They met me in the day of success; and I have been told they have more in them than mortal knowledge. When I desired to question them further, they made themselves air. Whilst I entertained myself with the wonder of it, came missives from the King, who call'd me Thane of Cawdor, by which title these weyward sisters had saluted me before, and referr'd me to the coming on of time, with Hail King that shalt be. This have I imparted to thee, my dearest partner of greatness, that thou might'st not lose thy right of rejoicing by being ignorant of what is promis'd. Lay it to thy heart, and farewell.

Glamis thou art, and Cawdor, and shalt be  
What thou art promis'd. Yet I fear thy nature  
Has too much of the milk of human kindness,  
To take the nearest way. Thou wouldst be great,  
Thou dost not want ambition, but the ill  
Which should attend it. What thou highly covet'st  
Thou covet'st holily; alas, thou art  
Loth to play false and yet wouldst wrongly win.  
Oh! how irregular are thy desires!  
Thou willingly, great Glamis, wouldst enjoy  
The end without the means. Oh! haste thee hither  
That I may pour my spirits in thy ear,  
And chastise with the valour of my tongue  
Thy too effeminate desires of that  
Which supernatural assistance seems  
To crown thee with.

*Enter SERVANT.*

What may be your news?

MACB. SER. The King comes hither to-night.

L.A. MACB. Thou'rt mad to say it.

Is not thy master with him ? Were this true,  
He would give notice for the preparation.

MACB. SER. So please you, it is true : our  
Thane is coming !

One of my fellows had the speed of him ;  
Who almost dead for breath, had scarcely more  
Than would make up his message.

L.A. MACB. See him well look'd to : he brings  
welcome news.

There would be music in a raven's voice,

[*Exit Servant.*]

Which should but croak the entrance of the King  
Under my battlements. Come, all you spirits  
That wait on mortal thoughts, unsex me here,  
Empty my nature of humanity,  
And fill it up with cruelty ; make thick  
My blood, and stop all passage to remorse,  
That no relapses into mercy may  
Shake my design, nor make it fall before  
'Tis ripened to effect. You murth'ring spirits,—  
Where'er in your sightless substances you wait  
On Nature's mischief—come, and fill my breasts  
With gall instead of milk : make haste, dark night,  
And hide me in a smoke as black as hell,  
That my keen steel see not the wound it makes,  
Nor heav'n peep through the curtains of the dark,  
To cry, hold, hold !

*Enter MACBETH.*

Great Glamis ! worthy Cawdor !  
Greater than both, by the all hail hereafter ;  
Thy letters have transported me beyond  
My present posture, I already feel  
The future in the instant.

MACB. Dearest love,  
Duncan comes here to-night.

LADY. When goes he hence ?

MACB. To-morrow, as he purposes.

LADY. O never

Never may any sun that morrow see.

Your face, my Thane, is as a book, where men

May read strange matters to beguile the time.

Be cheerful, sir, bear welcome in your eye,

Your hand, your tongue ; look like the innocent  
flower,

But be the serpent under't. He that's coming,

Must be provided for ; and you shall put

This night's great business into my despatch,

Which shall to all our future nights and days

Give sovereign command : we will withdraw

And talk on't further. Let your looks be clear :

Your change of count'nance does betoken fear.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter* KING, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, BANQUO,

LENOX, MACDUFF, ATTENDANTS.

KING. This castle has a very pleasant seat ;

The air does sweetly recommend itself

To our delighted senses.

BAN. The guest of summer, and

The temple haunting martin by his choice

Of this place for his mansion, seems to tell us

That here heaven's breath smells pleasantly. No  
window,

Buttress nor place of vantage but this bird

Has made his pendant bed and cradle where

He breeds and haunts. I have observ'd the air,

'Tis delicate.

*Enter* LADY MACBETH.

KING. See, see our honoured hostess !

By loving us some persons cause our trouble,

Which still we thank as love ; herein I teach

You how you should bid us welcome for your pains,  
And thank you for your trouble.

LA. MACB. All our services,  
In every point twice done, would prove but poor  
And single gratitude if weigh'd with these  
Obliging honours which  
Your Majesty confers upon our house.  
For dignities of old and later date,  
Being too poor to pay, we must be still  
Your humble debtors.

MACD. Madam, we are all jointly to-night  
your trouble,  
But I am your trespasser upon another score ;  
My wife, I understand, has in my absence  
Retir'd to you.

LA. MACB. I must thank her : for whilst she  
came to me  
Seeking a cure for her own solitude,  
She brought a remedy to mine. Her fears  
For you have somewhat indisposed her, sir,  
She's now withdrawn to try if she can sleep ;  
When she shall wake, I doubt not but your  
presence  
Will perfectly restore her health.

KING. Where's the Thane of Cawdor ?  
We cours'd him at the heels, and had a purpose  
To be his purveyor ! but he rides well,  
And his great love, sharp as his spur, has brought  
him

Hither before us. Fair and noble lady,  
We are your guests to-night.

LA. MACB. Your servants  
Should make their audit at your pleasure, sir,  
And still return it as their debt.

KING. Give me your hand !  
Conduct me to Macbeth : we love him highly,  
And shall continue our affection to him. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter MACBETH.*

MACB. If it were well when done, then it were well

It were done quickly ; if his death might be  
Without the death of nature in myself,  
And killing my own rest, it would suffice,  
But deeds of this complexion still return  
To plague the doer, and destroy his peace ;  
Yet, let me think ! he's here in double trust.  
First, as I am his kinsman, and his subject,  
Strong both against the deed ; then as his host  
Who should against this murderer shut the door,  
Not bare the sword myself. Besides, this Duncan  
Has borne his faculties so meek, and been  
So clear in his great office, that his virtues,  
Like angels, plead against so black a deed :  
Vaulting ambition ! thou o'er-leap'st thyself  
To fall upon another. Now, what news ?

*Enter L. MACBETH.*

LA. MACB. H' has almost supp'd ! Why have  
you left the chamber ?

MACB. Has he inquired for me ?

LA. MACB. You know he has !

MACB. We will proceed no farther in this  
business :

H' has honoured me of late, and I have bought  
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,  
Which should be worn now in their newest gloss,  
Not cast aside so soon.

LA. MACB. Was the hope drunk  
Wherein you dressed yourself ? has it slept since ?  
And wakes it now to look so pale and fearful  
At what it wisht so freely ? Can you fear  
To be the same in your own act and valour,  
As in desire you are ? Would you enjoy



What you repute the ornament of life,  
 And live a coward in your own esteem ?  
 You dare not venture on the thing you wish,  
 But still would be in tame expectance of it.

MACB. I prithee, peace ! I dare do all that may  
 Become a man, he who dares more is none.

LA. MACB. What beast then made you break this  
 enterprize

To me ? when you did that you were a man :  
 Nay, to be more than what you were, you would  
 Be so much more the man. Nor time nor place  
 Did then adhere, and yet you wish'd for both ;  
 And now th' have made themselves how you  
 betray

Your cowardice ! I've given suck, and know  
 How tender 'tis to love the babe that milks me ;  
 I would, whilst it was smiling in my face,  
 Have pluckt my nipple from his boneless gums,  
 And dasht the brains out, had I so resolved  
 As you have done for this.

MACB. If we should fail :—

LA. MACB. How fail ?—

Bring but your courage to the fatal place,  
 And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep,  
 To which the pains of this day's journey will  
 Soundly invite him, his two chamberlains  
 I will with wine and wassel so convince,  
 That memory, the sentry of the brain,  
 Shall be a fume ; and the receipt of reason,  
 A limbeck only. When, in swinish sleep,  
 Their natures shall lie drench'd, as in their death,  
 What cannot you and I perform upon  
 His spongy officers ? we'll make them bear  
 The guilt of our black deed.

MACB. Bring forth men-children only !  
 For thy undaunted temper should produce  
 Nothing but males. But yet when we have mark'd

Those of his chamber, whilst they are asleep,  
With Duncan's blood, and us'd their very daggers;  
I fear it will not be, with ease, believ'd  
That they have done't.

LA. MACB. Who dares believe it otherwise,  
As we shall make our griefs and clamours loud  
After his death?

MACB. I'm settled, and will stretch up  
Each fainting sinew to this bloody act.  
Come, let's delude the time with fairest show,  
Feign'd looks must hide what the false heart does  
know.

---

ACT II. SCENE I.

*Enter BANQUO and FLEAN.*

BANQUO. How goes the night, boy?

FLEAN. I have not heard the clock,  
But the moon is down.

BAN. And she goes down at twelve.

FLEAN. I take't 'tis late, sir. [*Ex. Flean.*]

BAN. An heavy summons lies like lead upon me;  
Nature would have me sleep, and yet I fain would  
wake.

Merciful powers restrain me in these cursed  
thoughts

That thus disturb my rest.

*Enter MACBETH, and Servant.*

Who's there?

MACB. A friend!

BAN. What, sir, not yet at rest? The King's  
abed!

He has been to-night in an unusual pleasure.

He to your servants has been bountiful,  
And with this diamond he greets your wife  
By the obliging name of most kind hostess.

MACB. The King, taking us unprepar'd, restrain'd  
our power  
Of serving him, which else should have wrought  
more free.

BAN. All's well!  
I dream'd last night of the three weyward sisters.  
To you they have shewn some truth.

MACB. I think not of them;  
Yet when we can intreat an hour or two,  
We'll spend it in some wood upon that business.

BAN. At your kindest leisure.

MACB. If, when the prophecy begins to look like  
truth,  
You will adhere to me, it shall make honour for  
you.

BAN. So I lose none in seeking to augment it,  
but still  
Keeping my bosom free, and my allegiances dear,  
I shall be counsell'd.

MACB. Good repose the while!

BAN. The like to your, sir! [*Ex. Ban.*]

MACB. Go, bid your mistress, when she is  
undrest,  
To strike the closet bell, and I'll go to bed.  
Is this a dagger which I see before me?  
The hilt draws towards my hand; come, let me  
grasp thee!

I have thee not, and yet I see thee still;  
Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible  
To feeling as to sight? Or, art thou but  
A dagger of the mind, a false creation  
Proceeding from the brain, oppress'd with heat?  
My eyes are made the fools of th' other senses;  
Or else worth all the rest. I see thee still,

And on thy blade are stains of reeking blood.  
 It is the bloody business that thus  
 Informs my eye-sight ; now, to half the world  
 Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams infect  
 The health of sleep : now witchcraft celebrates  
 Pale Hecate's offerings : now murder is  
 All arm'd by his night's centinel, the wolf,  
 Whose howling seems the watchword to the dead.  
 But whilst I talk he lives ; hark, I am summon'd !  
 O Duncan, hear it not ! for 'tis a bell  
 That rings my coronation, and thy knell. [*Exit.*]

*Enter* LADY MACBETH.

LA. MACB. That which made them drunk has  
 made me bold ;  
 What has quenched them hath given new fire to  
 me.  
 Hark ! oh, it was the owl that shriek'd ;  
 The fatal bellman that oft bids good night  
 To dying men. He is about it ; the doors are open !  
 And, whilst the surfeited grooms neglect their  
 charges for sleep,  
 Nature and death are now contending in them.

*Enter* MACBETH.

MACB. Who's there ?

LA. MACB. Alas ! I am afraid they are awak'd,  
 And 'tis not done ! The attempt without the deed  
 Would ruin us. I laid the daggers ready ;  
 He could not miss them ; and had he not resembl'd  
 My father, as he slept, I would have done't.  
 My husband ?

MACB. I have done the deed ! did'st thou not  
 hear a noise ?

LA. MACB. I heard the owl's scream, and the  
 cricket's cry,  
 Did not you speak ?

MACB. When?

LA. MACB. Now.

MACB. Who lies i' th' anti-chamber?

LA. MACB. Donalbain.

MACB. This is a dismal sight!

LA. MACB. A foolish thought to say a dismal sight.

MACB. There is one did laugh as he securely slept,

And one cried murder, that they wak'd each other.  
I stood and heard them; but they said their prayers

And then address themselves to sleep again.

LA. MACB. There are two lodg'd together.

MACB. One cried, heaven bless us! the other said,  
Amen!

As they had seen me with these hangman's hands;  
Silenc'd with fear, I could not say Amen!

When they did say, heaven bless us!

LA. MACB. Consider it not so deeply.

MACB. But wherefore could not I pronounce  
Amen?

I had most need of blessing, and Amen  
Stuck in my throat.

LA. MACB. These deeds should be forgot as soon  
as done,

Lest they distract the doer.

MACB. Methoughts I heard a noise cry, sleep no  
more;

Macbeth has murder'd sleep, the innocent sleep;  
Sleep, that locks up the senses from their care;  
The death of each day's life, tir'd labours bath,  
Balm of hurt minds, great nature's second course,  
Chief nourisher in life's feast.

LA. MACB. What do you mean?

MACB. Still it cried, sleep no more, to all the  
house.

Glamis hath murder'd sleep, and therefore Cawdor  
Shall sleep no more ; Macbeth shall sleep no more !

LA. MACB. Why do you dream thus ? go, get  
some water

And cleanse this filthy witness from your hands !  
Why did you bring the daggers from the place ?  
They must be there ! go, carry them ! and stain  
The sleepy grooms with blood.

MACB. I'll go no more ;  
I am afraid to think what I have done.  
What then with looking on it shall I do ?

LA. MACB. Give me the daggers ! the sleeping  
and the dead

Are but as pictures ; 'tis the eye of childhood  
That fears a painted devil. With his blood  
I'll stain the faces of the grooms ; by that  
It will appear their guilt.

[*Ex. La. Macbeth.*  
[*Knock within.*

MACB. What knocking's that ?  
How is't with me when every noise affrights  
me ?

What hands are here ! Can the sea afford  
Water enough to wash away the stains ?  
No, they would sooner add a tincture to  
The sea, and turn the green into a red.

*Enter LADY MACBETH.*

LA. MACB. My hands are of your colour, but  
I scorn

To wear a heart so white. Hark ! [*Knock.*  
I hear a knocking at the gate. To your chamber !  
A little water clears us of this deed.  
Your fear has left you unmann'd ; heark, more  
knocking !

Get on your gown, lest occasions call us  
And shew us to be watchers ; be not lost  
So poorly in your thoughts. [*Exit.*

MACB. Disguis'd in blood, I scarce can find my way.  
Wake Duncan with this knocking! wou'd thou could'st. *[Exit.]*

*Enter LENOX, and Macbeth's Servant.*

LEN. You sleep soundly that so much knocking  
Could not wake you.

SERV. Labour by day causes rest by night.

*Enter MACDUFF.*

LEN. See, the noble Macduff!  
Good morrow, my lord! have you observ'd  
How great a mist does now possess the air?  
It makes me doubt whether't be day or night.

MACD. Rising this morning early, I went to look  
out of my  
Window, and I cou'd scarce see farther than my  
breath;  
The darkness of the night brought but few objects  
To our eyes, but many to our ears.  
Strange claps, and creekings of the doors were  
heard;  
The skriech-owl with his screams seem'd to foretel  
Some deed more black than night.

*Enter MACBETH.*

MACD. Is the King stirring?

MACB. Not yet.

MACD. He did command me to attend him early:  
I have almost slip'd the hour.

MACB. I'll bring you to him.

MACD. I know this is a joyful trouble to you.

MACB. The labour we delight in gives [no pain.]  
That door will bring you to him.

MACD. I'll make bold to call, for 'tis my limited  
service. *[Exit.]*

LEN. Goes the King hence to-day ?

MACB. So he designs.

LEN. The night has been unruly ;  
Where we lay, our chimneys were blown down ;  
And, as they say, terrible groanings were heard i'  
th' air,  
Strange screams of death, which seem'd to prophecy  
More strange events, fill'd divers,  
Some say the earth shook.

MACB. 'Twas a rough night !

LEN. My young remembrance cannot recollect  
its fellow.

*Enter MACDUFF.*

MACD. Oh horror ! horror ! horror !  
Which no heart can conceive nor tongue can utter.

MACB. } What's the matter ?  
LEN. }

MACD. Horror has done its worst :  
Most sacrilegious murder has broke open  
The Lord's anointed temple, and stole thence  
The life o' th' building.

MACB. What is't you say ? The life ?

LEN. Meaning his Majesty.

MACD. Approach the chamber, and behold the  
sight,

Enough to turn spectators into stone.

I cannot speak ! see, and then speak yourselves.

Ring the alarum-bell ! awake, awake !

*[Ex. Macb. and Len.]*

Murder, treason ! Banquo, Malcolm, and Donal-  
bain,

Shake off your downy sleep, death's counterfeit,

And look on death itself ; up, up, and see !

As from your graves rise up, and walk like spirits

To countenance this horror. Ring the bell !

*[Bell rings.]*



*Enter* LADY MACBETH.

LA. MACB. What's the business, that at this  
dead of night

You alarm us from our rest ?

MACD. O Madam !

'Tis not for you to hear what I can speak ;

The repetition in a woman's ear

Would do another murder.

*Enter* BANQUO.

Oh Banquo, Banquo, our royal master's murder'd !

LA. MACB. Ah me ! In our house ?

BANQ. The deed's too cruel anywhere, Macduff ;

Oh that you could but contradict yourself,

And say it is not true.

*Enter* MACBETH and LENOX.

MACB. Had I but died an hour before this  
chance,

I had liv'd a blessed time ; for, from this instant,

There's nothing in't worth a good man's care,

All is but toys, renown and grace are dead.

*Enter* MALCOLM and DONALBAIN.

DONAL. What is amiss ?

MACB. You are, and do not know't ;

The spring, the head, the fountain of your blood  
Is stopped ; the very source of it is stopp'd.

MACD. Your royal father's murder'd.

MALC. Murdered ! by whom ?

LEN. Those of his chamber, as it seem'd had  
don't ;

Their hands and faces were all stain'd with blood :

So were their daggers, which we found unwip'd,

Upon their pillows. Why was the life of one,

So much above the best of men, intrusted

To the hands of two, so much below  
The worst of beasts?

MACB. Then I repent me I so rashly kill'd 'em.

MACD. Why did you so?

MACB. Who can be prudent and amaz'd together?  
Loyal and neutral in a moment? No man.  
Th' expedition of my violent love  
Outran my pausing reason; I saw Duncan  
Whose gaping wounds look'd like a breach in  
nature,

Where ruin enter'd there. I saw the murderers  
Steep'd in the colours of their trade, their daggers,  
Being yet unwip'd, seem'd to own the deed,  
And call for vengeance; who could then refrain,  
That had a heart to love; and in that heart  
Courage to manifest his affection?

LA. MACB. Oh, Oh, Oh! *[Faints.*

MACD. Look to the lady.

MALC. Why are we silent now, that have so large  
An argument for sorrow?

DON. What should be spoken here, where our  
fate may rush

Suddenly upon us, and as if it lay  
Hid in some corner; make our death succeed  
The ruin of our father ere we are aware?

MACD. I find this place too public for true  
sorrow;

Let us retire and mourn; but first  
Guarded by virtue, I am resolv'd to find  
The utmost of this business.

BANQ. And I.

MACB. And all.

Let all of us take manly resolution;  
And two hours hence meet together in the hall,  
To question this most bloody fact.

BANQ. We shall be ready, sir.

*[Ex. all but Malc. and Donal.]*

MALC. What will you do?  
 Let's not consort with them:  
 To shew an unfelt sorrow is an office  
 Which false men do with ease.  
 I'll to England.

DONAL. To Ireland I'm resolv'd to steer my  
 course;  
 Our separated fortune may protect our persons.  
 Where we are daggers lie hid under men's smiles,  
 And the nearer some men are allied to our blood,  
 The more I fear they seek to shed it.

MALC. This murderous shaft that's shot  
 Hath not yet lighted; and our safest way  
 Is to avoid the aim; then let's to horse,  
 And use no ceremony in taking leave of any.  
[*Exeunt*

#### SCENE IV.

*Enter LENOX and SEYTON.*

SEYTON. I can remember well  
 Within the compass of which time I've seen  
 Hours dreadful and things strange, but this one night  
 Has made that knowledge void.

LEN. Thou see'st the heavens, as troubled with  
 man's act  
 Threatn'd this bloody day; by th' hour 'tis day,  
 And yet dark night does cover all the sky,  
 As if it had quite blotted out the sun.  
 Its night's predominance, or the day's shame  
 Makes darkness thus usurp the place of light.

SEY. 'Tis strange and unnatural,  
 Even like the deed that's done; on Tuesday last,  
 A falcon tow'ring in her height of pride  
 Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at, and kill'd.

LEN. And Duncan's horses which before were  
 tame,

Did, on a sudden, change their gentle natures  
And became wild ; they broke out of their stables,  
As if they would make war with mankind.

SEY. 'Tis said they eat each other.

LEN. They did so,  
To th' amazement of those eyes that saw it.

*Enter MACDUFF.*

Here comes the good Macduff.

How goes the world, sir, now ?

LEN. Is't known who did this more than bloody  
deed ?

MACD. Those that Macbeth hath slain are most  
suspected.

LEN. Alas, what good could they pretend ?

MACD. It is suppos'd they were suborn'd.

Malcolm and Donalbain, the King's two sons,  
Are stol'n away from court,  
Which puts upon them suspicion of the deed.

LEN. Unnatural still !

Could their ambition prompt them to destroy  
The means of their own life ?

MACD. You are free to judge  
Of their deportment as you please ; but most  
Men think 'em guilty.

LEN. Then 'tis most like the sovereignty will fall  
Upon Macbeth.

MACD. He is already nam'd, and gone to Scone  
To be invested.

LEN. Where's Duncan's body ?

MACD. Carried to Colmehill.\*

The sacred storehouse of his predecessors.

LEN. Will you to Scone ?

MACD. No, cousin, I'll to Fife !  
My wife and children frighted at the alarm

\* I-colmekill, otherwise Iona.

Of this sad news have hither led the way,  
 And I'll follow them : may the King you go  
 To see invested, prove as great and good  
 As Duncan was ; but I'm in doubt of it,  
 New robes ne'er as the old so easy fit. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE, AN HEATH.

*Enter* LADY MACDUFF, MAID, *and* SERVANT.

LA. MACD. Art sure this is the place my lord  
 appointed  
 Us to meet him ?

SERV. This is the entrance o' th' heath ; and here  
 He order'd me to attend him with the chariot.

LA. MACD. How fondly did my lord conceive  
 that we

Should shun the place of danger by our flight  
 From Everness ? \* The darkness of the day  
 Makes the heath seem the gloomy walks of death.  
 We are in danger still ; they, who dare here  
 Trust Providence, may trust it anywhere.

MAID. But this place, madam, is more free from  
 terror :

Last night, methoughts, I heard a dismal noise  
 Of shrieks and groanings in the air.

LA. MACD. 'Tis true this is a place of greater  
 silence ;

Not so much troubled with the groans of those  
 That die, nor with the outcries of the living.

MAID. Yes. I have heard stories, how some men  
 Have in such lonely places been affrighted  
 With dreadful shapes and noises. [*Macduff hollows.*]

LA. MACD. But hark, my lord sure hollows ;  
 'Tis he, answer him quickly.

SERV. Illo, Ho, Ho, Ho !

\* Inverness.

*Enter MACDUFF.*

LA. MACD. Now I begin to see him. Are you  
a-foot  
My Lord ?

MACD. Knowing the way to be both short and  
easy,  
And that the chariot did attend me here,  
I have adventur'd. Where are our children ?

LA. MACD. They are securely sleeping in the  
chariot.

*First Song by the Witches.\**

1 WITCH. Speak, sister, speak ! is the deed done ?

2 WITCH. Long ago, long ago ;  
Above twelve glasses since have run.

3 WITCH. Ill deeds are seldom slow :  
Nor single ; following crimes on former wait,  
The worst of creatures fastest propagate.  
Many more murders must this one ensue,  
As if in death were propagation too.

2 WITCH. He will.

1 WITCH. He shall.

3 WITCH. He must spill much more blood :  
And become worse to make his title good.

1 WITCH. Now, let's dance.

2 WITCH. Agreed.

3 WITCH. Agreed.

4 WITCH. Agreed !

*Chorus.*

We should rejoice when good kings bleed,  
When cattle die about we go,  
What then when monarchs perish should we do ?

MACD. What can this be ?

\* It is presumed that this concerted piece is performed without.

LA. MACD. This is most strange ! but why seem  
you afraid ?

Can you be capable of fears, who have  
So often caus'd it in your enemies ?

MACD. It was an hellish song ! I cannot dread  
Aught that is mortal ; but this is something more.

*Second Song.\**

Let's have a dance upon the heath,  
We gain more life by Duncan's death.  
Sometimes like brinded cats we show  
Having no music but our mew,  
Sometimes we dance in some old mill,  
Upon the hopper, stones, and wheel,  
To some old saw, or bardish rhyme  
Where still the mill clack does keep time.  
Sometimes about an hollow tree,  
Around, around, around, dance we.  
Thither the chirping cricket comes,  
And beetle singing drowsy luma.  
Sometimes we dance o'er fens and furs,  
To howls of wolves, and barks of curs.  
And when with none of these we meet,  
We dance to the echoes of our feet.  
At the night raven's dismal voice,  
Whilst others tremble, we rejoice ;  
And nimbly, nimbly dance we still  
To th' echoes from an hollow hill.

MACD. I am glad you are not afraid.

LA. MACD. I would not willingly to fear submit ;  
None can fear ill but those that merit it.

MACD. Am I made bold by her ? How strong  
a guard

Is innocence ! If any one would be  
Reputed valiant, let him learn of you ;  
Virtue both courage is, and safety too.

[*A dance of Witches.*

\* Also without.

*Enter Two WITCHES.*

MACD. These seem foul spirits ; I'll speak to 'em.  
 If you can anything by more than nature know,  
 You may in these prodigious times foretell  
 Some ill we may avoid.

1 WITCH. Saving thy blood will cause it to be  
 shed

2 WITCH. He'll bleed by thee, by whom thou  
 first hast bled.

3 WITCH. Thy wife shall, shunning danger,  
 dangers find,

And fatal be to whom she most is kind. [*Ex. Witches.*]

LA. MACD. Why are you alter'd, sir ? be not  
 thoughtful ;

The messengers of darkness never spake

To men but to deceive them.

MACD. Their words seem to foretell some dire  
 predictions.

LA. MACD. He that believes ill news from such  
 as these

Deserves to find it true. Their words are like

Their shape ; nothing but fiction.

Let's hasten to our journey !

MACD. I'll take your counsel, for to permit  
 Such thoughts upon our memories to dwell,  
 Will make our minds the registers of hell.

[*Exeunt Omnes.*]

## ACT III. SCENE I.

*Enter BANQUO.*

BAN. Thou hast it now, King, Cawdor, Glamis,  
 all,

As the three sisters promis'd ; but I fear  
 Thou play'dst most foully for't ; yet it was said.



It should not stand in thy posterity :  
But that myself should be the root and father  
Of many Kings ; they told the truth.  
Why, since their promise was made good to thee,  
May they not be my oracles as well ?

*Enter MACBETH, LENOX, and Attendants.*

MACB. Here's our chief guest. If he had been  
forgotten,  
It had been want of music to our feast.  
To-night we hold a solemn supper, sir,  
And all request your presence.

BAN. Your Majesty lays your command on me,  
To which my duty is to obey.

MACB. Ride you this afternoon ?

BAN. Yes, Royal sir.

MACB. We should have else desired your good  
advice,  
Which still hath been both grave and prosperous,  
In this day's council ; but we'll take to-morrow.  
Is't far you ride ?

BAN. As far, great sir, as will take up the time ;  
Go not my horse the better,  
I must become a borrower of the night,  
For a dark hour or two.

MACB. Fail not our feast !

BAN. My Lord, I shall not.

MACB. We hear our bloody cousins are bestow'd  
In England and in Ireland ; not confessing  
Their cruel parricide ; filling their hearers  
With strange invention. But of that to-morrow.  
Goes your son with you ?

MACD. He does, and our time now calls upon us.

MACB. I wish your horses swift and sure of foot.  
Farewell. [*Ex. Banquo.*]

Let every man be master of his time,  
Till seven at night ; to make society

The more welcome, we will ourselves withdraw,  
And be alone till supper. [*Ex. Lords.*

Macduff departed frowningly ; perhaps,  
He is grown jealous ; he and Banquo must  
Embrace the same fate.

Do those men attend our pleasure ?

LEN. They do, and wait without.

MACB. Bring them before us ! [*Ex. Servant.*

I am no King till I am safely so :

My fears stick deep in Banquo's successors ;  
And in his Royalty of nature reigns that  
Which would be fear'd. He dares do much ;  
And to that dauntless temper of his mind,  
He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour  
To act in safety. Under him  
My genius is rebuked ; he chid the sisters  
When first they put the name of King upon me,  
And bade them speak to him. Then prophet-like  
They hail'd him father to a line of Kings.  
Upon my head they placed a fruitless crown,  
And put a barren sceptre in my hand,  
Thence to be wrested by another's race ;  
No son of mine succeeding : if't be so,  
For Banquo's issue I have stain'd my soul  
For them : the gracious Duncan, I have murder'd ;  
Rather than so I will attempt yet farther,  
And blot out by their blood, whate'er  
Is written of them in the book of fate.

*Enter SERVANT and Two MURDERERS.*

Wait you without, and stay there till we call !

[*Ex. Servant.*

Was it not yesterday we spoke together ?

1 MURTH. It was, so please your Highness.

MACB. And have you since consider'd what I  
told you,  
How it was Banquo, who in former times

Held you so much in slavery ;  
 Whilst you were guided to suspect my innocence ?  
 This I made good to you in your last conference ;  
 How you were borna \* in hand, how crost,  
 The instruments, who wrought with them—

2 MUR. You made it known to us.

MACB. I did so; and now let me reason with you;  
 Do you find your patience so predominant  
 In your nature  
 As tamely to remit those injuries ?  
 Are you so gospell'd to pray for this good man,  
 And for his issue, whose heavy hand  
 Hath bow'd to the grave and beggar'd  
 Yours for ever ?

1 MUR. We are men, my liege.

MACB. Ay, in the catalogue, you go for men ;  
 As hounds and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels, curs,  
 Shoughs, water-rugs, and demi-wolves, are all  
 Call'd by the name of dogs ; the list of which  
 Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle,  
 The housekeeper, the hunter, every one  
 According to the gift which bounteous nature  
 Hath bestow'd on him ; and so of men.  
 Now, if you have a station in the list,  
 Tho' in th' worst rank of manhood, say't,  
 And I will put that business in your bosoms  
 Which, if perform'd, will rid you of your enemy,  
 And will endear you to the love of us.

2 MUR. I am one, my liege,  
 Whom the vile blows and malice of the age  
 Hath so incens'd that I care not what I do  
 To spite the world.

1 MUR. And I another,  
 So weary with disasters and so inflicted by fortune  
 That I would set my life on any chance  
 To mend it or to lose it.

\* Burnt.

MACB. Both of you know Banquo was your enemy.

2 MUR. True, my lord.

MACB. So is he mine ; and though I could  
With open power take him from my sight,  
And bid my will avouch it, yet I must not ;  
For certain friends that are both his and mine,  
Whose loves I may not hazard, would ill  
Resent a public process, and thence it is  
That I do your assistance crave, to mask  
The business from the common eye.

2 MUR. We shall, my lord, perform what you  
command us.

1 MUR. Though our lives —

MACB. Your spirits shine through you.  
Within this hour at most  
I will advise you where to plant yourselves ;  
For it must be done to-night ;  
And something from the palace ; always remem-  
ber'd

That you keep secrecy with the prescribed father.  
Fleance, his son, too, keeps him company ;  
Whose absence is no less material to me  
Than that of Banquo's : he, too, must embrace the  
fate

Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart !

BOTH MUR. We are resolv'd, my liege.

MACB. I'll call upon you straight. [*Ex. Mur.*  
Now, Banquo, if thy soul can in her flight  
Find heaven, thy happiness begins to-night. [*Exit.*

*Enter MACDUFF and LADY MACDUFF.*

MACD. It must be so. Great Duncan's bloody  
death  
Can have no other author but Macbeth.  
His dagger now is to a sceptre grown ;  
From Duncan's grave he has deriv'd his throne.

LA. MACD. Ambition urged him to that bloody deed :

May you be never by ambition led ;  
 Forbid it heav'n, that in revenge you should  
 Follow a copy that is writ in blood.

MACD. From Duncan's grave methinks I hear a groan

That calls aloud for justice.

LA. MACD. If the throne  
 Was by Macbeth ill gain'd, Heaven may,  
 Without your sword, sufficient vengeance pay.  
 Usurpers' lives have but a short extent ;  
 Nothing lives long in a strange element.

MACD. My country's dangers call for my defence

Against the bloody tyrant's violence.

LA. MACD. I am afraid you have some other end  
 Than merely Scotland's freedom to defend.  
 You'd raise yourself whilst you would him dethrone,  
 And shake his greatness to confirm your own.  
 That purpose will appear, when rightly scann'd,  
 But usurpation at the second hand.  
 Good sir, recall your thoughts !

MACD. What if I should  
 Assume the sceptre for my country's good ?  
 Is that an usurpation ? Can it be  
 Ambition to procure the liberty  
 Of this sad realm, which does by treason bleed ;  
 That which provokes will justify the deed.

LA. MACD. If the design should prosper, the event

May make us safe, but not you innocent ;  
 For whilst, to set our fellow-subjects free  
 From present death or future slavery,  
 You wear a crown not by your title due,  
 Defence in them is an offence in you :  
 That deed's unlawful though it cost no blood,

In which you'll be at best unjustly good,  
You, by your pity, which for us you plead,  
Weave but ambition of a finer thread.

MACD. Ambition does the height of power affect,  
My aim is not to govern but protect ;  
And he is not ambitious that declares  
He nothing seeks of sceptres but their cares.

LA. MACD. Can you so patiently yourself molest,  
And lose your own to give your country rest ?  
In plagues what sound physician would endure  
To be infected for another's cure.

MACD. If by my troubles I could your's release,  
My love wou'd turn those torments to my ease :  
I should at once be sick and healthy too,  
Though sickly in myself yet well in you.

LA. MACD. But then reflect upon the danger, sir,  
Which you by your aspiring would incur.  
From fortune's pinnacle you will too late  
Look down when you are giddy with your height ;  
Whilst you with fortune play to win a crown,  
The people's stakes are greater than your own.

MACD. In hopes to have the common illa redrest,  
Who wou'd not venture single interest.

*Enter SERVANT.*

SER. My lord, a gentleman just now arriv'd  
From court has brought a message from the King.

MACD. One sent from him can no good tidings  
bring.

LA. MACD. What would the tyrant have ?

MACD. Go ! I will hear  
The news, though it a dismal accent bear ;  
Those who expect and do not fear their doom,  
May hear a message though from hell it come.

*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter MACBETH'S LADY and SERVANT.*

LA. MACB. Is Banquo gone from court ?

SER. Yes, madam, but returns again to-night.

LA. MACB. Say to the King I would attend his  
leisure

For a few words.

[*Exit Ser.*

Where our desire is got without content,

Alas, it is not gain but punishment.

'Tis safer to be that which we destroy,

Than by destruction live in doubtful joy.

*Enter MACBETH.*

How now, my lord, why do you keep alone ?

Making the worst of fancies your companions ;

Conversing with those thoughts that should ha'  
died

With those they think on ; things without redress

Should be without regard ; what's done is done.

MACB. Alas, we have but scotch'd the snake,  
not killed it ;

She'll close and be herself, whilst our poor malice

Remains in danger of her former sting.

But let the frame of all things be disjoint

Ere we will eat our bread in fear, and sleep

In the affliction of those horrid dreams

That shake us mightily ! Better be with him

Whom we, to gain the crown, have sent to peace,

Than on the torture of the mind to lie

In restless agony. Duncan is dead !

He after life's short fever now sleeps well.

Treason has done its worst ; nor steel nor poison

Nor foreign force, nor yet domestic malice

Can touch him farther.

LA. MACB. Come on ! smooth your rough brow,

Be free and merry with your guests to-night.

MACB. I shall, and so I pray be you, but still

Remember to apply yourself to Banquo :

Present him kindness with your eye and tongue.

In how unsafe a posture are our honours,

That we must have recourse to flattery,  
And make our faces vizors to our hearts.

LA. MACB. You must leave this.

MACB. How full of scorpions is my mind, dear  
wife,

Thou knowest that Banquo and his Flean live.

LA. MACB. But they are not immortal; there's  
comfort yet in that.

MACB. Be merry then! for ere the bat has flown  
His cloister'd flight: ere to black Heccate's  
summons

The sharp brow'd beetle with his drowsy hums,  
Has rung night's second peal,  
There shall be done a deed of dreadful note.

LA. MACB. What is't?

MACB. Be innocent of knowing it, my dear,  
Till thou applaud the deed. Come, dismal night!  
Close up the eye of the quick-sighted day  
With thy invisible and bloody hand.  
The crow makes wing to the thick shady grove,  
Good things of day grow dark and overcast,  
Whilst night's black agents to their preys make  
haste.

Thou wonder'st at my language, wonder still!  
Things ill begun strengthen themselves by ill.

*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter THREE MURDERERS.*

1 MUR. The time is almost come,  
The west yet glimmers with some streaks of day,  
Now the benighted traveller spurs on  
To gain the timely inn.

2 MUR. Hark, I hear horses, and saw some body  
alight  
At the park gate.

3 MUR. Then 'tis he; the rest  
That are expected, are i'th' court already.



1 MUR. His horses go about almost a mile,  
And men from hence to th' palace make it their  
usual walk. *[Ex.]*

*Enter BANQUO and FLEAN.*

BAN. It will be rain to-night.

FLEAN. We must make haste.

BAN. Our haste concerns us more than being  
wet.

He expects me at his feast to-night,  
To which he did invite me with a kindness,  
Greater than he was wont to express. *[Exeunt.]*

*Re-enter MURDERERS with drawn Swords.*

1 MUR. Banquo, thou little think'st what bloody  
feast

Is now preparing for thee.

2 MUR. Nor to what shades the darkness of this  
night  
Shall lead thy wandering spirit.

*[Exeunt after Banquo.]*

*Clashing of Swords is heard from within. Re-enter  
FLEAN pursued by one of the MURDERERS.*

FLEAN. Murder! help, help, my father's kill'd!  
*[Ex. running.]*

*Scene Opens. A Banquet Prepared.*

*Enter MACBETH, LADY MACBETH, SEYTON, LENOX,  
LORDS, ATTENDANTS.*

MACB. You know your own degrees, sit down!

SEYT. Thanks to your Majesty.

MACB. Ourself will keep you company,  
And play the humble host to entertain you,  
Our lady keeps her State, but you shall have her  
welcome too.

LA. MACB. Pronounce it for me, sir, to all our friends.

*Enter FIRST MURDERER.*

MACB. Both sides are even ; be free in mirth !  
anon

We'll drink a measure round, about the table.  
There's blood upon thy face.

MUR. 'Tis Banquo's, then.

MACB. Is he dispatch'd ?

MUR. My lord, his throat is cut ! that I did for him.

MACB. Thou art the best of cut-throats ;  
Yet he is good that did the like for Flean.

MUR. Most royal sir he 'scap'd.

MACB. Then comes my fit again. I had else been perfect,

Firm as a pillar founded on a rock,  
As unconfin'd as the free spreading air ;  
But now I'm check'd with saucy doubts and fears.  
But Banquo's safe ?

MUR. Safe in a ditch he lies,  
With twenty gaping wounds about his head,  
The least of which was mortal.

MACB. There the ground serpent lies ; the worm  
that's fled

Hath nature that in time will venom breed  
Though at present it wants a sting. To-morrow,  
To-morrow you shall hear further. [*Ex. Mur.*]

LA. MACB. My royal lord you spoil the feast,  
The sauce to meat is chearfulness.

*Enter GHOST OF BANQUO, and sits in Macbeth's place.*

MACB. Let good digestion wait on appetite,  
And health on both !

LEN. May it please your highness to sit ?

MACB. Had we but here our country's honour :

Were the grac'd person of our Banquo present  
Whom we may justly challenge for unkindness—

SEYT. His absence, sir,  
Lays blame upon his promise. Please your Highness  
To grace us with your company?

MACB. Yes, I'll sit down. The table's full!

LEN. Here is a place reserv'd, sir.

MACB. Where, sir?

LEN. Here! What is't that moves your highness?

MACB. Which of you have done this?

LORDS. Done what?

MACB. Thou canst not say I did it? Never shake  
Thy goary locks at me.

SEYT. Gentlemen, rise! his Highness is not well.

LA. MACB. Sit, worthy friends, my lord is often  
thus,

And hath been from his youth; pray keep your  
seats,

The fit is ever sudden. If you take notice of it  
You shall offend him and provoke his passion;  
In a moment he'll be well again.

Are you a man?

MACB. Ay, and a bold one that dare look on that  
Which would distract the devil.

LA. MACB. O proper stuff!

This is the very painting of your fear,  
This is the air-drawn dagger which you said  
Led you to Duncan. O these fits and starts,  
Impostors to true fear, would well become  
A woman's story, authorized by her grandam.  
Why do you stare thus? When all's done  
You look but on a chair.

MACB. Prithee, see there! how say you now?  
Why, what care I? if thou canst nod speak too.  
If charnel houses and our graves must send  
Those that we bury back, our monuments  
Shall be the maws of kites.

LA. MACB. What ! quite unmann'd in folly ?

*[The Ghost descends.]*

MACB. If I stand here I saw it.

LA. MACB. Fye !—For shame !

MACB. 'Tis not the first of murders: blood was shed  
Ere human law decreed it for a sin ;  
Ay and since, murders too have been committed  
Too terrible for the ear. The time has been  
That when the brains were out the man would die  
And then lie still ; but now they rise again  
And thrust us from our seats.

LA. MACB. Sir, your noble friends do lack you.

MACB. Wonder not at me, most worthy friends,  
I have a strange infirmity ; 'tis nothing  
To those who know me. Give me some wine !  
Here's to the general joy of all the table,  
And to our dear friend Banquo whom we miss :  
Would he were here ; to him and all we drink.

LORDS. Our duties are to pledge it.

*[The Ghost of Banquo rises at his feet.]*

MACB. Let the earth hide thee ! thy blood is cold,  
Thou hast no use now of thy glaring eyes.

LA. MACB. Think of this, good my lords, but as  
a thing

Of custom ; 'tis no other,  
Only it spoils the pleasure of the time.

MACB. What man can dare, I dare ;  
Approach thou like the rugged Russian bear,  
The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hircanian tiger.  
Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves  
Shall never tremble ; or revive a while  
And dare me to the desert with thy sword !  
If any sinew shrink, proclaim me then  
The baby of a girl. Hence, horrible shadow !

*[Exit Ghost.]*

So now I am a man again. Pray you sit still.

LA. MACB. You have disturb'd the mirth,

Broke the glad meeting with your wild disorder.

MACB. Can such things be without astonishment ?

You make me strange

Ev'n to the disposition that I owe,

When now I think you can behold such sights

And keep the natural colour of your cheeks,

Whilst mine grow pale with fear.

SEYT. What sights ?

LA. MACB. I pray you speak not, he'll grow worse and worse,

Questions enrage him. At once good-night :

Stand not upon the order of your going.

LEN. Good-night ! and better health attend his Majesty.

LA. MACB. A kind good-night to all.

*[Exeunt Lords.]*

MACB. It will have blood they say. Blood will have blood,

Stones have been known to move, and trees to speak,

Augures, well read in languages of birds,

By magpies, rooks, and daws, have reveal'd

The secret murder. How goes the night ?

LA. MACB. Almost at odds with morning, which is which ?

MACB. Why did Macduff after a solemn invitation

Deny his presence at our feast ?

LA. MACB. Did you send to him, sir ?

MACB. I did ; but I'll send again !

There's not one great Thane in all Scotland

But in his house I keep a servant,

He and Banquo must embrace the same fate.

I will to-morrow to the weyward sisters,

They shall tell me more, for now I am bent to know

By the worst means the worst that can befall me ;  
 All causes shall give way ; I am in blood  
 Stept in so far, that should I wade no more,  
 Returning were as bad as to go o'er.

LA. MACB. You lack the season of all natures,  
 sleep.

MACB. Well, I'll in  
 And rest : if sleeping I repose can have  
 When the dead rise and want it in their grave.  
*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter MACDUFF and LADY MACDUFF.*

LA. MACD. Are you resolv'd then to begone ?

MACD. I am.

I know my answer cannot but inflame  
 The tyrant's fury to pronounce my death,  
 My life will soon be blasted by his breath.

LA. MACD. But why so far as England must  
 you fly ?

MACD. The farthest part of Scotland is too nigh.

LA. MACD. Can you leave me, your daughter  
 and young son,

To perish by that tempest which you shun ?  
 When birds of stronger wing are fled away,  
 The ravenous kite does on the weaker prey.

MACD. He will not injure you, he cannot be  
 Possessed with such unmanly cruelty :

You will your safety to your weakness owe,  
 As grass escapes the scythe by being low.

Together we shall be too slow to fly,

Single we may outride the enemy.

I'll from the English King such succors crave,

As shall revenge the dead, and living save.

My greatest misery is to remove

With all the wings of haste from what I love.

LA. MACD. If to be gone seems misery to you,  
 Good sir, let us be miserable too.

MACD. Your sex which here is your security,  
Will by the toils of flight your danger be.

*Enter MESSENGER.*

What fatal news does bring thee out of breath ?

MESS. Sir ! Banquo's kill'd.

MACD. Then I am warn'd of death.

Farewell ! our safety us a while must sever.

LA. MACD. Fly, fly, or we may bid farewell for  
ever.

MACD. Flying from death I am to life unkind,  
For leaving you I leave my life behind. [*Exit.*]

LA. MACD. O my dear lord, I find now thou art  
gone,

I am more valiant when unsafe alone,  
My heart feels manhood, it does death despise,  
Yet I am still a woman in my eyes,  
And of my tears thy absence is the cause,  
So falls the dew when the bright sun withdraws.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter LENOX and SEYTON.*

LEN. My former speeches have but hit your  
thoughts

Which can interpret further ; only I say  
Things have been strangely carried.  
Duncan was pitied, but he first was dead,  
And the right valiant Banquo walk'd too late ;  
Men must not walk so late ; who can want sense  
To know how monstrous it was in nature  
For Malcolm and Donalbain to kill  
Their royal father ; horrid fact ! how did  
It grieve Macbeth ? did he not straight  
In pious rage the two delinquents kill  
That were the slaves of drunkenness and sleep ?  
Was not that nobly done ?

SEYT. Ay, and wisely too,

For 'twould have angered any loyal heart  
To hear the men deny it.

LEN. So that I say he has borne all things well,  
And I do think that had he Duncan's sons  
Under his power, as may please Heaven he shall  
not,

They shou'd find what it were to kill a father,  
So should Flean : but peace ! I fear Macduff  
Denied his presence at the feast ; for which  
He lives in disgrace. Sir, can you tell  
Where he bestows himself ?

SEYT. I hear that Malcolm lives i' th' English  
court,

And is received of the most pious Edward  
With such grace, that the malevolence of fortune  
Takes nothing from his high respect ; thither  
Macduff is gone to beg the holy King's  
Kind aid, to wake Northumberland  
And warlike Siward, and by the help of these  
To finish what they have so well begun.  
This report does so exasperate the King, that he  
Prepares for some attempt of war.

LEN. Sent he to Macduff ?

SEYT. He did, his absolute command.

LEN. Some angel fly to th' English court, and  
tell

His message ere he come ; that some quick bless-  
ing,

To this afflicted country, may arrive  
Whilst those that merit it are yet alive. [*Exeunt.*]

*Thunder. Enter THREE WITCHES meeting HECCATE.*

1 WITCH. How, Heccate ? you look angrily.

HECAT. Have I not reason, beldams ?

Why did you ail traffic with Macbeth  
'Bout riddles and affairs of death,  
And call'd not me : all you have done



Hath been but for a wayward son :  
 Make some amends now : get you gone ;  
 And at the pit of Acheron  
 Meet me i' th' morning. Thither he  
 Will come to know his destiny.  
 Dire business will be wrought ere noon,  
 For on a corner of the moon,  
 A drop my spectacles have found,  
 I'll catch it ere it come to ground,  
 And that distill'd shall yet ere night,  
 Raise from the centre such a spright,  
 As by the strength of his illusion,  
 Shall draw Macbeth to his confusion.

*Music and Song.*

Heccate, Heccate, Heccate ! O come away ;  
 Hark, I am call'd, my little spirit see,  
 Sits in a foggy cloud and stays for me.

*[Machine descends.]*

*Song within.*

Come away Heccate, Heccate, oh come away !

HEC. I come, I come with all the speed I may,  
 With all the speed I may.

Where's Stradling ?

2 WIT. Here.

HEC. Where's Puckle ?

3 WIT. Here ! and Hopper too, and Helway too.

1 WIT. We want but you, we want but you :  
 Come away, make up the count.

HEC. I will but 'noint and then I mount,  
 I will, but, &c.

1 WIT. Here comes down one to fetch his due,  
 a kiss,

A cull, a sip of blood.

And why thou stay'st so long, I muse,  
 Since th' air's so sweet and good.

2 WIT. O art thou come ! what news !  
All goes fair for our delight,  
Either come or else refuse.  
Now I am furnish'd for the flight,  
Now I go and now I fly,  
Malking my sweet spirit and I.

3 WIT. O what a dainty pleasure's this !  
To sail i' th' air,  
While the moon shines fair ;  
To sing, to toy, to dance and kiss ;  
Over woods, high rocks and mountains,  
Over hills and misty fountains ;  
Over steeples, towers, and turrets :  
We fly by night 'mongst troops of spirits.  
No ring of bells to our ears sounds,  
No howls of wolves nor yelps of hounds ;  
No, nor the noise of waters breach,  
Nor cannon's throats our heights can reach.

1 WIT. Come, let's make haste, she'll soon be  
back again.

2 WIT. But, whilst she moves through the foggy  
air,  
Let's to the cave and our dire charms prepare.

---

ACT IV. SCENE 1.

1 WITCH. Thrice the brinded cat hath mew'd.

2 WIT. Thrice and once the hedge-pig whin'd,  
Shutting his eyes against the wind.

3 WIT. Harper cries 'tis time, 'tis time !

1 WIT. Then round about the cauldron go,  
And poison'd entrails throw !  
This toad which, under mossy stone,  
Has days and nights lain thirty-one ;

And swelt'rd venom sleeping got,  
We'll boil in the enchanted pot.

ALL. Double, double, toil and trouble;  
Fire burn and cauldron bubble.

2 WIT. The fillet of a fenny snake,  
Of skuttlefish the vomit black,  
The eye of newt and toe of frog,  
The wool of bat and tongue of dog.  
An adder's fork and blind worm's sting,  
A lizzard's leg and howlet's wing,  
Shall like a hell broth boil and bubble.

ALL. Double, double, &c.

3 WIT. The scale of dragon, tooth of wolf,  
A witch's mummy; maw, and gulf  
Of cormorant and the sea shark,  
The root of hemlock dig'd i' th' dark,  
The liver of blaspheming Jew,  
With gall of goats and slips of yew,  
Pluckt when the moon was in eclipse,  
With a Turk's nose and Tartar's lips;  
The finger of a strangl'd babe,  
Born of a ditch deliver'd drab,  
Shall make the gruel thick and slab,  
Adding thereto a fat Dutchman's chawdron,  
For the ingredients of our cauldron.

ALL. Double, double, &c.

2 WIT. I'll cool it with the baboon's blood,  
And so the charm is firm and good.

*Enter HECCATE and the other three Witches.*

HEC. Oh, well done! I commend your  
pains,  
And every one shall share the gains.  
And now about the cauldron sing,  
Like elves and fairies in a ring.

*[Music and Song.]*

HEC. Black spirits and white,  
 Red spirits and grey ;  
 Mingle, mingle, mingle,  
 You that mingle may.

1 WIT. With tiffin, tiffin, keep it stiff in,  
 Firedrake, Puckey, make it lucky ;  
 Liar Robin you must bob in.

CHOR. Around, around, about, about,  
 All ill come running in, all good keep out.

1 WIT. Here's the blood of a bat.

HEC. O put in that, put in that.

2 WIT. Here's lizard's brain.

HEC. Put in a grain.

1 WIT. Here's juice of toad ; here's oil of adder,  
 That will make the charm grow madder.

2 WIT. Put in all these, 'twill raise the stench.

HEC. Nay, here's three ounces of a red hair'd  
 wench.

CHOR. Around, around, &c.

2 WIT. I, by the pricking of my thumbs,  
 Know something wicked this way comes,  
 Open locks whoever knocks.

*Enter MACBETH.*

MACB. How now you secret, black, and mid-  
 night hags,  
 What are you doing ?

ALL. A deed without a name.

MACB. I conjure you by that which you profess,  
 Howe'er you come to know it, answer me.  
 Though you let loose the raging winds to shake  
 whole towns,  
 Though bladed corn be lodg'd and trees blown  
 down,

Though castles tumble on their warders' heads,  
 Though palaces and tow'ring pyramids  
 Are swallow'd up in earthquakes, answer me !

1 WIT. Speak !

2 WIT. Pronounce !

3 WIT. Demand !

4 WIT. I'll answer thee.

MACB. What destiny's appointed for my fate ?

HEC. Thou double Thane and King ; beware  
Macduff,

Avoiding him, Macbeth is safe enough.

MACB. Whate'er thou art, for thy kind caution  
thanks.

HEC. Be bold and bloody, and man's hatred  
scorn,

Thou shalt be harm'd by none of woman born.

MACB. Then live, Macduff, what need I fear thy  
power.

But none can be too sure. Thou shalt not live,  
That I may tell pale-hearted fear it lies,  
And sleep in spite of thunder.

HEC. Be confident, be proud, and take no care  
Who wages war, or where conspirers are.  
Macbeth shall like a lucky monarch reign,  
Till Birnam wood shall come to Dunsenain.

MACB. Can forests move ? The prophecy is  
good.

If I shall never fall till the great wood  
Of Birnam rise, thou may'st presume Macbeth  
To live out nature's lease, and pay thy breath  
To time and mortal custom. Yet my heart  
Longs for more knowledge : Tell me, if your art  
Extends so far ; shall Banquo's issue o'er  
This Kingdom reign ?

ALL. Enquire no more.

MACB. I will not be denied. Ha !

*[Cauldron sinks.]*

An eternal curse fall on you ! let me know  
Why sinks this cauldron and what noise is this !

1 WIT. Appear ! 2. Appear ! 3. Appear !

Wound through his eyes his hard'nd heart,  
Like shadows come and straight depart.

[*A shadow of eight kings, and Banquo's  
ghost after them, pass by.*]

MACB. Thy crown offends my sight; a second,  
too, like the first;  
A third resembles him; a fourth too like the former:  
Ye filthy hags will they succeed  
Each other still till doomsday?  
Another yet, a seventh! I'll see no more;  
And yet the eighth appears.  
Ha! the bloody Banquo smiles upon me,  
And by his smiling on me seems to say  
That they are all successors of his race.

HEC. Ay, sir, all this is so; but why  
Macbeth stand thou amazedly?  
Come, sisters, let us cheer his heart,  
And shew the pleasures of our art:  
I'll charm the air to give a sound,  
While you perform your antic round.

[*Music. The Witches dance and  
vanish. The cave sinks.*]

MACB. Where are they? gone!  
Let this pernicious hour stand  
Accurs'd to all eternity. Without there!

*Enter SEYTON.*

SEYT. What's your Grace's will?

MACB. Saw you the weyward sisters?

SEYT. No, my lord.

MACB. Came they not by you?

SEYT. By me, sir?

MACB. Infected be the earth in which they sunk,  
And damn'd all those that trust 'em. Just now  
I heard the galloping of horse; who wast came by?

SEYT. A messenger from the English Court, who  
Brings word Macduff is fled to England.

MACB. Fled to England ?

SEYT. Ay, my lord.

MACB. Time, thou anticipat'st all my designs ;  
Our purposes seldom succeed, unless  
Our deeds go with them.  
My thoughts shall henceforth in action rise,  
The witches made me cruel but not wise. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter MACDUFF's WIFE and LENNOX.*

LA. MACD. I then was frighted with the sad  
alarm

Of Banquo's death, when I did counsel him  
To fly, but now, alas ! I must repent it.  
What had he done to leave the land ? Macbeth  
Did know him innocent.

LEN. You must have patience, madam.

LA. MACD. He had none.

His flight was madness : when our actions do not,  
Our fears oft make us traitors.

LEN. You know not whether it was his wisdom  
or his fear.

LA. MACD. Wisdom to leave his wife and children  
in a place

From whence himself did fly ; he loves us not ;  
He wants the natural touch, for the poor wren,  
The most diminutive of birds, will, with  
The ravenous owl, fight stoutly for her young  
ones.

LEN. Your husband, madam,

Is noble, wise, judicious, and best knows  
The fits o' th' season, I dare not speak much  
farther ;

But cruel are the times when we are traitors,  
And do not know ourselves ; when we hold rumour  
From what we fear, yet know not what we fear ;  
But float upon a wild and violent sea,  
And each way move. I take my leave of you.

'T shall not be long but I'll be here again.  
Things at the worst will cease, or else climb up-  
wards

To what they were before. Heaven protect you!

LA. MACD. Farewell, sir!

*Enter A WOMAN.*

WOM. Madam, a gentleman in haste desires to  
speak with you.

LA. MACD. A gentleman? admit him!

*Enter SEYTON.*

SEYTON. Though I have not the honour to be  
known

To you, yet I was well acquainted with  
The Lord Macduff which brings me here to tell  
you

There's danger near you, be not found here,  
Fly with your little ones! Heaven preserve you,  
I dare stay no longer. *[Exit Seyton.]*

LA. MACD. Where shall I go, and whither shall  
I fly?

I've done no harm; but I remember now,  
I'm in a vicious world, where to do harm  
Is often prosperous, and to do good  
Accounted dangerous folly. Why do I then  
Make use of this so womanly defence?  
I'll boldly in, and dare this new alarm,  
What need they fear whom innocence doth arm?  
*[Exit.]*

*Enter MALCOLM and MACDUFF.*

*The Scene—BIRNAM WOOD.*

MACD. In these close shades of Birnam Wood  
let us

Weep our sad bosoms empty.

MAL. You'll think my fortune's desperate,  
That I dare meet you here upon your summons.



MACD. You should now  
Take arms to serve your country. Each new day,  
New widows mourn, new orphans cry, and still  
Changes of sorrow reach attentive heaven.

MAL. This tyrant, whose foul name blisters our  
tongues,  
Was once thought honest. You have loved him  
well,  
He has not toucht you yet.

MACD. I am not treacherous.

MALC. But Macbeth is,  
And yet, Macduff may be what I did always think  
him—

Just and good.

MACD. I've lost my hopes.

MALC. Perhaps even there where I did find my  
doubts;

But let not jealousies be your dishonours  
But my own safeties.

MACD. Bleed, bleed, poor country.  
Great tyranny, lay thy foundation sure,  
Villains are safe when good men are suspected.  
I'll say no more, fare thee well, young Prince,  
I would not be that traitor which thou thinkst me  
For twice Macbeth's reward of treachery.

MALC. Be not offended:

I speak not as in absolute fear of you ;  
I think our country sinks beneath the yoke,  
It weeps, it bleeds, and each new day a gash  
Is added to her wounds. I think withal  
That many hands would in my cause be active,  
And here from gracious England have I offer  
Of goodly thousands. But for all this,  
When I shall tread upon the tyrant's head,  
Or wear it on my sword, yet, my poor country  
Will suffer under greater tyranny  
Than what it suffers now.

MACD. It cannot be.

MALC. Alas, I find my nature so inclined  
To vice, that foul Macbeth when I shall rule  
Will seem as white as snow.

MACD. There cannot in all rankest hell be found  
A devil equal to Macbeth.

MALC. I grant him, bloody, false, deceitful,  
malicious,  
And participating in some sins too horrid to name,  
But there's no bottom, no depths, in my ill appetite.  
If such a one be fit to govern, speak ?

MACD. O Scotland, Scotland, when shalt thou  
see day again,  
Since that the truest issue of thy throne,  
Disclaims his virtue to avoid the crown ?  
Your royal father  
Was a most saint-like King ; the Queen that bore  
you,

Oftener upon her knees than on her feet,  
Died every day she lived. Fare thee well,  
These evils thou repeat'st upon thyself  
Hath banished me from Scotland. O my breast !  
Thy hope ends here.

MALC. Macduff, this noble passion,  
Child of integrity, hath from my soul,  
Wiped the black scruples, reconciled my thoughts,  
To thy good birth and honour. Macbeth,  
By many of these trains hath sought to win me  
Into his power, and modest wisdom plucks me  
From over credulous haste. But now  
I put myself to thy direction, and  
Unspeak my own detraction. I abjure  
The taunts and blames I laid upon myself  
For strangers to my nature. What I am truly  
Is thine, and my poor country's to command.  
The gracious Edward has lent us Siward,  
And ten thousand men ; why are you silent ?

MACD. Such welcome and unwelcome things at  
 once,  
 Are subjects for my wonder, not my speech ;  
 My grief and joy contesting in my bosom,  
 I find that I can scarce my tongue command.  
 When two streams meet the water's at a stand.

MALC. Assistance granted by that pious King  
 Must be successful ; he who, by his touch,  
 Can cure our bodies of a foul disease,  
 Can by just force subdue a traitor's mind,  
 Power supernatural is unconfined.

MACD. If his compassion does on men diseas'd  
 Effect such cures : what wonders will he do,  
 When to compassion he adds justice too ?

*[Exeunt.]*

*Enter MACBETH and SEYTON.*

MACB. Seyton, go bid the army march !

SEYT. The posture of affairs requires your presence.

MACB. But the indisposition of my wife detains me here.

SEAT. The enemy is upon our borders, Scotland's in danger.

MACB. So is my wife, and I am doubly so.  
 I am sick in her, and in my Kingdom too.  
 Seyton !

SEYT. Sire ?

MACB. The spur of my ambition prompts me to go,  
 And make my Kingdom safe, but love which softens me

To pity her in her distress curbs my resolves.

SEYT. He's strangely disorder'd.

MACB. Yet why should love confin'd desire  
 To controul ambitions for whose spreading hopes  
 The world's too narrow ? it shall not be ! great fires

Put out the less. Seyton, go bid my grooms  
Make ready, I'll not delay my going.

SEYT. I go.

MACB. Stay, Seyton, stay! compassion calls me  
back.

SYTE. He looks and moves disorderly.

*Enter a SERVANT who whispers Macbeth.*

MACB. Is the Queen asleep?

SEYT. What makes 'em whisper, and his countenance change?

Perhaps some new design has had ill success.

MACB. Seyton, go see what posture our affairs  
are in!

SEYT. I shall, and give you notice, sire.

*[Exit Seyt.]*

*Enter LADY MACBETH.*

MACB. How does my gentle love?

LA. MACB. Duncan is dead!

MACB. No words of that.

LA. MACB. And yet to me he lives;  
His fatal ghost is now my shadow, and pursues me  
Where'er I go.

MACB. It cannot be, my dear,  
Your fears have misinform'd your eyes.

LA. MACB. See there! believe your own.  
Why do you follow me? I did not do it.

MACB. Methinks there's nothing.

LA. MACB. If you have valour, force him hence.  
Hold! hold! he's gone. Now you look strangely.

MACB. 'Tis the strange error of your eyes.

LA. MACB. But the strange error of my eyes  
Proceeds from the strange action of your hands.  
Distraction does by fits possess my head,  
Because a crown unjustly covers it.  
I stand so high that I am giddy grown:

A mist does cover me as clouds the tops  
Of hills. Let us go down apace !

MACB. If by your high ascent you giddy  
grow,

'Tis when you cast your eyes on things below.

LA. MACB. You may in peace resign the ill-  
gain'd crown.

Why should you labour still to be unjust ?

There has been too much blood already spilt.

Make not the subjects victims to your guilt.

MACB. Can you think that a crime which you  
did once

Provoke me to commit ? Had not your breath

Blown my ambition up into a flame

Duncan had yet been living.

LA. MACB. You were a man,

And by the charter of your sex you shou'd

Have govern'd me : there was more crime in you

When you obey'd my councils, than I contracted

By my giving it. Resign your Kingdom now,

And with your crown put off your guilt.

MACB. Resign the crown ! and with it both our  
lives ?

I must have better counsellors.

LA. MACB. What, your witches ?

Curse on your messengers of hell. Their breath

Infected first my breast ; see me no more.

As King your crown sits heavy on your head,

But heavier on my heart. I have had too much

Of Kings already. See, the ghost again !

*[Ghost appears.]*

MACB. Now she relapses.

LA. MACB. Speak to him if thou can'st.

Thou look'st on me and show'st thy wounded  
heart.

Show it the murderer.

MACB. Within there. Ho !

*Enter WOMEN.*

LA. MACB. Am I tane prisoner ? then the battle's  
lost. [*Exit Lady Macbeth led out by Women.*

MACB. She does from Duncan's death to sick-  
ness grieve,  
And shall from Malcolm's death her health receive.  
When by a viper bitten nothing's good  
To cure the venom but a viper's blood. [*Exit.*

*Enter MALCOLM and MACDUFF, LENOX meeting them.*

MACD. See who comes here !

MALC. My countryman ; but yet I know him  
not.

MACD. My ever gentle cousin ! welcome.

MALC. I know him now ;

Kind heaven remove the means that makes us  
strangers.

LEN. Amen !

MACD. What looks does Scotland bear ?

LEN. Alas ! poor country ! almost afraid to know  
itself,

It can't be called our mother, but our grave, where  
nothing

But who knows nothing, is once seen to smile ;  
Where sighs, and groans, and shrieks that rend  
the air

Are made, not mark'd ; where violent sorrow seems  
A modern extasy : there bells

Are always ringing, and no man asks for whom :

There good men's lives expire ere they sicken.

MACB. Oh, relation ! too nice and yet too true.

MALC. What's the newest grief ?

LEN. That of an hour's age is out of date,  
Each minute brings a new one.

MACD. How does my wife ?

LEN. Why, well.

MACD. And all my children ?

LEN. Well, too.

MACD. The tyrant has not quarrelled at their peace ?

LEN. No ; they were well at peace when I left them.

MACD. Be not so sparing of your speech. How goes't ?

LEN. When I came hither to transport the tidings

Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour  
Of many worthy men that rose into a head,  
Which was to my belief. Witness the rather,  
For that I saw the tyrant's power afoot,  
Now is the time of help. Your eye in Scotland  
Would create soldiers and make women fight.

MALC. Be't their comfort.

We are coming thither. Gracious England hath  
Lent us good Siward and ten thousand men.

LEN. Would I could answer this comfort with  
the like ;

But I have words

That would be utter'd in the desert air,  
Where no man's ear could hear them.

MACD. What concern they ? the general cause,  
Or is't a grief due to some single breast ?

LEN. All honest minds must share it ;  
But the main part pertains to you.

MACD. If it be mine, keep it not from me.

LEN. Let not your ears condemn my tongue for  
ever,

When they shall possess them with the heaviest  
sound

That ever yet they heard.

MACD. At once I guess, yet am afraid to know.

LEN. Your castle is surpris'd, your wife and  
children

Savagely murdered : to relate the manner  
Were to increase the butchery of them,  
By adding to their fall the death of you.

MALC. Merciful heaven ! Noble Macduff,  
Give sorrow words : the grief that does not speak  
Whispers the o'ercharged heart and bids it break.

MACD. My children, too ?

LEN. Your wife, and both your children.

MACD. And I not with them dead ? Both—  
both my children.

Did you say my two ?

LEN. I have said.

MALC. Be comforted.

Let's make us cordials of our great revenges,  
To cure this deadly grief.

MACD. He has no children, nor can he feel  
A father's grief. Did you say all my children ?  
Oh, hellish, ravenous kite ! all three at one swoop.

MALC. Dispute it like a man.

MACD. I shall.

But I must first too feel it as a man.

I cannot but remember such things were,  
And were most precious to me. Did heaven look  
on,

And would not take their part ? Sinful Macduff,  
They were all struck for thee ; for thee they fell ;  
Not for their own offences, but for thine.

MALC. Let us give edges to our swords ; let your  
tears

Become oil to your kindled rage.

MACD. Oh, I could play the woman with my eyes,  
And braggart with my tongue. Kind heavens !  
bring this

Dire fiend of Scotland and myself face to face,  
And set him within the reach of my keen sword,  
And, if he outlives that hour, may heaven forgive  
His sins, and punish me for his escape.



MALC. Let's hasten to the army, since Macbeth  
Is ripe for fall.

MACD. Heaven give our quarrel but as good  
success  
As it has justice in't. Kind powers above  
Grant peace to us, whilst we take his away.  
That night is long that never finds a day. [*Exeunt.*]

---

ACT V. SCENE I.

*Enter SEYTON and a LADY.*

LADY. I've seen her rise from her bed, throw  
Her night-gown on her, unlock her closet,  
Take forth paper, fold it, write upon it, read it,  
Afterwards seal it, and again return to bed,  
Yet all this while in a most fast sleep.

SEYT. 'Tis strange she should receive the benefit  
Of sleep, and do the effects of waking.  
In this disorder what at any time have  
You heard her say?

LADY. That, sir, which I will not report of her.

SEYT. You may to me; and 'tis most meet you  
should.

LADY. Neither to you, nor any one living,  
Having no witness to confirm my speech.

*Enter LADY MACBETH.*

See here she comes! observe her and stand close.

SEYT. You see her eyes are open.

LADY. Ay, but her sense is shut.

SEYT. What is't she does now? Look how she  
rubs her hands.

LADY. It is an accustomed action with her to  
seem

Thus washing her hands : I have known  
Her continue in this a quarter of an hour.

LA. MACB. Yet out, out ! here's a spot.

SEYT. Hearn, she speaks.

LA. MACB. Out, out, I say ! one, two ; nay then  
'Tis time to do't ; fie my lord, fie, a soldier  
And afraid ? What need we fear ? who knows it ?  
There's none dares call our power to account ;  
Yet who would have thought the old man had  
So much blood in him.

SEYT. Do you mark that ?

LA. MACB. Macduff had once a wife : where is  
she now ?

Will these hands ne'er be clean ; fie my lord,  
You spoil all with this starting ; yet here's  
A smell of blood : not all the perfumes of Arabia  
Will sweeten this little hand. Oh ! oh ! oh !!!  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*Enter DONALBAIN and FLEAN, met by LENOX.*

LEN. Is not that Donalbain and young Flean,  
Banquo's son ?

DON. Who is this, my worthy friend ?

LEN. I by your presence feel my hopes full  
blown

Which hitherto have been but in the bud.  
What happy gale has brought you here to see  
Your father's death reveng'd ?

DON. Hearing of aid sent by the English King  
To check the tyrant's insolence, I am come  
From Ireland.

FLEAN. And I from France, we are but newly  
met.

DON. Where's my brother ?

LEN. He and the good Macduff are with the army  
Behind the wood.

DON. What does the tyrant now ?

LEN. He strongly fortifies in Dunsinane :  
Some say he is mad. Others who love him less  
Call it a valiant fury ; but whate'er  
The matter is, there is a civil war  
Within his bosom, and he finds his crown  
Sit loose about him : his power grows less,  
His fear grows greater still.

DON. Let's haste and meet my brother,  
My interest is grafted into his,  
And cannot grow without it.

LEN. So may you both outgrow unlucky chance,  
And may the tyrant's fall that growth advance.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

*Enter MACBETH, SEYTON, and ATTENDANTS.*

MACB. Bring me no more reports ; let 'em fly all !  
Till Byrnham Wood remove to Dunsinane,  
I cannot fear. What's the boy Malcolm, what  
Are all the English ? are they not of women  
Born ? and to all such I am invincible :  
Then fly false Thanes,  
By your revolt you have inflam'd my rage,  
And now have borrow'd English blood to quench it.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

Now friend, what means thy change of countenance ?

MESS. There are ten thousand, sir.

MACB. What, ghosts ?

MESS. No, armed men.

MACB. But such as shall be ghosts ere it be night.

Art thou turn'd coward too, since I made thee captain ?

Go, blush away thy paleness, I am sure

Thy hands are of another colour : thou hast hands  
Of blood but looks of milk.

MESS. The English force, so please you——

MACB. Take thy face hence !

He has infected me with fear.

I am sure to die by none of woman born,

And yet the English drums beat an alarm

As fatal to my life as are the croaks

Of ravens when they flutter about the windows

Of departing men.

My hopes are great, and yet methinks I fear ;

My subjects cry out curses on my name,

Which like a north wind seems to blast my hopes.

SEYT. That wind is a contagious vapour  
Exhal'd from blood.

*Enter SECOND MESSENGER.*

What news more ?

2 MESS. All's confirm'd, my liege, that was re-  
ported.

MACB. And my resolves in spite of fate shall be  
as firmly.

Send out more horse, and scour the country round !

How does my wife ?

SEYT. Not so sick, my lord, as she is troubled  
With disturbing fancies, that keep her from her  
rest.

MACB. And I, methinks, am sick of her disease :  
Seyton, send out ! Captain, the Thanes flee from  
thee.

Wou'd she were well, I'd quickly win the field.

Stay, Seyton, stay ! I'll bear you company.

The English cannot long maintain the fight,

They come not here to kill, but to be slain ;

Send out our scouts !

SEYT. Sir, I am gone, *[Aside.*  
Not to obey your orders, but the call of justice.

I'll to the English train whose hopes are built  
Upon their cause, and not on witches' prophecies.

[*Exit.*

MACB. Poor Thanes, you vainly hope for victory.  
You'll find Macbeth invincible ; or if  
He can be o'ercome, it must be then  
By Birnam oaks and not by Englishmen. [*Exit.*

#### SCENE IV.

*Enter MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, SIWARD, MACDUFF,  
LENOX, FLEAN, and SOLDIERS.*

MALC. The sun shall see us drain the tyrant's  
blood,  
And dry up Scotland's tears. How much we are  
Obliged to England, which like a kind neighbour  
Lifts us up when we are fal'n below  
Our own recovery.

SIW. What wood is this before us ?

MALC. The wood of Birnam.

SIW. Let every soldier hew him down a bough,  
And bear't before him ; by that we may  
Keep the number of our force undiscover'd  
By the enemy.

MALC. It shall be done. We learn no more  
than that

The confident tyrant keeps still in Dunsinane,  
And will endure a siege.  
He is of late grown conscious of his guilt,  
Which makes him make that city a place of refuge.

MACD. He'll find even there but little safety,  
His very subjects will against him rise.  
So travellers fly them to an aged barn  
For shelter from the rain ; when the next shock  
Of wind throws down that roof upon their heads  
From which they hop'd for succour.

LEN. The wretched kernes which now like  
boughs are tied

To forc'd obedience, will, when our swords  
Have cut these bonds, start from obedience.

MALC. May the event make good our guess.

MACD. It must, unless our resolutions fail.  
They'll kindle, sir, their just revenge at ours ;  
Which double flame will singe the wings of all  
The tyrant's hopes ; deprived of those supports  
He'll quickly fall.

SIRW. Let's all retire to our commands ; our breath  
Spent in discourse does but defer his death,  
And but delays our vengeance.

MACD. Come, let's go !  
The swiftest haste is for revenge too slow. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter MACBETH and SOLDIERS.*

MACB. Hang out our banners proudly o'er the  
wall.

The cry is still they come ! our castle's strength  
Will laugh a siege to scorn. Here let them lie  
Till famine eat them up. Had Seyton still  
Been ours, and others who now increase the number  
Of our enemies, we might have met 'em  
Face to face. [*Noise within.*]

What noise is that ?

SER. It seems the cry of women.

MACB. I have almost forgot the taste of fears.  
The time has been that dangers have been my  
familiar.

Wherefore was that cry ?

SER. Great sir, the Queen is dead !

MACB. She should have died hereafter.  
I brought her here to see my victims, not to die.  
To-morrow, to-morrow, and to-morrow,  
Creeps in a stealing pace from day to day,  
To the last minute of recorded time,

And all our yesterdays have lighted fools  
To their eternal homes : out, out, that candle !  
Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player  
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage,  
And then is heard no more. It is a tale  
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,  
Signifying nothing.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

Thou comest to use thy tongue? thy story quickly.

MESS. Let my eyes speak what they have seen,  
For my tongue cannot.

MACB. Thy eyes speak terror ; let thy tongue  
expound

Their language, or be for ever dumb.

MESS. As I did stand my watch upon the hill  
I look't towards Birnam, and anon methoughts  
The wood began to move.

MACB. Liar and slave !

MESS. Let me endure your wrath if't be not so ;  
Within this three mile you may see it coming,  
I say a moving grove.

MACB. If thou speak false I'll send thy soul  
To th' other world to meet with moving woods  
And walking forests,  
There to possess what it but dreamt of here.  
If thy speech be true, I care not if thou doest  
The same for me. I now begin  
To doubt the equivocation of the fiend ;  
They bid me not to fear till Birnam wood  
Should come to Dunsinane ; and now a wood  
Is on it's march this way. Arm, arm !  
Since thus a wood does in a march appear,  
There is no flying hence nor tarrying here :  
Methinks I now grow weary of the sun,  
And wish the world's great glass of life were run.

*[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE VI.

*Enter MALCOLM, SIWARD, MACDUFF, LENOX,  
FLEAN, SEYTON, DONALBAIN, and their  
Army, with boughs.*

MALC. Here we are near enough ; throw down  
Your leafy skreens,  
And shew like those you are. You, worthy uncle,  
Shall with my brother and the noble Lenox  
March in the van, whilst valiant Siward  
And myself make up the gross of the army,  
And follow you with speed.

SIW. Fare thee well !  
The monster has forsook his hold and comes,  
To offer battle.

MACD. Let him come on ! his title now  
Sits loose about him like a giant's robe  
Upon a dwarfish thief.

*Enter MACBETH.*

MACB. 'Tis too ignoble and too base to fly.  
Who's he that is not of a woman born ?  
For such a one have I to fear or none.

*Enter LENOX.*

LEN. Kind heaven, I thank thee ! have I found  
thee here ?  
Oh, Scotland, Scotland, may'st thou owe thy just  
Revenge to this sharp sword, or this blest minute.

MACB. Retire, fond man ! I would not kill thee.  
Why should falcons prey on flies ?  
It is below Macbeth to fight with men.

LEN. But not to murder women.

MACB. Lenox, I pity thee ! thy arm's too weak.

LEN. This arm has hitherto found good success  
On your ministers of blood, who murder'd



Macduff's lady and brave Banquo :  
 Art thou less mortal than they were ? or more  
 Exempt from punishment because thou most  
 Deserv'st it ? Have at thy life !

MACB. Since thou art in love with death, I will  
 Vouchsafe it thee. [*They fight. Lenox falls.*  
 Though art of woman born, sure. [*Exit Macb.*

LEN. Oh, my dear country, pardon me that I  
 Do in a cause so great so quickly die. [*Dies.*

*Enter MACDUFF.*

MACD. This way the noise is ; tyrant, show thy  
 face !  
 If thou be'st slain, and by no hand of mine,  
 My wife and children's ghosts will haunt me for't.  
 I cannot strike  
 At wretched slaves, who sell their lives for pay ;  
 No, my revenge shall seek a nobler prey ;  
 Through all the paths of death I'll search him out.  
 Let me but find him, Fortune! [*Exit.*

*Enter MALCOLM and SIWARD.*

SIW. This way, great sir! the tyrant's people  
 fight  
 With fear as great as is his guilt.  
 MALC. See, who lies here? the noble Lenox slain!  
 What storm has brought this cloud over  
 Our rising hopes ?

SIW. Restrain your passion, sir ; let's to our  
 men!  
 Those who in noble causes fall deserve  
 Our pity not our sorrow ;  
 I'll bid somebody bear the body further hence.  
 [*Exeunt.*

*Enter MACBETH.*

MACB. Why should I play the Roman fool and  
 fall

On my own sword, while I have living foes  
To conquer ? My wounds shew better upon them.

*Enter MACDUFF.*

MACD. Turn, hell-hound, turn !

MACB. Of all men else have I avoided thee ;  
But get thee back, my soul is too much clog'd  
With blood of thine already.

MACD. I'll have no words ; thy villainies are  
worse  
Than ever yet were punish't with a curse.

MACB. Thou may'st as well attempt to wound  
the air  
As me ; my destiny's reserved for some immortal  
power,

And I must fall by miracle ; I cannot bleed.

MACD. Have thy black deeds then turn'd thee  
to a devil ?

MACB. Thou would'st but share the fate of Lenox.

MACD. Is Lenox slain ? and by a hand that  
would damn all it kills,  
But that their cause preserves them ?

MACB. I have a prophecy secures my life.

MACD. I have another which tells me I shall  
have his blood  
Who first shed mine.

MACB. None of woman born can spill my blood.

MACD. Then let the devils tell thee, Macduff  
Was from his mother's womb untimely ript.

MACB. Curst be the tongue that tells me so !  
And double damn'd be they who with a double  
sense

Make promises to our ears, and break at last  
That promise to our sight. I will not fight with  
thee.

MACD. Then yield thyself a prisoner, to be led  
about

The world and gazed on as a monster, a monster  
More deform'd than e'er ambition fram'd,  
Or tyranny could shape.

MACB. I scorn to yield.

I will, despite enchantment, fight with thee !  
Though Birnam Wood be come to Dunsinane,  
And thou art of no woman born, I'll try  
If by a man it be thy fate to die.

*[They fight. Macbeth falls. Shout within.]*

MACD. This for my Royal master, Duncan ;  
This for my dearest friend, my wife ;  
This for those pledges of our loves, my children.  
Hark, I hear a noise ! sure there are more  
Reserves to conquer. *[Shout within.]*  
I'll as a trophy bear away his sword  
To witness my revenge. *[Exit Macduff.]*

MACB. Farewell, vain world, and what's most  
vain in it, ambition ! *[Dies.]*

*Enter MALCOLM, SIWARD, DONALBAIN, FLEAN,  
SEYTON, and SOLDIERS.*

MALC. I wish Macduff were safe arrived, I am  
In doubt for him ; for Lenox I'm in grief.

SIW. Consider Lenox, sir, is nobly slain ;  
They who in exalted causes fall  
Merit not tears but emulous gratulation.  
Look where the tyrant is !

SEYT. The witches, sire, with all the powers of hell  
Could not preserve him from the hand of heaven.

*Enter MACDUFF, with Macbeth's sword.*

MACD. Long live Malcolm, King of Scotland !  
So you are,  
And though I should not boast that one,  
Whom guilt might easily weigh down, fell  
By my hand, yet here I present you with  
The tyrant's sword, to shew that heaven appointed

Me to take revenge for you, and all  
That suffered by his power.

MALC. Macduff, we have more antient records  
Than this of your successful courage.

MACD. Now, Scotland, thou shalt see bright day  
again ;

That cloud's removed that did eclipse thy sun,  
And rain down blood upon thee. As your arms  
Did all contribute to this victory,  
So let our voices all concur to give  
One joyful acclamation,  
Long live Malcolm, King of Scotland !

MALC. We shall not make a large expense of  
time

Before we reckon with your several loves,  
And make us even with you. Thanes and kinsmen  
Henceforth be earls, the first that ever Scotland  
Saw honoured with that title, and may they  
Still flourish on your families,  
Though, like the laurels you have won to-day,  
They spring from a field of blood.  
Drag his body hence, and let it hang upon  
A pinnacle in Dunsinane ! to show  
To future ages what to those is due  
Who others' right by lawless power pursue.\*

MACD. So may kind fortune crown your reign  
with peace,  
As it has crown'd your armies with success ;  
And may the people's prayers still wait on you,  
As all their curses did Macbeth pursue.  
His vice shall make your virtue shine more bright,  
As a fair day succeeds a stormy night.

\* The body of Macbeth was transported to the Royal Sepulchre, at I-colme-kill, and deposited beside that of Duncan. — *Chronicles of the Picts and Scots*, p. 152 ; Edin. 1867. At the time of his death Macbeth had reigned seventeen years over Scotland. His death by the hand of Macduff is a fiction.

*Additional Note.*—The tragedy of Macbeth has been translated into most of the Continental languages. In May 1848 it appeared on the Spanish stage, at Madrid, the chief characters being performed by Mme. Bosio, and MM. Bordas and Morelli. According to the journals of the day, "her majesty, Queen Isabella, honoured the theatre with her presence the first night, and appeared highly entertained."

**THE TEMPEST.**

*The Tempest, or the Enchanted Island. A Comedy.  
As it is now acted at his Highness the Duke of York's  
Theatre. London, printed by T. N. for Henry Herring-  
ham, at the Blew Anchor, in the Lower Walk of the New  
Exchange, 1674.*

If the merits of this interpolated version of the "Tempest" were to be estimated by the success that attended its original representation at the Duke's Theatre, they would give it a high place in the dramatic literature of the period. But we suspect that this was not the result either of the introduction of a duplicate hero and heroine, or by assigning a sister to Caliban, or even by the poetry and verses of Dryden, but exclusively by admiration of the scenical arrangements, over which D'avenant is admitted by his cotemporaries to have had an absolute mastery. Added to this, the vocal portion of the Drama possessed great attraction. It was produced under the management of D'avenant, whose musical entertainments had been sanctioned by the Protector, and it is not improbable that he may have been present at some of them *incognito*.

Dryden, in his preface to the first edition of the Drama, which was not printed until after the decease of D'avenant, mentions that with the latter "the counterpart to Shakespeare's plot" originated, by bringing on the stage a man who had never seen a woman, and a woman who had never seen a man, "an excellent contrivance," which, "from the very first moment," so pleased him that he never wrote anything with more delight—an avowal which directly shews that to Dryden was delegated the pleasing duty of depicting Hypolito and Dorinda. "The comical parts of the sailors" were the invention of his partner, and "mostly his writing, as you will easily discover by his style." The affectionate manner in which the survivor speaks of his departed friend is very pleasing, and fully justifies Claud Halcro in his praise of "Glorious John."\*

We are indebted to Pepys for the exact date of the first performance of this joint production. Upon the 7th November 1667, the following entry will be found

\* Pirate, vol. i., p. 217. Edin. 1831.



in his diary :\*—" At noon resolved with Sir W. Pen to go to see 'The Tempest,' an old play of Shakspeare, acted I hear *the first day*; and so my wife and girl and W. Hewer by themselves, and Sir William Pen and I afterwards by ourselves : and forced to sit in the side Balcone over against the musique-room at the Duke's house, close by my lady Dorset, and a great many great ones. The house mighty full; the King and Court there : and the most innocent play that ever I saw : and a curious piece of musick in an echo of half sentences, the echo repeating the former half, while the man goes on to the latter, which is mighty pretty. The play has no great wit, but yet good above ordinary plays." This reference to the echo duet between Ferdinand and Ariel sufficiently establishes the fact that the Drama in question was the alteration of the Tempest by Dryden and D'avenant. According to Lord Braybrooke the music was by Banister.† Pepys again witnessed the performance of the same play at the Duke of York's house, upon the 18th of the same month, when he declares it to be very pleasant, and full of "so good variety that I cannot be more pleased almost in a comedy, only the seaman's part a little too tedious."

The last time the worthy Secretary of the Admiralty makes mention of the "Tempest" is upon the 12th December 1667, when he went to the Duke of York's house and found it very full. "But I could take little pleasure more than the play, from not being able to look about, for fear of being seen." He had one sly peep notwithstanding. "I saw a French lady in the pit with a tunique, just like one of ours, only a hankercher about her neck, but this fashion for a woman did

\* Vol. iv., p. 257. London, 1848. Crown 8vo.

† In 1677, Mr Charles D'avenant wrote a dramatic opera called *Circe*, which was set to music by John Banister, the King's first violin, and performed under the poet's own direction, at the Duke's Theatre, with considerable applause."—*Bough's Anecdotes of Music*. The following advertisement is interesting, and shews that his concerts had become popular :—

"At Mr John Banister's house in Shandos Street, Covent Garden, called the Musick School, will be a variety of Musick *evry evening*, beginning this present Thursday at six o'clock.

Nov. 22-25, 1675."

not look decent." The theatrical taste of Pepys had, it would seem, occasioned observations which annoyed him not a little, a circumstance that explains the reason he was desirous not to be seen.

The death of D'avenant, the "ruling Monarch of the Storm," which occurred on the 7th April 1668, and the transfer of the Duke's Theatre to Dorset Gardens, must have interrupted the performance of the "Tempest" for a time. Unfortunately the inimitable diary of Pepys terminates on the 30th May 1669, and the aid of this minute, amusing, but sad scandal-monger is, from his increasing defect of vision, brought to a close.

The following observations upon the dramatic skill of D'avenant, which does not seem to have hitherto been generally appreciated, are not without interest. The Honourable Edward Howard, the fifth son of Thomas Earl of Berkshire, K.G., was the brother of Lady Elizabeth Howard, the wife of Dryden. He was a dramatic writer, and figures in the Rehearsal. The chief merit of his plays are their rarity, which was so great that Bishop Percy when passing his projected edition of Buckingham through the press, was unable to get access to a copy of one of his dramas, entitled *Six Days' Adventures*, or the *New Utopia*, London, 1671, 4to—no copy being in the extensive library of Garrick; neither could it be found in the British Museum, and even a reward offered in the public journals failed to produce the book.\* In the preface to the "*Women's Conquest*," a tragedy-comedy by Mr Howard†, that gentleman, in speaking of dramatic pieces in rhyme, observes, "Neither do I believe that Sir William D'avenant, who was the first introducer of rhyme on the stage, did otherwise intend it, than for vocal representations and *operas*, in which it may do well, rather than for plays, as was known in his *Peru* and *Siege of Rhodes*. And I presume that my Lord of Orrery, whose ingenuity in verse brought it more in

\* See Nichols' *Illustrations*, vol. vii., p. 572. London, 1848, 8vo.

† London, 1671, 4to. Mrs Inchbald, in her comedy of *Every One has his Fault*, has borrowed the outlines of Sir Robert Ramble, Miss Woodburn, Placid and his wife, from this piece. See Geneste, vol. i., p. 120.

fashion in those ornaments he bestowed on the stage in Mustapha, and other of his heroic compositions, would not judge a debasing of their worth, if they were distinguished by the name of poems instead of plays."

It is not unlikely that through the connection by the marriage of his sister and Dryden, Howard, if not directly told by D'avenant, had heard his opinion from his brother-in-law, that rhyme might supersede recitative, to which an English ear was at the time unaccustomed. He does not himself appear to have had any fancy for it, as we have no rhyming tragedy or comedy from his pen, the only instances in his dramatic writings being those just mentioned.

Charles II., upon quitting France, brought with him a great love for plays in rhyme, after the French style, which, though apparently popular with the courtiers, was not much relished by the people. It never took root, and died of inanition, before the end of the century.

A few years after the death of D'avenant, Shadwell, subsequently the poet laureate of William III., and the political opponent of Dryden, made the "Tempest" into an opera—or more properly speaking a mock opera—which answered well as a *commercial* speculation, but did not say much for the taste of the writer, who, however, had the good sense never to print it.

Downes notices:—"In 1673, *The Tempest*, or the *Inchanted Island*, made into an opera by Mr Shadwell, having all new in it, as scenes, machines; one scene painted with myriads of aerial spirits, and another flying away, with a table furnished out with fruits, sweetmeats, and all sorts of viands, just when Duke Trincalo and his company were going to dinner; all things were performed in it so admirably well, that not any succeeding Opera got more money."\*

In his prefatory observations to the "Tempest," in the third volume of the works of Dryden, Sir Walter Scott thus expresses himself:—"The alteration of the *Tempest* was D'avenant's last work, and it seems to have been

\* *Roscus Anglicanus*, p. 34. In the collected edition of Shadwell's works in four volumes, this travestie has been omitted.

undertaken chiefly with a view to give room for scenical decoration. Few readers will think the play much improved by the introduction of the language which Davenant had acquired during the adventurous period of his life. Nevertheless, the ludicrous contest betwixt the sailors for the Dukedom and Viceroyship of a barren island gave much amusement at the time, and some of the expressions were long after proverbial. Much cannot be said for Davenant's ingenuity in contrasting the character of a woman who had never seen a man, with that of a man that had never seen a woman, or in inventing a sister monster to Caliban. The majestic simplicity of Shakespeare's plan is injured by thus doubling his characters, and his wild landscape is converted into a formal parterre, where each alley has its brother. In sketching characters drawn from fancy, and not from observation, the palm of genius must rest with the first inventor; others are but copyists, and a copy shows nowhere to such disadvantage as when placed by the original. Besides, although we are delighted with the feminine simplicity of Miranda, it becomes unmanly childishness in Hippolito, and the premature coquetry of Dorinda is disgusting, when contrasted with the maidenly purity that chastens the simplicity of Shakespeare's heroine. The latter seems to display, as it were by instinct, the innate dignity of her sex, the former to show, even in solitude, the germ of those vices by which, in a voluptuous age, the female character becomes degraded. The wild and savage character of Caliban is also sunk into low and vulgar buffoonery." This critique is perfectly correct. The drama as originally acted is still banished from the stage, to keep company in the library with Milton's *Comus* and Ben Jonson's *Sad Shepherd*.

In 1750 "The Tempest" was produced as an opera, and the authorship assigned to Garrick, whose name is written in MS. on the title page of a copy which, from the arms stamped on the back of the title, appears to have been sold as a duplicate from the Bridgewater Library. A list of the singers is given, but their respective characters are not mentioned. It may be conjectured that Beard took the part of Prospero, and Signora Curioni

that of Miranda. Beard was the son-in-law of Rich, the proprietor of Covent Garden Theatre, to the management of which he succeeded on the death of his father-in-law. He brought out, with great success, many musical pieces; but in 1766, finding that a deafness, under which he had suffered some years, could not be removed, he was desirous of retiring from the bustle of a theatre to the quiet of private life. This he accomplished in 1767.

In a letter of Mrs Delany, 1743-4, she says,—“Joseph, I believe, will be next Friday, but Handel is mightily out of humour about it, for Sullivan, who is to sing Joseph, is a *block* with a very fine voice, and Beard has *no* voice at all.” It was performed four times during the Lent of the year 1744.\* If Beard lost his voice on this occasion, he must have got it back when he sang as Prospero several songs in this worthless opera. No wonder the author, whether Garrick or not, was ashamed of his handiwork, and wished to conceal his name. From the position of the Duke of Bridgewater, it might be supposed that he had good means of ascertaining who had the discredit of being the author.

Whilst the citizens of London were enjoying their operatic travestie of the Tempest, the fashionable inhabitants of Edinburgh took a fancy to have an opera for themselves, concocted out of Dryden and D’Avenant. It does not appear to have been printed, and can only be judged of by the songs, one copy of which had been preserved by the late David Constable, Esq., advocate, son of the well-known Archibald Constable, and was purchased at the dispersion of his very curious library, remarkable for the great number of literary curiosities and tracts which it contained.

The title is as follows,—“The Words of the Songs in the New Opera of the Tempest. The Music composed by Mr Smith, as they are sung at the Theatre in Edinburgh. MDCCLVI. 8vo.” The first stage direction is as follows, — “By Prospero’s order, his spirit, Milcha, enters, and, waving his wand, raises the Storm by the

\* Autobiography, Vol. I., p. 271. London, 1861. 8vo.

following invocation, sung by Mr Sadler in the character of Milcha,—

## RECITATIVE.

“ Arise, ye subterranean winds,  
 Arise ye deadly blighting fiends,  
     &c.           &c.           &c.

It thunders and lightens, and the back scene draws up to music composed for the occasion, discovers the sea, rocks, and a ship in distress. It rains showers of fire, and other prodigies appear, raised by magic.”

Ariel's songs are reduced to two. Those usually assigned to the character are transferred to Milcha, who, in the second act, “transformed into the figure of a demon, sings to the wicked usurper of Milan, and his two confederates, the following song,—

“ Around, around we pace, about this cursed place,  
 While thus we compass in, these mortals and their sin.  
     Your vile lives you shall discover,  
     Truly all your deeds declare,  
     For about you spirits hover,  
     That can tell you what they are.  
 Spirits, take them, spirits, take them hence,  
 Make them grieve for their offence.”

These lines assuredly are neither by Shakespeare, Dryden, nor D'avenant, and are unworthy even of Garrick. Neither Milcha, nor anyone else, in the English opera, sings anything of the kind, so that the author of the Edinburgh version must be held responsible for it. The music is said on the title page to be by “Mr Smith,” who was the composer of the English one. It would be curious to ascertain whether he was author of the music of this production, and of the “music composed *for the occasion*” of its “back scene;” nothing of the kind being to be found in the English contemporary piece.

Milcha has nine songs; Ariel, performed by Mrs Love, three; and Caliban, two. The last character was assigned to Mr Stamper, who was, according to tradition, an exceedingly good low comedian, but of the merits of Sadler as a singer there is no record. Mrs Love was, perhaps, the wife of Mr Love, who subsequently became manager of the Edinburgh Theatre.

In the year 1780 there was printed at London, for W. Thomson, Exeter-Change, a piece in three acts, entitled "The Shipwreck, altered from Shakespeare and Dryden, with the original music by Smith, as performed at the Patagonian Theatre, Exeter-Change. 8vo." Who the performers were is not disclosed, and of the Patagonian Theatre we know nothing beyond the fact that MacNally's "Apotheosis of Punch," intended to ridicule Sheridan's monody on the death of Garrick, was said to have been acted at the same place. The only obligation to Dryden is the retention of the character of Sycorax. Borrowing the witches of Macbeth from Shakespeare, and spoiling them, is inexcusable. The play opens on "a heath," where several witches enter, and sing as follows,—

*1st Witch.* Sisters, sisters, hither come,  
For by the pricking of my thumb,  
Mischief sure and great confusion  
Will Prospero work to our delusion.

*2d Witch.* Then must we, by magic spell,  
Engendered in the womb of hell,  
Blast his prospects, destroy his power.

*All.* Hail this direful midnight hour !

*1st Witch.* Like crimson blood the moon doth turn,  
And Vesuvius Mount doth raging burn ;  
This the time to work our ruin,  
When hell its horror is a brewing ;  
For, sleeping in my mildewed cave,  
My fiery fiend, my trusty slave,  
In sulphurous flame my toe he touched,  
And his bak'd shoulders angry smutch'd."

And so on. Devils are summoned to destroy all on board the ship. The demons rise and proceed to obey the orders given, but before departing have a dance, and are no doubt much delighted with the task imposed upon them. After they have gone the witches close the scene with the following air,—

"Hark, how the winds rush from their caves ;  
Hark, how old ocean frets and raves,  
From their deep roots the rocks he tears,  
Whole deluges lets fly,  
That dash against the sky,  
And seem to drown the stars,

## CHORUS.

Away, nor let us longer stay,  
 Nor let us longer stay,  
 Nor let us longer stay,  
 But hie away."

Smith is again represented as the composer of the music of this very absurd production. This assertion cannot be believed, for it is hardly credible that he would venture to injure his reputation by setting to music such unmitigated rubbish as the songs and choruses of the shipwreck.

Boaden says, on the 28th of April (1785), the *Tempest* was acted at Drury Lane "pure and unmixed." "They had not yet embraced the additions of Davenant and Dryden; it will therefore be a fit opportunity to take leave of that simple, enchanting production. The exquisite beauty of Miss Phillips was not more characteristic of Miranda than her manner of speaking the language. Bensley was the Prospero of the night, and in truth the only Prospero. Old Bannister's Caliban contrasted finely with the Ariel of Miss Field. Some prejudice existed against the masque introduced by the immortal author, and it was, therefore, here omitted." \* With whom the "prejudice" existed is not explained, but the "*Tempest*" of Shakespeare can hardly be characterised as "perfectly put upon the stage" when this beautiful pageant was discarded. The same writer observes that it was introduced by Reynolds in "*Twelfth Night*" "where it was greatly attractive," but where "it has no business whatever."

The *Tempest*, by Davenant and Dryden, was revived at Drury Lane Theatre on 2d November 1801, but it was not received with favour. It was again performed at Covent Garden on the 31st of October 1812,† the part of Prospero being performed by Young, who, according to the "*Theatrical Inquisitor*," did not do much for the part. Emery represented Caliban, Mathews, Stephano, and Blanchard, Trincalo; Hippolito

\* Boaden's "*Kemble*," Vol. I. p. 269, London 1825. 8vo.

† "*Theatrical Inquisitor*," Vol. I. p. 237, London 1812. 8vo.



was assigned to Mrs Henry Johnston, Dorinda\* to Miss Booth, and Ariel to Miss Bolton, afterwards Lady Thurlow.† The other characters were equally well cast.

"This play has been again revived, but without much profit to the theatre or pleasure to the public. Fashion has so long decided in favour of the wretched, garbled alteration by Dryden and D'avenant that there are no hopes of seeing the genuine play upon the stage, and the present shadow of the original can never succeed." It was nevertheless repeated thrice in the month of November, and once in the month of January, in spite of this anathema.

The critic admits that Emery's performance of Caliban "was of the very first kind; it is almost impossible to conceive a more perfect delineation of the character." Miss Bolton in Ariel was perfection; and "her performance united the elegance of a dancer with the just action and delivery of the more finished actress."

John Kemble when performing Prospero, in pronouncing the word "aches" made it a polysyllable, which being unusual gave offence to the journalists of the day. Young, to please the public, made it a monosyllable at the sacrifice of the rhythm. Nevertheless Kemble was right, and the public wrong. In verses written during the time of Shakespeare, the rhythm claims it as a polysyllable.‡

The songs in the *Tempest* have been set by many eminent composers. D'avenant selected Banister, whose productions pleased Pepys, no mean judge of music.§ At a latter part of the same century, Henry Purcell appears also to have been engaged for the same purpose; but his version was not published at the time, and the MS. came into the hands of Sir John Hawkins, who, as Sibbald mentions in his *Edinburgh Magazine*,|| obligingly

\* Dorinda was a favourite character of Miss Farren, afterwards Countess of Derby.

† Mary Catherine, eldest daughter of James Richard Bolton of St Martins-in-the-Fields, gentleman, married Edward, second Lord Thurlow, 13th November 1813.

‡ See Boaden's "Life of Kemble," Vol. II., p. 519, London, 1825. 8vo.

§ Banister died in 1679. Hawkins, vol. iii. p. 470.

|| Vol. i.

communicated from the original score, "To a Catch Club in Edinburgh," a duet commencing,

"No stars again shall hurt you from above,  
But all your days shall pass in peace and love ;"

and a song,

"Halcyon days, now wars are ending,  
You shall find whene'er you sail."

Neither of these occur in Dryden and D'avenant's play—a fact leading to the inference, that after the death of the latter, and its subsequent revival, considerable liberties had been taken with the drama as originally represented in the time of Charles II.

In 1756, the opera of the *Tempest*, taken from Shakespeare, and embellished with a variety of additional ancient and modern songs, was performed in Garrick's theatre with great success. In Edinburgh, as previously mentioned, a different opera with the same name came before the public. The only portions printed, were the songs, most of which may be found in the D'avenant version, but Milqha relieved Ariel of the greater portion of the singing. In both operas the name of "Mr Smith" is inserted on the title-page as the composer. In the English Opera, Beard as Prospero, sings, an accomplishment unknown to Shakespeare; whilst in the latter the two spirits relieve him of the task. Thus the two operas required different music. That the English opera was the work of John Christopher Schmidt, a German whose surname had been converted during his long sojourn in England into Smith, is correct, but it may admit of question if he had much, if anything, to do with the Scottish manufacture.

Smith was the pupil and personal friend of Handel till his decease. The first year of Handel's blindness, during the performance of his Oratorio of Sampson, his former pupil played the organ whilst the teacher sat beside him. Beard, who had recovered the voice which Mrs Delany asserted he had lost, sang with equal power and feeling the lines—

"Total eclipse, no sun, no moon ;  
All dark amid the blaze of noon."

The major portion of the audience were so forcibly struck by the singular appropriateness of the poetry and music to the condition of the venerable composer, who was sitting beside the organ before them, that they with difficulty restrained a strong inclination to burst into tears.

John Beard received his musical education in the Chapel Royal under Bernard Gates. He was one of the vocalists in the Duke of Chandos's Chapel at Cannons, where he sang in Handel's Oratorio of Esther. His first appearance on the stage was at Drury Lane, 30th August 1737, as Sir John Loverule in "The Devil to Pay." His voice was a rich tenor, and he became an immense favourite of the town by his style of singing Galliard's hunting song, "With Early Horn," which continued to be popular for many years, and might now be successfully revived.

In 1773 there was published "'The Prodigal Son,' an oratorio written by Mr Thomas Hull.\* Set to music by Dr Arnold. A new edition. London, printed for John Bell, near Exeter Exchange in the Strand, and C. Etherington in York. Small 4to." On the title is a very pretty vignette of the father receiving his repentant son. It is dedicated to John Beard by the author, "as a grateful tribute to that high reputation which you acquired and maintained for a succession of years, in this species of entertainment." It is divided into three parts, and partakes more of the opera than the oratorio. It was taken from the original Italian version, entitled "Il Figliuol Prodigio Oratorio Rosta in Musica dal Signor Carlo Francesco Cesarini. In Roma nella Stamperia del Bernabo, MD.CCVII. Con licenza de Superiori."

Soon after his successful appearance on the stage, Beard captivated the widowed daughter of James, Earl Waldegrave, who subsequently became his wife. With her he lived happily during fourteen years, and her death he deeply lamented. His second wife was, as previously mentioned, a daughter of Rich. He died 4th

\* This was Thomas Hull, a performer and dramatic writer of considerable talent, who had the merit of originating the Covent Garden fund for decayed actors. He died April 21, 1808, in the eighty-first year of his age.

February 1791, in the seventy-fifth year of his age, deeply regretted; for all who knew him loved him.

There will be found in the *European Magazine* for February 1791\* an eulogy of this very estimable man, from which the following extract in reference to his two marriages has been extracted: "Very early in life he married the Right Hon. Lady Herbert, but though that lady gave him a treasure in herself, she brought him no other treasure; and his struggles to support her in something like her former state involved him in many difficulties; and her frequent and long illnesses, occasioned principally by grief for having embarrassed the man she loved, increased these difficulties, and she sank and died under them.

"His present widow had the happiness to repair those ravages of his fortune, and enable him to gratify the first wish of his heart—*beneficence*. We need not add, that such a man as he lived peculiarly beloved, so he died peculiarly lamented."

His first wife, Lady Henrietta, born January 2, 1716-17, married the Hon. Edward Herbert in 1734, and became a widow the same year, having a posthumous child, Barbara, by him, who married, 1751, the Earl of Powis. Lady Henrietta had no family by her second espousals, and died May 31, 1753.

Those "polite" writers, as Lord Hailes used to designate the manufacturers of pedigrees, give an instance of their civility in the Waldegrave Peerage, as the edition of Collins, by Brydges, vol. iv., p. 244, omits all notice of Lady Henrietta *Beard*.

That excellent and worthy man George the Third patronised Smith and his oratorios, which for several years were fashionable, and continued to do so, notwithstanding that Italian music was becoming popular. Nevertheless his Majesty stood single in his preference of the great Handel. When the commemoration of his favourite composer was celebrated in Westminster on the 26th May 1784, the King was desirous that Smith should be present, and sent him a pressing invitation, assuring him that he should be admitted to a commo-

\* Vol. xix., p. 160.

dious seat without any difficulty, and should receive every accommodation in his Majesty's power during his residence in London. Fully sensible of the kindness of the King, Smith was compelled to decline the honour, apprehensive that, from his advanced age and the powerful performance of the well-known works of his deceased friend, the effort would be too much for his feeble frame.

It cannot be doubted that, whoever the Smith was who composed the music of the "Shipwreck," it could not be John Christopher Smith, born in 1712, and who in 1782 must have been seventy years of age. It must not be forgotten that to Dr Arne, the admirable composer of the music of *Artaxerxes* and *Comus*, the world is indebted for the much admired air of "Where the Bee Sucks."

Upon the 12th of July 1857, the late Charles Kean produced upon the boards of the Princess's Theatre Shakespeare's play of the "Tempest." The text "involute," omitting "an occasional passage, or compressing a subordinate scene, with manifest advantage to the action of the piece." These omissions and compressions, however judicious and necessary for stage effect, are certainly not in consonance with the original text. But the public received the play, as prepared for representation, with approbation, of which there could not be better evidence than that it was welcomed by eighty-seven successive audiences.

Every exertion was made to propitiate the popular taste. The alterations of Dryden and D'Avenant were omitted. Hippolito and Dorinda disappeared from the scene. Sycorax vanished, and Ariel was deprived of Milcha as a companion. The music, composed by J. L. Hatton, with the exception of a few favourite and well-known airs," was executed by an "invisible choir, led by Miss Poole, whose mellow voice sounded with the rich full clearness of a bell in the midst of, and above the accompanying melody."\* The eyes of the audience were gratified at the same time, with "a delicate spirit, at one moment descending in a ball of fire, at another rising gently from a tuft of flowers; again

\* *Life and Theatrical Times of Charles Kean*, Vol. ii., p. 220. London, 1858, crown 8vo.

sailing on the smooth waters on the back of a dolphin ; then gliding noiselessly over the sands as a water-nymph, and ever and anon perched on the summit of a rock, riding, or cleaving mid-air with the velocity of lightning." Then there was the gradual conversion of a long "perspective" of desolation to tropical luxuriance ; "trees rise from the earth, fountains and waterfalls gush from the rocks, while naiads, wood nymphs, and satyrs enter, bearing fruit and flowers, with which they form a banquet, and having invited the King and Company to partake, suddenly disappear."\*

That all this must have been exquisitely beautiful, and deserving the great applause it obtained, may without hesitation be conceded, and to borrow the words of Kean's Biographer it must be admitted "the powers of modern stage mechanism are almost as marvellous as the gift ascribed to the magic wand and book of Prospero," still they are not essential to the "pure and undefiled" representation of the 'magnificent drama' which Bishop Warburton designates as the noblest effort of "that sublime and amazing imagination peculiar to Shakespere."†

In his edition of Dryden, Sir Walter Scott assumes in his remarks on the "Tempest," that Dryden had more to do with the alteration of the drama than his partner, which may or may not be true. We are told, however, the reverse by the author of a comparison of the two "Stages," London 1702, 8vo, who, reviewing Dryden's plays says, "His 'Tempest'‡ is entirely Shakespere's and Sir William Davenant's." This assertion is in a great measure confirmed by what Dryden says in his preface. Scott seems to have looked upon Davenant more as a mechanist than a poet, yet such was not the case, and we are convinced that had the author of

\* Ib. p. 221.

† See preface to the "Tempest," arranged for representation at the Princess's Theatre, with Historical and Explanatory Notes, by Charles Kean, F.S.A., London 1857, 8vo. It is understood that Mr Kean, in the preparation of this edition, received the assistance of the late Mr Calcraft (J. W. Cole), for many years manager of the Dublin Theatre.

‡ P. 64.

"Marmion" been acquainted with the beauties of the "Cruel Brother," or the "Just Italian" which were hidden in a thick, unreadable, and ill-edited folio, he would without any hesitation have placed him as a poet beside Webster, Ford, Massinger, and Shirley, and not far below Beaumont, Fletcher, and the admirable Ben Jonson.

## PREFACE.

THE writing of prefaces to plays was probably invented by some very ambitious poet, who never thought he had done enough : perhaps by some ape of the French eloquence, which uses to make a business of a letter of gallantry, an examen of a farce ; and, in short, a great pomp and ostentation of words on every trifle. This is certainly the talent of that nation, and ought not to be invaded by any other. They do that out of gaiety, which would be an imposition\* upon us.

We may satisfy ourselves with surmounting them in the scene, and safely leave them those trappings of writing, and flourishes of the pen, with which they adorn the borders of their plays, and which are indeed no more than good landscapes to a very indifferent picture. I must proceed no farther in this argument, lest I run myself beyond my excuse for writing this. Give me leave, therefore, to tell you, reader, that I do not set a value on any thing I have written in this play, but out of gratitude to the memory of Sir William Davenant, who did me the honour to join me with him in the alteration of it.

It was originally Shakespeare's ; a poet for whom he had particularly a high veneration, and whom he first taught me to admire. The play itself had formerly been acted with success in the Black Friars : and our excellent Fletcher had so

\* A task imposed on us.—W.S.



great a value for it, that he thought fit to make use of the same design, not much varied, a second time. Those who have seen his "Sea-Voyage," may easily discern that it was a copy of Shakespeare's "Tempest." The storm, the desert island, and the woman who had never seen a man, are all sufficient testimonies of it. But Fletcher was not the only poet who made use of Shakespeare's plot: Sir John Suckling, a professed admirer of our author, has followed his footsteps in his "Goblins;" his *Regmella* being an open imitation of Shakespeare's *Miranda*, and his spirits, though counterfeit, yet are copied from *Ariel*. But Sir William Davenant, as he was a man of quick and piercing imagination, soon found that somewhat might be added to the design of Shakespeare, of which neither Fletcher nor Suckling had ever thought: and, therefore, to put the last hand to it, he designed the counter-part to Shakespeare's plot, namely, that of a man who had never seen a woman; that by this means those two characters of innocence and love might the more illustrate and commend each other. This excellent contrivance he was pleased to communicate to me, and to desire my assistance in it. I confess, that from the very first moment it so pleased me, that I never writ any thing with more delight. I must likewise do him that justice to acknowledge, that my writing received daily his amendments; and that is the reason why it is not so faulty, as the rest which I have done, without the help or correction of so judicious a friend. The comical parts of the sailors were also of his invention, and, for the most part, his writing, as you will easily discover by the style. In the time I writ with him, I had the opportunity to observe somewhat more nearly of him, than I had formerly

done, when I had only a bare acquaintance with him : I found him then of so quick a fancy, that nothing was proposed to him, on which he could not suddenly produce a thought, extremely pleasant and surprising ; and those first thoughts of his, contrary to the old Latin proverb, were not always the least happy. And as his fancy was quick, so likewise were the products of it remote and new. He borrowed not of any other ; and his imaginations were such as could not easily enter into any other man. His corrections were sober and judicious, and he corrected his own writings much more severely than those of another man, bestowing twice the time and labour in polishing, which he used in invention. It had perhaps been easy enough for me to have arrogated more to myself than was my due, in the writing of this play, and to have passed by his name with silence in the publication of it, with the same ingratitude which others have used to him, whose writings he hath not only corrected, as he hath done this, but has had a greater inspection over them, and sometimes added whole scenes together, which may as easily be distinguished from the rest, as true gold from counterfeit by the weight. But, besides the unworthiness of the action, which deterred me from it, (there being nothing so base as to rob the dead of his reputation,) I am satisfied I could never have received so much honour, in being thought the author of any poem, how excellent soever, as I shall from the joining my imperfections with the merit and name of Shakespeare and Sir William Davenant.

. JOHN DRYDEN.

*December 1, 1669.*

## PROLOGUE

As when a tree's cut down, the secret root  
Lives underground, and thence new branches  
shoot ;

So, from old Shakespeare's honoured dust, this day  
Springs up and buds a new-reviving play :  
Shakespeare, who—taught by none—did first im-  
part

To Fletcher wit, to labouring Jonson art.  
He monarch-like gave those, his subjects, law ;  
And is that nature which they paint and draw.  
Fletcher reached that which on his heights did grow,  
Whilst Jonson crept, and gathered all below.  
This did his love, and this his mirth digest ;  
One imitates him most, the other best.  
If they have since outwrit all other men,  
'Tis with the drops which fell from Shakespeare's  
pen.

The storm, which vanished on the neighbouring  
shore,

Was taught by Shakespeare's Tempest first to roar.  
That innocence and beauty, which did smile  
In Fletcher, grew on this enchanted isle.  
But Shakespeare's magic could not copied be ;  
Within that circle none durst walk but he.  
I must confess 'twas bold, nor would you now  
That liberty to vulgar wits allow,  
Which works by magic supernatural things :  
But Shakespeare's power is sacred as a King's.  
Those legends from old priesthood were received,  
And he then writ, as people then believed.

But if for Shakespeare we your grace implore,  
We for our theatre shall want it more :  
Who, by our dearth of youths, are forced to employ  
One of our women to present a boy ;  
And that's a transformation, you will say,  
Exceeding all the magic in the play.  
Let none expect in the last act to find  
Her sex transformed from man to womankind ;  
Whate'er she was before the play began,  
All you shall see of her is perfect man.  
Or if your fancy will be further led  
To find her woman—it must be a-bed.

## PROLOGUE

As when a tree's cut down, the secret root  
Lives underground, and thence new branches  
shoot;

So, from old Shakespeare's honoured dust, this day  
Springs up and buds a new-reviving play :  
Shakespeare, who—taught by none—did first im-  
part

To Fletcher wit, to labouring Jonson art.

He monarch-like gave those, his subjects, law ;  
And is that nature which they paint and draw.

Fletcher reached that which on his heights did grow,

Whilst Jonson crept, and gathered all below.

This did his love, and this his mirth digest ;

One imitates him most, the other best.

If they have since outwrit all other men,

'Tis with the dross which fell from Shakespeare's  
pen.

The storm, which vanished on the neighbouring  
shore,

Was taught by Shakespeare's *Tempest* first to roar.

That innocent beauty, which did smile

In Fletcher's *Love's Labour's Lost*, this enchanted isle.

But Shakespeare's magic could not copied be ;

Within his *Tempest* none durst walk but he.

I must be bold, nor would you now

That I should write with allow,

Which is a natural thing :

But I am not a King's

Trick, nor will I record

But if for Shakespeare we your grace impl-re.  
 We for our theatre shall want it more :  
 Who, by our dearth of youths, are forced to exchange  
 One of our women to present a boy ;  
 And that's a transformation, you will say,  
 Exceeding all the magic in the play.  
 Let none expect in the last act to find  
 Her sex transformed from man to woman-kind  
 Whate'er she was before the play began,  
 All you shall see of her is perfect man.  
 Or if your fancy will be further led  
 To find her woman—it must be a-b-d

a  
 royal  
 arch are  
 as if they  
 at compass-  
 one, which re-  
 ery rocky coast,  
 perpetual agitation.  
 raised by magic) has  
 it, as several spirits in  
 amongst the sailors, then  
 the air. And when the

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ALONZO, *Duke of Savoy, and Usurper of the Dukedom of Mantua.*

FERDINAND, *his Son.*

PROSPERO, *right Duke of Milan.*

ANTONIO, *his Brother, Usurper of the Dukedom.*

GONZALO, *a Nobleman of Savoy.*

HIPPOLITO, *one that never saw woman, right heir of the Dukedom of Mantua.*

STEPHANO, *Master of the Ship.*

MUSTACHO, *his Mate.*

TRINCALO, *Boatswain.*

VENTOSO, *a Mariner.*

*Several Mariners.*

*A Cabin-Boy.*

MIRANDA, } *Daughters to PROSPERO, that never*  
DORINDA, } *saw man.*

ARIEL, *an airy Spirit, Attendant on PROSPERO.*

*Several Spirits, Guards to PROSPERO.*

CALIBAN, } *Two Monsters of the Isle.*  
SYCOORAX, *his Sister,* }

## THE TEMPEST.

---

### ACT I. SCENE I.

*The front of the stage is opened, and the band of twenty-four violins, with the harpsicals and theorbos which accompany the voices, are placed between the pit and the stage. While the overture is playing, the curtain rises, and discovers a new frontispiece, joined to the great pilasters, on each side of the stage. This frontispiece is a noble arch, supported by large wreathed columns of the Corinthian order; the wreathings of the columns are beautified with roses wound round them, and several Cupids flying about them. On the cornice, just over the capitals, sits on either side a figure, with a trumpet in one hand, and a palm in the other, representing Fame. A little farther, on the same cornice, on each side of a compass-pediment, lie a lion and a unicorn, the supporters of the royal arms of England. In the middle of the arch are several angels, holding the King's arms, as if they were placing them in the midst of that compass-pediment. Behind this is the scene, which represents a thick cloudy sky, a very rocky coast, and a tempestuous sea in perpetual agitation. This tempest (supposed to be raised by magic) has many dreadful objects in it, as several spirits in horrid shapes flying down amongst the sailors, then rising and crossing in the air. And when the*



*ship is sinking, the whole house is darkened, and a shower of fire falls upon them. This is accompanied with lightning and several claps of thunder, to the end of the storm.*

*Enter MUSTACHO and VENTOSO.*

VEN. What a sea comes in !

MUS. A foaming sea ! we shall have foul weather.

*Enter TRINCALO.*

TRINC. The scud comes against the wind, 'twill blow hard.

*Enter STEPHANO.*

STEPH. Boatswain !

TRIN. Here, master ! what say you ?

STEPH. Ill weather ! let's off to sea.

MUS. Let's have sea room enough, and then let it blow the devil's head off.

STEPH. Boy ! Boy !

*Enter CABIN-BOY.*

BOY. Yaw, yaw ! here, master !

STEPH. Give the pilot a dram of the bottle.

*[Exeunt Stephano and Boy.]*

*Enter MARINERS, and pass over the stage.*

TRIN. Bring the cable to the capstorm !

*Enter ALONSO, ANTONIO, and GONZALO.*

ALON. Good Boatswain, have a care ; where's the master ? Play the men.

TRIN. Pray, keep below !

ANT. Where's the master, boatswain ?

TRIN. Do you not hear him ? You hinder us : Keep your cabins ! you help the storm.

GON. Nay, good friend, be patient.

TRIN. Ay, when the sea is : Hence ! what care these roarers for the name of Duke ? To cabin ; silence ; trouble us not.

GON. Good friend, remember whom thou hast aboard.

TRIN. None that I love more than myself. You are a counsellor ; if you can advise these elements to silence, use your wisdom : if you cannot, make yourself ready in the cabin for the ill hour. Cheerly, good hearts ! Out of our way, sirs.

*[Exeunt Trincalo and Mariners.]*

GON. I have great comfort from this fellow ; methinks his complexion is perfect gallows : stand fast, good fate, to his hanging ; make the rope of his destiny our cable, for our own does little advantage us. If he be not born to be hanged, we shall be drowned. *[Exit.]*

*Enter TRINCALO and STEPHANO.*

TRIN. Up aloft, lads ! Come, reef both topsails !

STEPH. Make haste, let's weigh, let's weigh, and off to sea ! *[Exit Steph.]*

*Enter two MARINERS, and pass over the stage.*

TRIN. Hands down ! Man your main cap-storm !

*Enter MUSTACHO and VENTOSO at the other door.*

MUS. Up aloft ! and man your seere cap-storm !

VEN. My lads, my hearts of gold, get in your capstorm-bar ! Hoa up, hoa up ! &c.

*[Exeunt Mustacho and Ventoso.]*

*Enter STEPHANO.*

STEPH. Hold on well ! hold on well ! Nip well there ; quarter-master, get's more nippers.

*[Exit Steph.]*

*Enter two MARINERS, and pass over again.*

TRIN. Turn out, turn out all hands to capstern !  
You dogs, is this a time to sleep ! Lubbord.  
Heave together, lads ! [TRINCALO whistles.

*[Exeunt Mustacho and Ventoso.*

MUS. *[within.]* Our vial's broke.

VEN. *[within.]* 'Tis but our vial-block has given  
way. Come, heave, lads ! we are fixed again.  
Heave together, bullies.

*Enter STEPHANO.*

STEPH. Cut down the hammocks ! cut down the  
hammocks ! come, my lads : Come, bullies, cheer  
up ! heave lustily. The anchor's apeak.

TRIN. Is the anchor apeak !

STEPH. Is a-weigh ! is a-weigh.

TRIN. Up aloft, my lads, upon the forecastle !  
cut the anchor, cut him !

ALL *[within.]* Haul catt, haul catt, haul catt,  
haul : Haul catt, haul. Below.

STEP. Aft, aft, and loose the mizen !

TRIN. Get the mizen-tack aboard. Haul aft  
mizen-sheet.

*Enter MUSTACHO.*

MUS. Loose the main-top sail !

STEP. Let him alone, there's too much wind.

TRIN. Loose fore-sail ! haul aft both sheets !  
trim her right afore the wind. Aft ! aft ! lads,  
and hale up the mizen here.

MUS. A mackrel-gale, master.

STEPH. *[within.]* Port hard, port ! the wind  
veers forward, bring the tack aboard-port is.  
Starboard, starboard, a little steady ; now steady,  
keep her thus, no nearer you cannot come, till the  
sails are loose.

*Enter VENTOSO.*

VEN. Some hands down : The guns are loose.

[*Exit. Mus.*]

TRIN. Try the pump, try the pump.

[*Exit Vent.*]

*Enter MUSTACHO at the other door.*

MUS. O master ! six foot water in hold.

STEPH. Clap the helm hard aweather ! flat, flat, flat-in the fore-sheet there.

TRIN. Over-haul your fore-bowling.

STEPH. Brace in the larboard. [*Exit.*]

TRIN. A curse upon this howling ! [*A great cry within.*] They are louder than the weather.

*Enter ANTONIO and GONZALO.*

Yet again, what do you here ? Shall we give o'er, and drown ? Ha' you a mind to sink ?

GON. A pox o' your throat, you bawling, blasphemous, uncharitable dog.

TRIN. Work you then, and be poxed.

ANT. Hang, cur, hang, you whorson insolent noise-maker ! We are less afraid to be drowned than thou art.

TRIN. Ease the fore-brace a little. [*Exit.*]

GON. I'll warrant him for drowning, though thy ship were no stronger than a nut-shell, and as leak as an unstaunched wench.

*Enter ALONZO and FERDINAND.*

FER. For myself I care not, but your loss brings a thousand deaths to me.

ALON. O name not me, I am grown old, my son ; I now am tedious to the world, and that, By use, is so to me : But, Ferdinand, I grieve my subjects' loss in thee : Alas !

I suffer justly for my crimes, but why  
 Thou should'st——O heaven! [*A cry within.*  
 Hark! farewell, my son, a long farewell!

*Enter TRINCALO, MUSTACHO, and VENTOSO.*

TRIN. What, must our mouths be cold then?

VEN. All's lost! To prayers, to prayers.

GON. The Duke and Prince are gone within to prayers. Let's assist them.

MUS. Nay, we may e'en pray too, our  
 Case is now alike.

ANT. Mercy upon us! we split, we split!

GON. Let's all sink with the Duke, and the  
 young Prince. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter STEPHANO and TRINCALO.*

TRIN. The ship is sinking. [*A new cry within.*

STEP. Run her ashore!

TRIN. Luff! luff! or we are all lost! there's a  
 rock upon the starboard-bow.

STEPH. She strikes, she strikes! All shift for  
 themselves.

## SCENE II.

*In the midst of the shower of fire, the scene changes.  
 The cloudy sky, rocks, and sea vanish; and, when  
 the lights return, discover that beautiful part of  
 the island, which was the habitation of Prospero:  
 'Tis composed of three walks of cypress-trees; each  
 side-walk leads to a cave, in one of which Pros-  
 pero keeps his daughter, in the other Hippolito:  
 The middle-walk is of great depth, and leads to  
 an open part of the island.*

*Enter PROSPERO and MIRANDA.*

PRO. Miranda, where's your sister?

MIR. I left her looking from the pointed rock,  
At the walk's end, on the huge beat of waters.

PROS. It is a dreadful object.

MIR. If by your art,  
My dearest father, you have put them in  
This roar, allay them quickly.

PROS. I have so ordered,  
That not one creature in the ship is lost :  
I have done nothing but in care of thee,  
My daughter, and thy pretty sister :  
You both are ignorant of what you are,  
Not knowing whence I am, nor that I'm more  
Than Prospero, master of a narrow cell,  
And thy unhappy father.

MIR. I ne'er endeavoured  
To know more than you were pleased to tell me.

PROS. I should inform thee farther.

MIR. You often, sir, began to tell me what I am,  
But then you stopt.

PROS. The hour's now come ;  
Obey, and be attentive. Canst thou remember  
A time, before we came into this cell ?  
I do not think thou canst, for then thou wert not  
Full three years old.

MIR. Certainly I can, sir.

PROS. Tell me the image then of anything,  
Which thou dost keep in thy remembrance still.

MIR. Sir, had I not four or five women once,  
that tended me ?

PROS. Thou hadst, and more, Miranda : What  
seest thou else,  
In the dark back-ward, and abyss of time ?  
If thou rememberest aught, ere thou cam'st here,  
Then how thou cam'st thou mayest remember  
too.

MIR. Sir, that I do not.

PROS. Fifteen years since, Miranda,

Thy father was the Duke of Milan, and  
A Prince of power.

MIR. Sir, are not you my father?

PROS. Thy mother was all virtue, and she said  
Thou wast my daughter, and thy sister too.

MIR. O heavens! what foul play had we, that  
We hither came? or was't a blessing that we did?

PRO. Both, both, my girl.

MIR. But, sir, I pray, proceed.

PROS. My brother, and thy uncle, called Antonio,

To whom I trusted then the manage of my state,  
While I was wrapped with secret studies,—that  
false uncle,

Having attained the craft of granting suits,  
And of denying them; whom to advance,  
Or lop, for over-topping,—soon was grown  
The ivy, which did hide my Princely trunk,  
And sucked my verdure out. Thou attend'st not.

MIR. O good sir, I do.

PROS. I thus neglecting worldly ends, and bent  
To closeness, and the bettering of my mind,  
Waked in my false brother an evil nature: He  
did believe

He was indeed the Duke, because he then  
Did execute the outward face of sovereignty—  
Dost thou still mark me?

MIR. Your story would cure deafness.

PROS. This false Duke  
Needs would be absolute Milan, and confederate  
With Savoy's Duke, to give him tribute, and  
To do him homage.

MIR. False man!

PROS. This duke of Savoy, being an enemy  
To me inveterate, strait grants my brother's suit;  
And, on a night, mated to his design,  
Antonio opened the gates of Milan, and

In the dead of darkness hurried me thence,  
With thy young sister, and thy crying self.

MIR. But wherefore did they not that hour destroy us ?

PROS. They durst not, girl, in Milan, for the love

My people bore me ; in short they hurried us  
Away to Savoy, and thence aboard a bark at  
Nissa's port,

Bore us some leagues to sea, when they prepared  
A rotten carcase of a boat, not rigged,  
No tackle, sail or mast ; the very rats  
Instinctively had quit it.

MIR. Alack ! what trouble  
Was I then to you ?

PROS. Thou and thy sister were  
Two Cherubins, which did preserve me : You both  
Did smile, infused with fortitude from Heaven.

MIR. How came we ashore ?

PROS. By providence divine.  
Some food we had, and some fresh water, which  
A nobleman of Savoy, called Gonzalo,  
Appointed master of that black design,  
Gave us ; with rich garments and all necessaries,  
Which since have steaded much : and of his gentleness—

Knowing I loved my books—he furnished me,  
From mine own library, with volumes, which  
I prize above my Dukedom.

MIR. Would I might see that man !

PROS. Here in this island we arrived, and here  
Have I your tutor been. But by my skill  
I find, that my mid-heaven doth depend  
On a most happy star, whose influence  
If I now court not, but omit, my fortunes  
Will ever after droop : Here cease more questions ;  
Thou art inclined to sleep : 'Tis a good dulness,



And give it way ; I know thou can'st not chuse.

*[She falls asleep.]*

Come away, my spirit : I am ready now ; approach,  
My Ariel, come !

*Enter ARIEL.*

ARIEL. All hail, great master,  
Grave sir, hail ! I come to answer thy best pleasure,  
Be it to fly, to swim, to shoot into the fire,  
To ride into the curled clouds ; to thy strong  
bidding

Task Ariel and all his qualities.

PROS. Hast thou, spirit, performed to point  
The tempest, that I bade thee ?

ARIEL. To every article.

I boarded the Duke's ship ; now on the beak,  
Now in the waste, the deck, in every cabin,  
I flamed amazement ; and sometimes I seemed  
To burn in many places ; on the top-mast,  
The yards, and bow-sprit, I did flame distinctly ;  
Nay, once I rained a shower of fire upon them.

PROS. My brave spirit !—  
Who was so firm, so constant, that this coil  
Did not infect his reason ?

ARIEL. Not a soul  
But felt a fever of the mind, and played  
Some tricks of desperation ; all,  
But mariners, plunged in the foaming brine,  
And quit the vessel. The Duke's son, Ferdinand,  
With hair upstaring,—more like reeds than hair—  
Was the first man that leaped ; cried, Hell is  
empty !

And all the devils are here !

PROS. Why, that's my spirit !—  
But, was not this nigh shore ?

ARIEL. Close by, my master.

PROS. But, Ariel, are they safe ?

ARIEL. Not a hair perished.  
In troops I have dispersed them round this isle :  
The Duke's son I have landed by himself,  
Whom I have left warming the air with sighs  
In an odd angle of the isle, and sitting :  
His arms enfolded in this sad knot.

PROS. Say how thou hast disposed the mariners  
Of the Duke's ship, and all the rest o' the fleet ?

ARIEL. Safely in harbour  
Is the Duke's ship ; in the deep nook, where  
once

Thou called'st me up at midnight to fetch dew  
From the still vexed Bermoothes, there she's hid ;  
The mariners all under hatches stowed ;  
Whom, with a charm, joined to their suffered  
labour,

I have left asleep : And for the rest o' the fleet,  
Which I dispersed, they all have met again,  
And are upon the Mediterranean float,  
Bound sadly home from Italy ;  
Supposing that they saw the Duke's ship wrecked,  
And his great person perish.

PROS. Ariel, thy charge  
Exactly is performed : But there's more work.—  
What is the time o' the day ?

ARIEL. Past the mid season.

PROS. At least two glasses.  
The time 'twixt six and now must by us both  
Be spent most precious.

ARIEL. Is there more toil ?  
Since thou dost give me pains, let me remember  
Thee what thou hast promised, which is not yet  
Performed me.

PROS. How now ! moody ?  
What is't thou can'st demand ?

ARIEL. My liberty.

PROS. Before the time be out !—no more !

ARIEL. I pr'ythee,  
Remember I have done thee faithful service ;  
Told thee no lies ; made thee no mistakings ;  
Served without or grudge or grumblings ;  
Thou didst promise to bate me a full year.

PROS. Dost thou forget  
From what a torment I did free thee ?

ARIEL. No.

PROS. Thou dost ; and think'st it much to  
tread the ooze  
Of the salt deep ;  
To run against the sharp wind of the north ;  
To do my business in the veins of the earth,  
When it is baked with frost.

ARIEL. I do not, sir.

PROS. Thou liest, malignant thing !—Hast thou  
forgot  
The foul witch Sycorax, who, with age, and envy,  
Was grown into a hoop ? Hast thou forgot her ?

ARIEL. No, sir.

PROS. Thou hast ! Where was she born ? Speak,  
tell me.

ARIEL. Sir, in Argier.

PROS. Oh, was she so ?—I must,  
Once every month, recount what thou hast been,  
Which thou forgettest. This damned witch  
Sycorax,

For mischiefs manifold, and sorceries  
Too terrible to enter human hearing,  
From Argier, thou know'st, was banish'd :  
But, for one thing she did,  
They would not take her life.—Is not this true ?

ARIEL. Ay, sir.

PROS. This blue-eyed hag was hither brought  
with child,  
And here was left by the sailors : Thou, my slave,  
As thou report'st thyself, wast then her servant ;

And, 'cause thou wast a spirit too delicate  
 To act her earthly and abhorred commands,  
 Refusing her grand hests, she did confine thee,  
 By help of her more potent ministers,  
 (In her unmitigable rage) into a cloven pine ;  
 Within whose rift imprisoned, thou didst painfully  
 Remain a dozen years, within which space she died,  
 And left thee there ; where thou didst vent thy  
     groans,

As fast as mill-wheels strike. Then was this isle—  
 Save for two brats, which she did litter here,  
 The brutish Caliban, and his twin-sister,  
 Two freckled hag-born whelps—not honoured with  
 A human shape.

ARIEL. Yes ; Caliban her son, and Sycorax his  
     sister.

PROS. Dull thing !—I say so.—He,  
 That Caliban, and she, that Sycorax  
 Whom I now keep in service. Thou best know'st  
 What torment I did find thee in ; thy groans  
 Did make wolves howl, and penetrate the breasts  
 Of ever-angry bears ; it was a torment  
 To lay upon the damned, which Sycorax  
 Could ne'er again undo : It was my art,  
 When I arrived and heard thee, that made the  
     pine  
 To gape, and let thee out.

ARIEL. I thank thee, master.

PROS. If thou more murmurest, I will rend an  
     oak,  
 And peg thee in his knotty entrails, till thou  
 Hast howled away twelve winters more.

ARIEL. Pardon, master !  
 I will be correspondent to command,  
 And be a gentle spirit.

PROS. Do so ; and after two days I'll discharge  
     thee.

ARIEL. Thanks, my great master! But I have yet one request.

PROS. What's that, my spirit?

ARIEL. I know that this day's business is important,

Requiring too much toil for one alone.

I have a gentle spirit for my love,

Who twice seven years has waited for my freedom;

Let it appear, it will assist me much,

And we with mutual joy shall entertain

Each other. This, I beseech you, grant me!

PROS. You shall have your desire.

ARIEL. That's my noble master.—Milcha!

*[Milcha flies down to his assistance.]*

MIL. I am here, my love.

ARIEL. Thou art free! Welcome, my dear!—  
What shall we do? Say, say, what shall we do?

PROS. Be subject to no sight but mine; invisible

To every eye-ball else. Hence, with diligence;

Anon thou shalt know more.

*[They both fly up, and cross in the air.]*

Thou hast slept well, my child. *[To Mir.]*

MIR. The sadness of your story put heaviness in me.

PROS. Shake it off!—Come on, I'll now call Caliban, my slave, who never yields us a kind answer.

MIR. 'Tis a creature, sir, I do not love to look on.

PROS. But, as it is, we cannot miss him: He does make our fire, fetch in our wood, and serve in offices that profit us.—What ho, slave! Caliban thou earth, thou, speak!

CAL. *[within.]* There's wood enough within.

PROS. Thou poisonous slave! got by the devil himself

Upon thy wicked dam, come forth!

*Enter CALIBAN.*

CAL. As wicked dew, as e'er my mother brushed with raven's feather from unwholesome fens, drop on you both ! A south-west wind blow on you, and blister you all o'er !

PROS. For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt have cramps, side-stiches, that shall pen thy breath up : Urchins shall prick thee till thou bleed'st : Thou shalt be pinched as thick as honey-combs, each pinch more stinging than the bees which made them.

CAL. I must eat my dinner : This island's mine by Sycorax my mother, which thou took'st from me. When thou camest first, thou stroak'dst me and madest much of me ; would'st give me water with berries in't, and teach me how to name the bigger light, and how the less, that burn by day and night ; and then I loved thee and showed thee all the qualities of the isle, the fresh-springs, brine-pits, barren places, and fertile. Cursed be I, that I did so ! All the charms of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on thee ! for I am all the subjects that thou hast. I first was mine own lord ; and here thou stayest me in this hard rock, whiles thou dost keep from me the rest o' the island.

PROS. Thou most lying slave, whom stripes may move, not kindness ! I have used thee, filth as thou art ! with human care ; and lodged thee in mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate the honour of my children.

CAL. Oh, ho ! oh, ho ! would it had been done. Thou didst prevent me, I had peopled else this isle with Calibans.

PROS. Abhor'd slave ! who ne'er wouldst any print of goodness take, being capable of all ill ! I pitied thee, took pains to make thee speak, taught

thee each hour one thing or other : When thou didst not, savage ! know thy own meaning, but wouldst gabble like a thing most brutish, I endowed thy purposes with words, which made them known.—But thy wild race—though thou didst learn—had that in't, which good natures could not abide to be with ; therefore wast thou deservedly pent up into this rock.

CAL. You taught me language ; and my profit by it is, that I know to curse. The red botch\* rid you for learning me your language !

PROS. Hag-seed, hence !  
Fetch us in fuel and be quick  
To answer other business.—Shrug'st thou, malice ?  
If thou neglectest, or dost unwillingly  
What I command, I'll rack thee with old cramps ;  
Fill all thy bones with aches ; make thee roar,  
That beasts shall tremble at thy din.

CAL. No, pr'ythee !  
I must obey. His art is of such power,  
It would control my dam's god, Setebos,  
And make a vassal of him.

PROS. So, slave, hence !

*[Exeunt Prospero, and Caliban, severally.]*

*Enter DORINDA.*

DOR. Oh, sister ! what have I beheld !

MIR. What is it moves you so ?

DOR. From yonder rock,  
As I my eyes cast down upon the seas,  
The whistling winds blew rudely on my face,  
And the waves roared ; at first, I thought the war  
Had been between themselves, but straight I spied  
A huge great creature.

MIR. O, you mean the ship ?

DOR. Is't not a creature then ?—It seemed alive.

\* An inflamed tumour.

MIR. But what of it ?

DOR. This floating ram did bear his horns  
above,

All tied with ribbands, ruffling in the wind :  
Sometimes he nodded down his head awhile,  
And then the waves did heave him to the moon,  
He clambering to the top of all the billows ;  
And then again he curtsied down so low,  
I could not see him : Till at last, all side-long,  
With a great crack his belly burst in pieces.

Mir. There all had perished,

Had not my father's magic art relieved them.—  
But, sister, I have stranger news to tell you :  
In this great creature there were other creatures ;  
And shortly we may chance to see that thing,  
Which you have heard my father call a man.

DOR. But what is that ? For yet he never  
told me.

MIR. I know no more than you :—But I have  
heard

My father say, we women were made for him.

DOR. What, that he should eat us, sister ?

MIR. No, sure ; you see my father is a man, and yet  
He does us good. I would he were not old.

DOR. Methinks, indeed, it would be finer, if  
We two had two young fathers.

MIR. No, sister, no : If they were young, my  
father

Said, we must call them brothers.

DOR. But, pray, how does it come, that we two  
are

Not brothers then, and have not beards like him ?

MIR. Now I confess you pose me.

DOR. How did he come to be our father too ?

MIR. I think he found us when we both were  
little,

And grew within the ground.



DOR. Why could he not find more of us ? Pray,  
sister,

Let you and I look up and down one day,  
To find some little ones for us to play with.

MIR. Agreed ! but now we must go in. This is  
The hour wherein my father's charm will work,  
Which seizes all who are in open air :  
The effect of this great art I long to see,  
Which will perform as much as magic can.

DOR. And I, methinks, more long to see a man.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II. SCENE I.

*The scene changes to the wilder part of the Island.  
It is composed of divers sorts of trees and barren  
places, with a prospect of the sea at a great  
distance.*

*Enter STEPHANO, MUSTACHO, and VENTOSO.*

VEN. The runlet of brandy was a loving runlet  
and floated after us out of pure pity.

MUS. This kind bottle, like an old acquaintance,  
swam after it. And this scollop-shell is all our  
plate now.

VEN. 'Tis well we have found something since  
we landed.

I pr'ythee fill a soop, and let it go round.—  
Where hast thou laid the runlet ?

MUS. In the hollow of an old tree.

VEN. Fill apace ! we cannot live long in this  
barren island, and we may take a soop before death,  
as well as others drink at our funerals.

MUS. This is prize brandy ; we steal custom,  
and it costs nothing. Let's have two rounds more.

VEN. Master, what have you saved ?

STEPH. Just nothing but myself.

VEN. This works comfortably on a cold stomach.

STEPH. Fill us another round !

VEN. Look ! Mustacho weeps. Hang losses, as long as we have brandy left !—Pr'ythee, leave weeping.

STEPH. He sheds his brandy out of his eyes : He shall drink no more.

MUS. This will be a doleful day with old Bess. She gave me a gilt nutmeg at parting ; that's lost too : But, as you say, hang losses ! Pr'ythee, fill again.

VEN. Beshrew thy heart, for putting me in mind of thy wife ; I had not thought of mine else. Nature will shew itself ; I must melt. I pr'ythee, fill again ! My wife's a good old jade, and has but one eye left ; but she will weep out that too, when she hears that I'm dead.

STEPH. Would you were both hanged, for putting me in thought of mine !

VEN. But come, master, sorrow is dry. There's for you again.

STEPH. A mariner had e'en as good be a fish as a man, but for the comfort we got ashore. O ! for an old dry wench, now I am wet.

MUS. Poor heart, that would soon make you dry again. But all is barren in this isle : Here we may lie at hull, till the wind blow nor' and by south, ere we can cry, a sail ! a sail ! a sight of a white apron : And, therefore, here's another sop to comfort us.

VEN. This isle's our own, that's our comfort ; for the Duke, the Prince, and all their train, are perished.

MUS. Our ship is sunk, and we can never get home again : We must e'en turn savages, and the next that catches his fellow may eat him.

VEN. No, no, let us have a government ; for if we live well and orderly, heaven will drive shipwrecks ashore to make us all rich : Therefore let us carry good consciences, and not eat one another.

STEPH. Whoever eats any of my subjects, I'll break out his teeth with my sceptre ; for I was master at sea, and will be Duke on land : You, Mustacho, have been my mate, and shall be my viceroy.

VEN. When you are Duke, you may chuse your viceroy ; but I am a free subject in a new plantation, and will have no Duke without my voice : And so fill me the other scoop.

STEPH. [*whispering.*] Ventoso, dost thou hear ? I will advance thee. Prythee, give me thy voice.

VEN. I'll have no whisperings to corrupt the election ; and, to show that I have no private ends, I declare aloud, that I will be viceroy, or I'll keep my voice for myself.

MUS. Stephano, hear me ! I will speak for the people, because there are few, or rather none, in the isle, to speak for themselves. Know, then, that to prevent the farther shedding of christian blood, we are all content Ventoso shall be viceroy, upon condition I may be viceroy over him. Speak, good people, are you well agreed ? what ! no man answer ? Well, you may take their silence for consent.

VEN. You speak for the people, Mustacho ! I'll speak for them, and declare generally with one voice, one and all, that there shall be no viceroy but the Duke, unless I be he.

MUS. You declare for the people, who never saw your face ? Cold iron shall decide it !

[*Both draw.*]

STEPH. Hold, loving subjects ! We will have no civil war during our reign. I do hereby

appoint you both to be my viceroys over the whole island.

BOTH. Agreed, agreed !

*Enter TRINCALO, with a great bottle, half drunk.*

VEN. How ! Trincalo, our brave boatswain !

MUS. He reels : Can he be drunk with seawater ?

TRIN. [*sings.*] I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here I shall die ashore.

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral ; but here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*]

*Sings.*

The master, the swabber, the gunner, and I,  
The surgeon, and his mate,  
Loved Mall, Meg, and Marrian, and Margery,  
But none of us cared for Kate.

For she had a tongue with a twang,  
Would cry to a sailor, Go hang !—

She loved not the savour of tar, nor of pitch,  
Yet a tailor might scratch her where'er she did  
itch.

This is a scurvy tune too ; but here's my comfort again. [*Drinks.*]

STEPH. We have got another subject now :  
Welcome, welcome, into our dominions !

TRIN. What subject, or what dominions ?  
Here's old sack, boys ; the King of good fellows  
can be no subject. I will be old Simon the King.

MUS. Ha, old boy ! how didst thou 'scape ?

TRIN. Upon a butt of sack, boys, which the  
sailors threw overboard.—But are you alive, ho !  
for I will tippie with no ghosts, till I'm dead.  
Thy hand, Mustacho, and thine, Ventoso ; the  
storm has done its worst.—Stephano alive too !  
give thy boatswain thy hand, master.

VEN. You must kiss it then ; for I must tell you, we have chosen him Duke, in a full assembly.

TRIN. A Duke ! where ? What's he Duke of ?

MUS. Of this island, man. Oh, Trincalo, we are all made : The island's empty ; all's our own, boy ; and we will speak to his grace for thee, that thou mayest be as great as we are.

TRIN. You great ! what the devil are you ?

VEN. We two are viceroys over all the island ; and, when we are weary of governing, thou shalt succeed us.

TRIN. Do you hear, Ventoso ? I will succeed you in both places before you enter into them.

STEPH. Trincalo, sleep, and be sober ; and make no more uproars in my country.

TRIN. Why, what are you, sir ? what are you ?

STEPH. What I am, I am by free election ; and you, Trincalo, are not yourself : but we pardon your first fault, because it is the first day of our reign.

TRIN. Umph ! were matters carried so swimmingly against me, whilst I was swimming, and saving myself for the good of the people of this island ?

MUS. Art thou mad, Trincalo ? Wilt thou disturb a settled government, where thou art a mere stranger to the laws of the country ?

TRIN. I'll have no laws.

VEN. Then civil war begins.

*[Vent. and Must. draw.]*

STEPH. Hold, hold ! I'll have no bloodshed ; my subjects are but few : Let him make a rebellion by himself ; and a rebel, I, Duke Stephano, declare him.—Viceroys, come away !

TRIN. And Duke Trincalo declares, that he will make open war wherever he meets thee, or thy viceroys.

*[Exeunt Steph., Must., and Vent.]*

*Enter CALIBAN, with wood upon his back.*

TRIN. Ha ! who have we here ?

CAL. All the infections that the sun sucks up from fogs, fens, flats, on Prospero fall, and make him by inch-meal a disease. His spirits hear me, and yet I needs must curse ; but they'll not pinch, fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i'the mire, nor lead me in the dark out of my way, unless he bid them. But for every trifle he sets them on me : Sometimes, like baboons, they mow and chatter at me, and often bite me ; like hedge-hogs, then, they mount their prickles at me, tumbling before me in my barefoot way. Sometimes I am all wound about with adders, who, with their cloven tongues, hiss me to madness,—Hah ! yonder stands one of his spirits sent to torment me.

TRIN. What have we here, a man, or a fish ? This is some monster of the isle. Were I in England as once I was, and had him painted, not a holiday fool there but would give me sixpence for the sight of him. Well, if I could make him tame, he were a present for an Emperor.—Come hither, pretty monster : I'll do thee no harm. Come hither !

CAL. Torment me not ; I'll bring thee wood home faster.

TRIN. He talks none of the wisest ; but I'll give him a dram o' th' bottle, that will clear his understanding. Come on your ways, master monster, open your mouth. How now, you perverse moon-calf ! what, I think you cannot tell who is your friend.—Open your chops, I say.

*[Pours wine down his throat.]*

CAL. This is a brave god, and bears celestial liquor. I'll kneel to him.

TRIN. He is a very hopeful monster.—Monster, what say'st thou ? art thou content to turn civil

and sober, as I am? for then thou shalt be my subject.

CAL. I'll swear upon that bottle to be true; for the liquor is not earthly. Did'st thou not drop from heaven?

TRIN. Only out of the moon; I was the man in her, when time was.—By this light a very shallow monster.

CAL. I'll shew thee every fertile inch i' th' isle, and kiss thy foot: I pri'thee be my god, and let me drink. *[Drinks again.]*

TRIN. Well drawn monster, in good faith.

BAL. I'll shew thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries; I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.—A curse upon the tyrant whom I serve! I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee.

TRIN. The poor monster is loving in his drink.

CAL. I pri'thee, let me bring thee where crabs grow; and I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts, shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how to snare the marmozet: I'll bring thee to clustered filberts. Wilt thou go with me?

TRIN. This monster comes of a good-natured race.—Is there no more of thy kin in this island?

CAL. Divine, there is but one besides myself; my lovely sister, beautiful and bright as the full moon.

TRIN. Where is she?

CAL. I left her clamb'ring up a hollow oak, and plucking thence the dropping honey-combs.—Say, my King, shall I call her to thee?

TRIN. She shall swear upon the bottle too. If she proves handsome, she is mine.—Here, monster, drink again for thy good news; thou shalt speak a good word for me. *[Gives him the bottle.]*

CAL. Farewell, old master, farewell, farewell!

*Sings.*

No more dams I'll make for fish ;  
Nor fetch in firing, at requiring ;  
Nor scrape trencher, nor wash dish :  
Ban, ban, Cackaliban,  
Has a new master, get a new man.

Hey-day ! freedom, freedom !

TRIN. Here's two subjects got already, the monster and his sister: Well, Duke Stephano, I say, and say again, wars will ensue, and so I drink. [*Drinks.*] From this worshipful monster, and mistress monster, his sister, I'll lay claim to this island by alliance.—Monster, I say, thy sister shall be my spouse. Come away, brother monster ; I'll lead thee to my butt, and drink her health. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Cypress Trees and a Cave.*

*Enter PROSPERO alone.*

PROS. 'Tis not yet fit to let my daughters know,  
I keep the infant duke of Mantua  
So near them in this isle ;  
Whose father, dying, bequeathed him to my care,  
Till my false brother, when he designed to usurp  
My Dukedom from me, exposed him to that fate  
He meant for me.  
By calculation of his birth, I saw  
Death threat'ning him, if, till some time were past,  
He should behold the face of any woman :  
And now the danger's nigh.—Hippolito !

*Enter HIPPOLITO.*

HIP. Sir, I attend your pleasure.

PROS. How I have loved thee, from thy infancy,  
Heaven knows, and thou thyself canst bear me  
witness ;  
Therefore accuse not me for thy restraint.



HIP. Since I knew life, you've kept me in a rock ;

And you, this day, have hurried me from thence,  
Only to change my prison, not to free me.

I murmur not, but I may wonder at it.

PROS. O, gentle youth ! fate waits for thee  
abroad ;

A black star threatens thee, and death unseen  
Stands ready to devour thee.

HIP. You taught me  
Not to fear him in any of his shapes :—

Let me meet death rather than be a prisoner.

PROS. 'Tis pity he should seize thy tender  
youth.

HIP. Sir, I have often heard you say, no  
creature liv'd

Within this isle, but those which man was lord of.  
Why, then, should I fear ?

PROS. But here are creatures which I named  
not to thee,

Who share man's sovereignty by nature's laws,  
And oft depose him from it.

HIP. What are those creatures, sir ?

PROS. Those dangerous enemies of men, called  
women.

HIP. Women ! I never heard of them before.—  
What are women like ?

PROS. Imagine something between young men  
and angels ;

Fatally beauteous, and have killing eyes ;

Their voices charm beyond the nightingale's ;

They are all enchantment : Those, who once  
behold 'em,

Are made their slaves for ever.

HIP. Then I will wink, and fight with 'em.

PROS. 'Tis but in vain ;

They'll haunt you in your very sleep.

HIP. Then I'll revenge it on 'em when I wake.

PROS. You are without all possibility of revenge ;

They are so beautiful, that you can ne'er attempt,  
Nor wish, to hurt them.

HIP. Are they so beautiful ?

PROS. Calm sleep is not so soft, nor winter suns,  
Nor summer shades so pleasant.

HIP. Can they be fairer than the plumes of  
swans ?

Or more delightful than the peacock's feathers ?

Or than the gloss upon the necks of doves ?

Or have more various beauty than the rainbow ?—  
These I have seen, and, without danger, wond'ered  
at.

PROS. All these are far below them : Nature  
made

Nothing but woman dangerous and fair.

Therefore if you should chance to see them,

Avoid them straight I charge you.

HIP. Well, since you say they are so dangerous,  
I'll so far shun them, as I may with safety  
Of the unblemished honour which you taught me.  
But let them not provoke me, for I'm sure  
I shall not then forbear them.

PROS. Go in, and read the book I gave you last.  
To-morrow I may bring you better news.

HIP. I shall obey you, sir. *[Exit Hip.]*

PROS. So, so ; I hope this lesson has secured  
him,

For I have been constrained to change his lodging  
From yonder rock, where first I bred him up,  
And here have brought him home to my own cell,  
Because the shipwreck happened near his mansion.  
I hope he will not stir beyond his limits,  
For hitherto he hath been all obedience :  
The planets seem to smile on my designs,

And yet there is one sullen cloud behind :  
I would it were dispersed.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA.*

How, my daughters !  
I thought I had instructed them enough :  
Children ! retire ; why do you walk this way ?

MIR. It is within our bounds, sir.

PROS. But both  
Take heed, that path is very dangerous.  
Remember what I told you.

DOR. Is the man that way, sir ?

PROS. All that you can imagine ill is there.  
The curled lion, and the rugged bear  
Are not so dreadful as that man.

MIR. Oh me, why stay we here then ?

DOR. I'll keep far enough from his den, I  
warrant him.

MIR. But you have told me, sir, you are a man ;  
And yet you are not dreadful.

PROS. Ay, child ! but I  
Am a tame man ; old men are tame by nature,  
But all the danger lies in a wild young man.

DOR. Do they run wild about the woods ?

PROS. No, they are wild within doors, in  
chambers,  
And in closets.

DOR. But, father, I would stroak them, and  
make them gentle ;  
Then sure they would not hurt me.

PROS. You must not trust them, child : No  
woman can  
Come near them, but she feels a pain, full nine  
months.

Well, I must in ; for new affairs require my  
Presence. Be you, Miranda, your sister's guardian.  
[Exit Pros.]

DOR. Come, sister, shall we walk the other way ?  
The man will catch us else : We have but two  
legs,

And he, perhaps, has four.

MIR. Well, sister, though he have ; yet look  
about you,

And we shall spy him ere he comes too near us.

DOR. Come back ! that way is towards his  
den.

MIR. Let me alone ! I'll venture first, for sure  
he can

Devour but one of us at once.

DOR. How dare you venture ?

MIR. We'll find him sitting like a hare in's  
form,

And he shall not see us.

DOR. Ay, but you know my father charged us  
both.

MIR. But who shall tell him on't ? we'll keep  
each other's counsel.

DOR. I dare not, for the world.

MIR. But how shall we hereafter shun him, if  
We do not know him first ?

DOR. Nay, I confess I would fain see him too.  
I find it in my nature, because my father has for-  
bidden me.

MIR. Ay, there's it, sister ; if he had said no-  
thing, I had been quiet. Go softly, and if you see  
him first, be quick, and beckon me away.

DOR. Well, if he does catch me, I'll humble  
myself to him, and ask him pardon, as I do my  
father, when I have done a fault.

MIR. And if I can but escape with life, I had  
rather be in pain nine months, as my father  
threatened, than lose my longing. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.

*Enter HIPPOLITO.*

HIP. Prospero has often said that nature makes  
Nothing in vain : Why then are women made ?  
Are they to suck the poison of the earth,  
As gaudy coloured serpents are ? I'll ask  
That question, when next I see him here.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA peeping.*

DOR. O sister, there it is ! it walks about  
Like one of us.

MIR. Ay, just so, and has legs as we have too.

HIP. It strangely puzzles me : Yet 'tis most  
likely

Women are somewhat between men and spirits.

DOR. Hark ! it talks :—sure this is not it my  
father meant,

For this is just like one of us : Methinks,  
I am not half so much afraid on't as  
I was ; see, now it turns this way.

MIR. Heaven ! what a goodly thing it is !

DOR. I'll go nearer it.

MIR. O no, 'tis dangerous, sister ! I'll go to it.  
I would not for the world that you should venture.  
My father charged me to secure you from it.

DOR. I warrant you this is a tame man ; dear  
sister,

He'll not hurt me, I see it by his looks.

MIR. Indeed he will ! but go back, and he shall  
eat me first :

Fie, are you not ashamed to be so much inquisitive ?

DOR. You chide me for 't, and would give  
yourself ?

MIR. Come back, or I will tell my father.  
Observe how he begins to stare already !  
I'll meet the danger first, and then call you.

DOR. Nay, sister, you shall never vanquish me  
in kindness.

I'll venture you no more than you will me.

PROS. [*within.*] Miranda, child, where are you ?

MIR. Do you not hear my father call ? Go in !

DOR. 'Twas you he named, not me ; I will but  
say my prayers,

And follow you immediately.

MIR. Well, sister, you'll repent it. [*Exit Mir.*]

DOR. Though I die for 't, I must have th' other  
peep.

HIP. [*Seeing her.*] What thing is that ? Sure 'tis  
some infant of

The sun, dressed in his father's gayest beams,

And comes to play with birds : My sight is  
dazzled,

And yet I find I'm loth to shut my eyes :

I must go nearer it ;—but, stay a while ;

May it not be that beauteous murderer, woman,

Which I was charged to shun ? Speak, what art  
thou,

Thou shining vision ?

DOR. Alas, I know not ; but I'm told I am

A woman. Do not hurt me, pray, fair thing.

HIP. I'd sooner tear my eyes out, than consent

To do you any harm ; though I was told

A woman was my enemy.

DOR. I never knew

What 'twas to be an enemy, nor can I e'er

Prove so to that, which looks like you : For  
though

I've been charged by him—whom yet I ne'er dis-  
obeyed,—

To shun your presence, yet I'd rather die

Than lose it ; therefore, I hope you will not have  
the heart

To hurt me : Though I fear you are a man,

VEN. No, no, let us have a government ; for if we live well and orderly, heaven will drive shipwrecks ashore to make us all rich : Therefore let us carry good consciences, and not eat one another.

STEPH. Whoever eats any of my subjects, I'll break out his teeth with my sceptre ; for I was master at sea, and will be Duke on land : You, Mustacho, have been my mate, and shall be my viceroy.

VEN. When you are Duke, you may chuse your viceroy ; but I am a free subject in a new plantation, and will have no Duke without my voice : And so fill me the other scoop.

STEPH. [*whispering.*] Ventoso, dost thou hear ? I will advance thee. Prythee, give me thy voice.

VEN. I'll have no whisperings to corrupt the election ; and, to show that I have no private ends, I declare aloud, that I will be viceroy, or I'll keep my voice for myself.

MUS. Stephano, hear me ! I will speak for the people, because there are few, or rather none, in the isle, to speak for themselves. Know, then, that to prevent the farther shedding of christian blood, we are all content Ventoso shall be viceroy, upon condition I may be viceroy over him. Speak, good people, are you well agreed ? what ! no man answer ? Well, you may take their silence for consent.

VEN. You speak for the people, Mustacho ! I'll speak for them, and declare generally with one voice, one and all, that there shall be no viceroy but the Duke, unless I be he.

MUS. You declare for the people, who never saw your face ? Cold iron shall decide it !

[*Both draw.*]

STEPH. Hold, loving subjects ! We will have no civil war during our reign. I do hereby

appoint you both to be my viceroys over the whole island.

BOTH. Agreed, agreed !

*Enter TRINCALO, with a great bottle, half drunk.*

VEN. How ! Trincalo, our brave boatswain !

MUS. He reels : Can he be drunk with seawater ?

TRIN. [*sings.*] I shall no more to sea, to sea,

Here I shall die ashore.

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral ; but here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*]

*Sings.*

The master, the swabber, the gunner, and I,

The surgeon, and his mate,

Loved Mall, Meg, and Marrian, and Margery,

But none of us cared for Kate.

For she had a tongue with a twang,

Would cry to a sailor, Go hang !—

She loved not the savour of tar, nor of pitch,

Yet a tailor might scratch her where'er she did itch.

This is a scurvy tune too ; but here's my comfort again. [*Drinks.*]

STEPH. We have got another subject now : Welcome, welcome, into our dominions !

TRIN. What subject, or what dominions ? Here's old sack, boys ; the King of good fellows can be no subject. I will be old Simon the King.

MUS. Ha, old boy ! how didst thou 'scape ?

TRIN. Upon a butt of sack, boys, which the sailors threw overboard.—But are you alive, ho ! for I will tipple with no ghosts, till I'm dead. Thy hand, Mustacho, and thine, Ventoso ; the storm has done its worst.—Stephano alive too ! give thy boatswain thy hand, master.



VEN. You must kiss it then ; for I must tell you, we have chosen him Duke, in a full assembly.

TRIN. A Duke ! where ? What's he Duke of ?

MUS. Of this island, man. Oh, Trincalo, we are all made : The island's empty ; all's our own, boy ; and we will speak to his grace for thee, that thou mayest be as great as we are.

TRIN. You great ! what the devil are you ?

VEN. We two are viceroys over all the island ; and, when we are weary of governing, thou shalt succeed us.

TRIN. Do you hear, Ventoso ? I will succeed you in both places before you enter into them.

STEPH. Trincalo, sleep, and be sober ; and make no more uproars in my country.

TRIN. Why, what are you, sir ? what are you ?

STEPH. What I am, I am by free election ; and you, Trincalo, are not yourself : but we pardon your first fault, because it is the first day of our reign.

TRIN. Umph ! were matters carried so swimmingly against me, whilst I was swimming, and saving myself for the good of the people of this island ?

MUS. Art thou mad, Trincalo ? Wilt thou disturb a settled government, where thou art a mere stranger to the laws of the country ?

TRIN. I'll have no laws.

VEN. Then civil war begins.

*[Vent. and Must. draw.]*

STEPH. Hold, hold ! I'll have no bloodshed ; my subjects are but few : Let him make a rebellion by himself ; and a rebel, I, Duke Stephano, declare him.—Viceroys, come away !

TRIN. And Duke Trincalo declares, that he will make open war wherever he meets thee, or thy viceroys.

*[Exeunt Steph., Must., and Vent.]*

*Enter CALIBAN, with wood upon his back.*

TRIN. Ha! who have we here?

CAL. All the infections that the sun sucks up from fogs, fens, flats, on Prospero fall, and make him by inch-meal a disease. His spirits hear me, and yet I needs must curse; but they'll not pinch, fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i'the mire, nor lead me in the dark out of my way, unless he bid them. But for every trifle he sets them on me: Sometimes, like baboons, they mow and chatter at me, and often bite me; like hedge-hogs, then, they mount their prickles at me, tumbling before me in my barefoot way. Sometimes I am all wound about with adders, who, with their cloven tongues, hiss me to madness,—Hah! yonder stands one of his spirits sent to torment me.

TRIN. What have we here, a man, or a fish? This is some monster of the isle. Were I in England as once I was, and had him painted, not a holiday fool there but would give me sixpence for the sight of him. Well, if I could make him tame, he were a present for an Emperor.—Come hither, pretty monster: I'll do thee no harm. Come hither!

CAL. Torment me not; I'll bring thee wood home faster.

TRIN. He talks none of the wisest; but I'll give him a dram o' th' bottle, that will clear his understanding. Come on your ways, master monster, open your mouth. How now, you perverse moon-calf! what, I think you cannot tell who is your friend.—Open your chops, I say.

*[Pours wine down his throat.]*

CAL. This is a brave god, and bears celestial liquor. I'll kneel to him.

TRIN. He is a very hopeful monster.—Monster, what say'st thou? art thou content to turn civil

and sober, as I am? for then thou shalt be my subject.

CAL. "I'll swear upon that bottle to be true; for the liquor is not earthly. Did'st thou not drop from heaven?"

TRIN. Only out of the moon; I was the man in her, when time was.—By this light a very shallow monster.

CAL. I'll shew thee every fertile inch i' th' isle, and kiss thy foot: I pr'ythee be my god, and let me drink.

*[Drinks again.]*

TRIN. Well drawn monster, in good faith.

BAL. I'll shew thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries; I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.—A curse upon the tyrant whom I serve! I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee.

TRIN. The poor monster is loving in his drink.

CAL. I pri'thee, let me bring thee where crabs grow; and I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts, shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how to snare the marmozet: I'll bring thee to clustered filberts. Wilt thou go with me?

TRIN. This monster comes of a good-natured race.—Is there no more of thy kin in this island?

CAL. Divine, there is but one besides myself; my lovely sister, beautiful and bright as the full moon.

TRIN. Where is she?

CAL. I left her clamb'ring up a hollow oak, and plucking thence the dropping honey-combs.—Say, my King, shall I call her to thee?

TRIN. She shall swear upon the bottle too. If she proves handsome, she is mine.—Here, monster, drink again for thy good news; thou shalt speak a good word for me.

*[Gives him the bottle.]*

CAL. Farewell, old master, farewell, farewell!

*Sings.*

No more dams I'll make for fish ;  
Nor fetch in firing, at requiring ;  
Nor scrape trencher, nor wash dish :  
Ban, ban, Cackaliban,  
Has a new master, get a new man.

Hey-day ! freedom, freedom !

TRIN. Here's two subjects got already, the monster and his sister: Well, Duke Stephano, I say, and say again, wars will ensue, and so I drink. [*Drinks.*] From this worshipful monster, and mistress monster, his sister, I'll lay claim to this island by alliance.—Monster, I say, thy sister shall be my spouse. Come away, brother monster ; I'll lead thee to my butt, and drink her health. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Cypress Trees and a Cave.*

*Enter PROSPERO alone.*

PROS. 'Tis not yet fit to let my daughters know,  
I keep the infant duke of Mantua  
So near them in this isle ;  
Whose father, dying, bequeathed him to my care,  
Till my false brother, when he designed to usurp  
My Dukedom from me, exposed him to that fate  
He meant for me.  
By calculation of his birth, I saw  
Death threat'ning him, if, till some time were past,  
He should behold the face of any woman :  
And now the danger's nigh.—Hippolito !

*Enter HIPPOLITO.*

HIP. Sir, I attend your pleasure.

PROS. How I have loved thee, from thy infancy,  
Heaven knows, and thou thyself canst bear me  
witness ;  
Therefore accuse not me for thy restraint.

HIP. Since I knew life, you've kept me in a rock ;

And you, this day, have hurried me from thence,  
Only to change my prison, not to free me.

I murmur not, but I may wonder at it.

PROS. O, gentle youth ! fate waits for thee  
abroad ;

A black star threatens thee, and death unseen  
Stands ready to devour thee.

HIP. You taught me

Not to fear him in any of his shapes :—

Let me meet death rather than be a prisoner.

PROS. 'Tis pity he should seize thy tender  
youth.

HIP. Sir, I have often heard you say, no  
creature liv'd

Within this isle, but those which man was lord of.  
Why, then, should I fear ?

PROS. But here are creatures which I named  
not to thee,

Who share man's sovereignty by nature's laws,  
And oft depose him from it.

HIP. What are those creatures, sir ?

PROS. Those dangerous enemies of men, called  
women.

HIP. Women ! I never heard of them before.—  
What are women like ?

PROS. Imagine something between young men  
and angels ;

Fatally beauteous, and have killing eyes ;

Their voices charm beyond the nightingale's ;

They are all enchantment : Those, who once  
behold 'em,

Are made their slaves for ever.

HIP. Then I will wink, and fight with 'em.

PROS. 'Tis but in vain ;

They'll haunt you in your very sleep.

HIP. Then I'll revenge it on 'em when I wake.

PROS. You are without all possibility of revenge ;

They are so beautiful, that you can ne'er attempt,  
Nor wish, to hurt them.

HIP. Are they so beautiful ?

PROS. Calm sleep is not so soft, nor winter suns,  
Nor summer shades so pleasant.

HIP. Can they be fairer than the plumes of  
swans ?

Or more delightful than the peacock's feathers ?  
Or than the gloss upon the necks of doves ?  
Or have more various beauty than the rainbow ?—  
These I have seen, and, without danger, wond'ered  
at.

PROS. All these are far below them : Nature  
made

Nothing but woman dangerous and fair.  
Therefore if you should chance to see them,  
Avoid them straight I charge you.

HIP. Well, since you say they are so dangerous,  
I'll so far shun them, as I may with safety  
Of the unblemished honour which you taught me.  
But let them not provoke me, for I'm sure  
I shall not then forbear them.

PROS. Go in, and read the book I gave you last.  
To-morrow I may bring you better news.

HIP. I shall obey you, sir. *[Exit Hip.]*

PROS. So, so ; I hope this lesson has secured  
him,

For I have been constrained to change his lodging  
From yonder rock, where first I bred him up,  
And here have brought him home to my own cell,  
Because the shipwreck happened near his mansion.  
I hope he will not stir beyond his limits,  
For hitherto he hath been all obedience :  
The planets seem to smile on my designs,

And yet there is one sullen cloud behind :  
I would it were dispersed.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA.*

How, my daughters !  
I thought I had instructed them enough :  
Children ! retire ; why do you walk this way ?

MIR. It is within our bounds, sir.

PROS. But both  
Take heed, that path is very dangerous.  
Remember what I told you.

DOR. Is the man that way, sir ?

PROS. All that you can imagine ill is there.  
The curled lion, and the rugged bear  
Are not so dreadful as that man.

MIR. Oh me, why stay we here then ?

DOR. I'll keep far enough from his den, I  
warrant him.

MIR. But you have told me, sir, you are a man ;  
And yet you are not dreadful.

PROS. Ay, child ! but I  
Am a tame man ; old men are tame by nature,  
But all the danger lies in a wild young man.

DOR. Do they run wild about the woods ?

PROS. No, they are wild within doors, in  
chambers,  
And in closets.

DOR. But, father, I would stroak them, and  
make them gentle ;  
Then sure they would not hurt me.

PROS. You must not trust them, child : No  
woman can  
Come near them, but she feels a pain, full nine  
months.

Well, I must in ; for new affairs require my  
Presence. Be you, Miranda, your sister's guardian.  
*[Exit Pros.]*

DOR. Come, sister, shall we walk the other way ?  
The man will catch us else : We have but two  
legs,

And he, perhaps, has four.

MIR. Well, sister, though he have ; yet look  
about you,

And we shall spy him ere he comes too near us.

DOR. Come back ! that way is towards his  
den.

MIR. Let me alone ! I'll venture first, for sure  
he can

Devour but one of us at once.

DOR. How dare you venture ?

MIR. We'll find him sitting like a hare in's  
form,

And he shall not see us.

DOR. Ay, but you know my father charged us  
both.

MIR. But who shall tell him on't ? we'll keep  
each other's counsel.

DOR. I dare not, for the world.

MIR. But how shall we hereafter shun him, if  
We do not know him first ?

DOR. Nay, I confess I would fain see him too.  
I find it in my nature, because my father has for-  
bidden me.

MIR. Ay, there's it, sister ; if he had said no-  
thing, I had been quiet. Go softly, and if you see  
him first, be quick, and beckon me away.

DOR. Well, if he does catch me, I'll humble  
myself to him, and ask him pardon, as I do my  
father, when I have done a fault.

MIR. And if I can but escape with life, I had  
rather be in pain nine months, as my father  
threatened, than lose my longing. [Exeunt.]



And yet there is one sullen cloud behind :  
I would it were dispersed.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA.*

How, my daughters !  
I thought I had instructed them enough :  
Children ! retire ; why do you walk this way ?

MIR. It is within our bounds, sir.

PROS. But both  
Take heed, that path is very dangerous.  
Remember what I told you.

DOR. Is the man that way, sir ?

PROS. All that you can imagine ill is there.  
The curled lion, and the rugged bear  
Are not so dreadful as that man.

MIR. Oh me, why stay we here then ?

DOR. I'll keep far enough from his den, I  
warrant him.

MIR. But you have told me, sir, you are a man ;  
And yet you are not dreadful.

PROS. Ay, child ! but I  
Am a tame man ; old men are tame by nature,  
But all the danger lies in a wild young man.

DOR. Do they run wild about the woods ?

PROS. No, they are wild within doors, in  
chambers,  
And in closets.

DOR. But, father, I would stroak them, and  
make them gentle ;  
Then sure they would not hurt me.

PROS. You must not trust them, child : No  
woman can  
Come near them, but she feels a pain, full nine  
months.

Well, I must in ; for new affairs require my  
Presence. Be you, Miranda, your sister's guardian.  
[*Exit Pros.*]

DOR. Come, sister, shall we walk the other way ?  
The man will catch us else : We have but two  
legs,

And he, perhaps, has four.

MIR. Well, sister, though he have ; yet look  
about you,

And we shall spy him ere he comes too near us.

DOR. Come back ! that way is towards his  
den.

MIR. Let me alone ! I'll venture first, for sure  
he can

Devour but one of us at once.

DOR. How dare you venture ?

MIR. We'll find him sitting like a hare in's  
form,

And he shall not see us.

DOR. Ay, but you know my father charged us  
both.

MIR. But who shall tell him on't ? we'll keep  
each other's counsel.

DOR. I dare not, for the world.

MIR. But how shall we hereafter shun him, if  
We do not know him first ?

DOR. Nay, I confess I would fain see him too.  
I find it in my nature, because my father has for-  
bidden me.

MIR. Ay, there's it, sister ; if he had said no-  
thing, I had been quiet. Go softly, and if you see  
him first, be quick, and beckon me away.

DOR. Well, if he does catch me, I'll humble  
myself to him, and ask him pardon, as I do my  
father, when I have done a fault.

MIR. And if I can but escape with life, I had  
rather be in pain nine months, as my father  
threatened, than lose my longing. [Exeunt.]

VEN. No, no, let us have a government ; for if we live well and orderly, heaven will drive shipwrecks ashore to make us all rich : Therefore let us carry good consciences, and not eat one another.

STEPH. Whoever eats any of my subjects, I'll break out his teeth with my sceptre ; for I was master at sea, and will be Duke on land : You, Mustacho, have been my mate, and shall be my viceroy.

VEN. When you are Duke, you may chuse your viceroy ; but I am a free subject in a new plantation, and will have no Duke without my voice : And so fill me the other scoop.

STEPH. [*whispering.*] Ventoso, dost thou hear ? I will advance thee. Prythee, give me thy voice.

VEN. I'll have no whisperings to corrupt the election ; and, to show that I have no private ends, I declare aloud, that I will be viceroy, or I'll keep my voice for myself.

MUS. Stephano, hear me ! I will speak for the people, because there are few, or rather none, in the isle, to speak for themselves. Know, then, that to prevent the farther shedding of christian blood, we are all content Ventoso shall be viceroy, upon condition I may be viceroy over him. Speak, good people, are you well agreed ? what ! no man answer ! Well, you may take their silence for consent.

VEN. You speak for the people, Mustacho ! I'll speak for them, and declare generally with one voice, one and all, that there shall be no viceroy but the Duke, unless I be he.

MUS. You declare for the people, who never saw your face ? Cold iron shall decide it !

[*Both draw.*]

STEPH. Hold, loving subjects ! We will have no civil war during our reign. I do hereby

appoint you both to be my viceroys over the whole island.

BOTH. Agreed, agreed !

*Enter TRINCALO, with a great bottle, half drunk.*

VEN. How ! Trincalo, our brave boatswain !

MUS. He reels : Can he be drunk with sea-water ?

TRIN. [*sings.*] I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here I shall die ashore.

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral ; but here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*]

*Sings.*

The master, the swabber, the gunner, and I,  
The surgeon, and his mate,  
Loved Mall, Meg, and Marrian, and Margery,  
But none of us cared for Kate.  
For she had a tongue with a twang,  
Would cry to a sailor, Go hang !—  
She loved not the savour of tar, nor of pitch,  
Yet a tailor might scratch her where'er she did  
itch.

This is a scurvy tune too ; but here's my comfort again. [*Drinks.*]

STEPH. We have got another subject now :  
Welcome, welcome, into our dominions !

TRIN. What subject, or what dominions ?  
Here's old sack, boys ; the King of good fellows  
can be no subject. I will be old Simon the King.

MUS. Ha, old boy ! how didst thou 'scape ?

TRIN. Upon a butt of sack, boys, which the  
sailors threw overboard.—But are you alive, ho !  
for I will tipple with no ghosts, till I'm dead.  
Thy hand, Mustacho, and thine, Ventoso ; the  
storm has done its worst.—Stephano alive too !  
give thy boatswain thy hand, master.

VEN. You must kiss it then ; for I must tell you, we have chosen him Duke, in a full assembly.

TRIN. A Duke ! where ? What's he Duke of ?

MUS. Of this island, man. Oh, Trincalo, we are all made : The island's empty ; all's our own, boy ; and we will speak to his grace for thee, that thou mayest be as great as we are.

TRIN. You great ! what the devil are you ?

VEN. We two are viceroys over all the island ; and, when we are weary of governing, thou shalt succeed us.

TRIN. Do you hear, Ventoso ? I will succeed you in both places before you enter into them.

STEPH. Trincalo, sleep, and be sober ; and make no more uproars in my country.

TRIN. Why, what are you, sir ? what are you ?

STEPH. What I am, I am by free election ; and you, Trincalo, are not yourself : but we pardon your first fault, because it is the first day of our reign.

TRIN. Umph ! were matters carried so swimmingly against me, whilst I was swimming, and saving myself for the good of the people of this island ?

MUS. Art thou mad, Trincalo ? Wilt thou disturb a settled government, where thou art a mere stranger to the laws of the country ?

TRIN. I'll have no laws.

VEN. Then civil war begins.

[*Vent. and Must. draw.*  
STEPH. Hold, hold ! I'll have no bloodshed ; my subjects are but few : Let him make a rebellion by himself ; and a rebel, I, Duke Stephano, declare him.—Viceroys, come away !

TRIN. And Duke Trincalo declares, that he will make open war wherever he meets thee, or thy viceroys.  
[*Exeunt Steph., Must., and Vent.*

*Enter CALIBAN, with wood upon his back.*

TRIN. Ha! who have we here?

CAL. All the infections that the sun sucks up from fogs, fens, flats, on Prospero fall, and make him by inch-meal a disease. His spirits hear me, and yet I needs must curse; but they'll not pinch, fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i'the mire, nor lead me in the dark out of my way, unless he bid them. But for every trifle he sets them on me: Sometimes, like baboons, they mow and chatter at me, and often bite me; like hedge-hogs, then, they mount their prickles at me, tumbling before me in my barefoot way. Sometimes I am all wound about with adders, who, with their cloven tongues, hiss me to madness,—Hah! yonder stands one of his spirits sent to torment me.

TRIN. What have we here, a man, or a fish? This is some monster of the isle. Were I in England as once I was, and had him painted, not a holiday fool there but would give me sixpence for the sight of him. Well, if I could make him tame, he were a present for an Emperor.—Come hither, pretty monster: I'll do thee no harm. Come hither!

CAL. Torment me not; I'll bring thee wood home faster.

TRIN. He talks none of the wisest; but I'll give him a dram o' th' bottle, that will clear his understanding. Come on your ways, master monster, open your mouth. How now, you perverse moon-calf! what, I think you cannot tell who is your friend.—Open your chops, I say.

*[Pours wine down his throat.]*

CAL. This is a brave god, and bears celestial liquor. I'll kneel to him.

TRIN. He is a very hopeful monster.—Monster, what say'st thou? art thou content to turn civil

and sober, as I am? for then thou shalt be my subject.

CAL. "I'll swear upon that bottle to be true; for the liquor is not earthly. Did'st thou not drop from heaven?"

TRIN. Only out of the moon; I was the man in her, when time was.—By this light a very shallow monster.

CAL. I'll shew thee every fertile inch i' th' isle, and kiss thy foot: I pry'thee be my god, and let me drink. *[Drinks again.]*

TRIN. Well drawn monster, in good faith.

BAL. I'll shew thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries; I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.—A curse upon the tyrant whom I serve! I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee.

TRIN. The poor monster is loving in his drink.

CAL. I pry'thee, let me bring thee where crabs grow; and I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts, shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how to snare the marmozet: I'll bring thee to clustered filberts. Wilt thou go with me?

TRIN. This monster comes of a good-natured race.—Is there no more of thy kin in this island?

CAL. Divine, there is but one besides myself; my lovely sister, beautiful and bright as the full moon.

TRIN. Where is she?

CAL. I left her clamb'ring up a hollow oak, and plucking thence the dropping honey-combs.—Say, my King, shall I call her to thee?

TRIN. She shall swear upon the bottle too. If she proves handsome, she is mine.—Here, monster, drink again for thy good news; thou shalt speak a good word for me. *[Gives him the bottle.]*

CAL. Farewell, old master, farewell, farewell!

*Sings.*

No more dams I'll make for fish ;  
Nor fetch in firing, at requiring ;  
Nor scrape trencher, nor wash dish :  
Ban, ban, Cackaliban,  
Has a new master, get a new man.

Hey-day ! freedom, freedom !

TRIN. Here's two subjects got already, the monster and his sister: Well, Duke Stephano, I say, and say again, wars will ensue, and so I drink. [*Drinks.*] From this worshipful monster, and mistress monster, his sister, I'll lay claim to this island by alliance.—Monster, I say, thy sister shall be my spouse. Come away, brother monster ; I'll lead thee to my butt, and drink her health. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Cypress Trees and a Cave.*

*Enter PROSPERO alone.*

PROS. 'Tis not yet fit to let my daughters know,  
I keep the infant duke of Mantua  
So near them in this isle ;  
Whose father, dying, bequeathed him to my care,  
Till my false brother, when he designed to usurp  
My Dukedom from me, exposed him to that fate  
He meant for me.  
By calculation of his birth, I saw  
Death threat'ning him, if, till some time were past,  
He should behold the face of any woman :  
And now the danger's nigh.—Hippolito !

*Enter HIPPOLITO.*

HIP. Sir, I attend your pleasure.

PROS. How I have loved thee, from thy infancy,  
Heaven knows, and thou thyself canst bear me  
witness ;  
Therefore accuse not me for thy restraint.



HIP. Since I knew life, you've kept me in a rock ;  
And you, this day, have hurried me from thence,  
Only to change my prison, not to free me.  
I murmur not, but I may wonder at it.

PROS. O, gentle youth ! fate waits for thee  
abroad ;  
A black star threatens thee, and death unseen  
Stands ready to devour thee.

HIP. You taught me  
Not to fear him in any of his shapes :—  
Let me meet death rather than be a prisoner.

PROS. 'Tis pity he should seize thy tender  
youth.

HIP. Sir, I have often heard you say, no  
creature liv'd  
Within this isle, but those which man was lord of.  
Why, then, should I fear ?

PROS. But here are creatures which I named  
not to thee,  
Who share man's sovereignty by nature's laws,  
And oft depose him from it.

HIP. What are those creatures, sir ?

PROS. Those dangerous enemies of men, called  
women.

HIP. Women ! I never heard of them before.—  
What are women like ?

PROS. Imagine something between young men  
and angels ;  
Fatally beauteous, and have killing eyes ;  
Their voices charm beyond the nightingale's ;  
They are all enchantment : Those, who once  
behold 'em,  
Are made their slaves for ever.

HIP. Then I will wink, and fight with 'em.

PROS. 'Tis but in vain ;  
They'll haunt you in your very sleep.

HIP. Then I'll revenge it on 'em when I wake.

PROS. You are without all possibility of revenge ;

They are so beautiful, that you can ne'er attempt,  
Nor wish, to hurt them.

HIP. Are they so beautiful ?

PROS. Calm sleep is not so soft, nor winter suns,  
Nor summer shades so pleasant.

HIP. Can they be fairer than the plumes of  
swans ?

Or more delightful than the peacock's feathers ?  
Or than the gloss upon the necks of doves ?  
Or have more various beauty than the rainbow ?—  
These I have seen, and, without danger, wond'ered  
at.

PROS. All these are far below them : Nature  
made

Nothing but woman dangerous and fair.  
Therefore if you should chance to see them,  
Avoid them straight I charge you.

HIP. Well, since you say they are so dangerous,  
I'll so far shun them, as I may with safety  
Of the unblemished honour which you taught me.  
But let them not provoke me, for I'm sure  
I shall not then forbear them.

PROS. Go in, and read the book I gave you last.  
To-morrow I may bring you better news.

HIP. I shall obey you, sir. [*Exit Hip.*]

PROS. So, so ; I hope this lesson has secured  
him,

For I have been constrained to change his lodging  
From yonder rock, where first I bred him up,  
And here have brought him home to my own cell,  
Because the shipwreck happened near his mansion.  
I hope he will not stir beyond his limits,  
For hitherto he hath been all obedience :  
The planets seem to smile on my designs,

DOR. Why could he not find more of us ? Pray,  
sister,

Let you and I look up and down one day,  
To find some little ones for us to play with.

MIR. Agreed ! but now we must go in. This is  
The hour wherein my father's charm will work,  
Which seizes all who are in open air :  
The effect of this great art I long to see,  
Which will perform as much as magic can.

DOR. And I, methinks, more long to see a man.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II. SCENE I.

*The scene changes to the wilder part of the Island.  
It is composed of divers sorts of trees and barren  
places, with a prospect of the sea at a great  
distance.*

*Enter STEPHANO, MUSTACHO, and VENTOSO.*

VEN. The runlet of brandy was a loving runlet  
and floated after us out of pure pity.

MUS. This kind bottle, like an old acquaintance,  
swam after it. And this scollop-shell is all our  
plate now.

VEN. 'Tis well we have found something since  
we landed.

I pr'ythee fill a soop, and let it go round.—  
Where hast thou laid the runlet ?

MUS. In the hollow of an old tree.

VEN. Fill apace ! we cannot live long in this  
barren island, and we may take a soop before death,  
as well as others drink at our funerals.

MUS. This is prize brandy ; we steal custom,  
and it costs nothing. Let's have two rounds more.

VEN. Master, what have you saved ?

STEPH. Just nothing but myself.

VEN. This works comfortably on a cold stomach.

STEPH. Fill us another round !

VEN. Look ! Mustacho weeps. Hang losses, as long as we have brandy left !—Pr'ythee, leave weeping.

STEPH. He sheds his brandy out of his eyes : He shall drink no more.

MUS. This will be a doleful day with old Bess. She gave me a gilt nutmeg at parting ; that's lost too : But, as you say, hang losses ! Pr'ythee, fill again.

VEN. Beshrew thy heart, for putting me in mind of thy wife ; I had not thought of mine else. Nature will shew itself ; I must melt. I pr'ythee, fill again ! My wife's a good old jade, and has but one eye left ; but she will weep out that too, when she hears that I'm dead.

STEPH. Would you were both hanged, for putting me in thought of mine !

VEN. But come, master, sorrow is dry. There's for you again.

STEPH. A mariner had e'en as good be a fish as a man, but for the comfort we got ashore. O ! for an old dry wench, now I am wet.

MUS. Poor heart, that would soon make you dry again. But all is barren in this isle : Here we may lie at hull, till the wind blow nor' and by south, ere we can cry, a sail ! a sail ! a sight of a white apron : And, therefore, here's another sop to comfort us.

VEN. This isle's our own, that's our comfort ; for the Duke, the Prince, and all their train, are perished.

MUS. Our ship is sunk, and we can never get home again : We must e'en turn savages, and the next that catches his fellow may eat him.

VEN. No, no, let us have a government ; for if we live well and orderly, heaven will drive shipwrecks ashore to make us all rich : Therefore let us carry good consciences, and not eat one another.

STEPH. Whoever eats any of my subjects, I'll break out his teeth with my sceptre ; for I was master at sea, and will be Duke on land : You, Mustacho, have been my mate, and shall be my viceroy.

VEN. When you are Duke, you may chuse your viceroy ; but I am a free subject in a new plantation, and will have no Duke without my voice : And so fill me the other soop.

STEPH. [*whispering.*] Ventoso, dost thou hear ? I will advance thee. Fr'ythee, give me thy voice.

VEN. I'll have no whisperings to corrupt the election ; and, to show that I have no private ends, I declare aloud, that I will be viceroy, or I'll keep my voice for myself.

MUS. Stephano, hear me ! I will speak for the people, because there are few, or rather none, in the isle, to speak for themselves. Know, then, that to prevent the farther shedding of christian blood, we are all content Ventoso shall be viceroy, upon condition I may be viceroy over him. Speak, good people, are you well agreed ? what ! no man answer ? Well, you may take their silence for consent.

VEN. You speak for the people, Mustacho ! I'll speak for them, and declare generally with one voice, one and all, that there shall be no viceroy but the Duke, unless I be he.

MUS. You declare for the people, who never saw your face ? Cold iron shall decide it !

[*Both draw.*]

STEPH. Hold, loving subjects ! We will have no civil war during our reign. I do hereby

appoint you both to be my viceroys over the whole island.

BOTH. Agreed, agreed !

*Enter TRINCALO, with a great bottle, half drunk.*

VEN. How ! Trincalo, our brave boatswain !

MUS. He reels : Can he be drunk with sea-water !

TRIN. [*sings.*] I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here I shall die ashore.

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral ; but here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*]

*Sings.*

The master, the swabber, the gunner, and I,  
The surgeon, and his mate,  
Loved Mall, Meg, and Marrian, and Margery,  
But none of us cared for Kate.

For she had a tongue with a twang,  
Would cry to a sailor, Go hang !—

She loved not the savour of tar, nor of pitch,  
Yet a tailor might scratch her where'er she did  
itch.

This is a scurvy tune too ; but here's my comfort again. [*Drinks.*]

STEPH. We have got another subject now :  
Welcome, welcome, into our dominions !

TRIN. What subject, or what dominions ?  
Here's old sack, boys ; the King of good fellows  
can be no subject. I will be old Simon the King.

MUS. Ha, old boy ! how didst thou 'scape ?

TRIN. Upon a butt of sack, boys, which the  
sailors threw overboard.—But are you alive, ho !  
for I will tipples with no ghosts, till I'm dead.  
Thy hand, Mustacho, and thine, Ventoso ; the  
storm has done its worst.—Stephano alive too !  
give thy boatswain thy hand, master.

VEN. You must kiss it then ; for I must tell you, we have chosen him Duke, in a full assembly.

TRIN. A Duke ! where ? What's he Duke of ?

MUS. Of this island, man. Oh, Trincalo, we are all made : The island's empty ; all's our own, boy ; and we will speak to his grace for thee, that thou mayest be as great as we are.

TRIN. You great ! what the devil are you ?

VEN. We two are viceroys over all the island ; and, when we are weary of governing, thou shalt succeed us.

TRIN. Do you hear, Ventoso ? I will succeed you in both places before you enter into them.

STEPH. Trincalo, sleep, and be sober ; and make no more uproars in my country.

TRIN. Why, what are you, sir ? what are you ?

STEPH. What I am, I am by free election ; and you, Trincalo, are not yourself : but we pardon your first fault, because it is the first day of our reign.

TRIN. Umph ! were matters carried so swimmingly against me, whilst I was swimming, and saving myself for the good of the people of this island ?

MUS. Art thou mad, Trincalo ? Wilt thou disturb a settled government, where thou art a mere stranger to the laws of the country ?

TRIN. I'll have no laws.

VEN. Then civil war begins.

[*Vent. and Must. draw.*  
STEPH. Hold, hold ! I'll have no bloodshed ; my subjects are but few : Let him make a rebellion by himself ; and a rebel, I, Duke Stephano, declare him.—Viceroys, come away !

TRIN. And Duke Trincalo declares, that he will make open war wherever he meets thee, or thy viceroys.  
[*Ereunt Steph., Must., and Vent.*

*Enter CALIBAN, with wood upon his back.*

TRIN. Ha! who have we here?

CAL. All the infections that the sun sucks up from fogs, fens, flats, on Prospero fall, and make him by inch-meal a disease. His spirits hear me, and yet I needs must curse; but they'll not pinch, fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i'the mire, nor lead me in the dark out of my way, unless he bid them. But for every trifle he sets them on me: Sometimes, like baboons, they mow and chatter at me, and often bite me; like hedge-hogs, then, they mount their prickles at me, tumbling before me in my barefoot way. Sometimes I am all wound about with adders, who, with their cloven tongues, hiss me to madness,—Hah! yonder stands one of his spirits sent to torment me.

TRIN. What have we here, a man, or a fish? This is some monster of the isle. Were I in England as once I was, and had him painted, not a holiday fool there but would give me sixpence for the sight of him. Well, if I could make him tame, he were a present for an Emperor.—Come hither, pretty monster: I'll do thee no harm. Come hither!

CAL. Torment me not; I'll bring thee wood home faster.

TRIN. He talks none of the wisest; but I'll give him a dram o' th' bottle, that will clear his understanding. Come on your ways, master monster, open your mouth. How now, you perverse moon-calf! what, I think you cannot tell who is your friend.—Open your chops, I say.

*[Pours wine down his throat.]*

CAL. This is a brave god, and bears celestial liquor. I'll kneel to him.

TRIN. He is a very hopeful monster.—Monster, what say'st thou? art thou content to turn civil



ARIEL. Thanks, my great master! But I have yet one request.

PROS. What's that, my spirit?

ARIEL. I know that this day's business is important,

Requiring too much toil for one alone.

I have a gentle spirit for my love,

Who twice seven years has waited for my freedom;

Let it appear, it will assist me much,

And we with mutual joy shall entertain

Each other. This, I beseech you, grant me!

PROS. You shall have your desire.

ARIEL. That's my noble master.—Milcha!

*[Milcha flies down to his assistance.]*

MIL. I am here, my love.

ARIEL. Thou art free! Welcome, my dear!—

What shall we do? Say, say, what shall we do?

PROS. Be subject to no sight but mine; invisible

To every eye-ball else. Hence, with diligence;

Anon thou shalt know more.

*[They both fly up, and cross in the air.]*

Thou hast slept well, my child.

*[To Mir.]*

MIR. The sadness of your story put heaviness in me.

PROS. Shake it off!—Come on, I'll now call Caliban, my slave, who never yields us a kind answer.

MIR. 'Tis a creature, sir, I do not love to look on.

PROS. But, as it is, we cannot miss him: He does make our fire, fetch in our wood, and serve in offices that profit us.—What ho, slave! Caliban thou earth, thou, speak!

CAL. *[within.]* There's wood enough within.

PROS. Thou poisonous slave! got by the devil himself

Upon thy wicked dam, come forth!

*Enter CALIBAN.*

CAL. As wicked dew, as e'er my mother brushed with raven's feather from unwholesome fens, drop on you both ! A south-west wind blow on you, and blister you all o'er !

PROS. For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt have cramps, side-stiches, that shall pen thy breath up : Urchins shall prick thee till thou bleed'st : Thou shalt be pinched as thick as honey-combs, each pinch more stinging than the bees which made them.

CAL. I must eat my dinner : This island's mine by Sycorax my mother, which thou took'st from me. When thou camest first, thou stroak'dst me and madest much of me ; would'st give me water with berries in't, and teach me how to name the bigger light, and how the less, that burn by day and night ; and then I loved thee and showed thee all the qualities of the isle, the fresh-springs, brine-pits, barren places, and fertile. Cursed be I, that I did so ! All the charms of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on thee ! for I am all the subjects that thou hast. I first was mine own lord ; and here thou stayest me in this hard rock, whiles thou dost keep from me the rest o' the island.

PROS. Thou most lying slave, whom stripes may move, not kindness ! I have used thee, filth as thou art ! with human care ; and lodged thee in mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate the honour of my children.

CAL. Oh, ho ! oh, ho ! would it had been done. Thou didst prevent me, I had peopled else this isle with Calibans.

PROS. Abhor'd slave ! who ne'er wouldst any print of goodness take, being capable of all ill ! I pitied thee, took pains to make thee speak, taught

V.

2 E

thee each hour one thing or other : When thou didst not, savage ! know thy own meaning, but wouldst gabble like a thing most brutish, I endowed thy purposes with words, which made them known.—But thy wild race—though thou didst learn—had that in't, which good natures could not abide to be with ; therefore wast thou deservedly pent up into this rock.

CAL. You taught me language ; and my profit by it is, that I know to curse. The red botch\* rid you for learning me your language !

PROS. Hag-seed, hence !

Fetch us in fuel and be quick  
To answer other business.—Shrug'st thou, malice ?  
If thou neglectest, or dost unwillingly  
What I command, I'll rack thee with old cramps ;  
Fill all thy bones with aches ; make thee roar,  
That beasts shall tremble at thy din.

CAL. No, prythee !  
I must obey. His art is of such power,  
It would control my dam's god, Setebos,  
And make a vassal of him.

PROS. So, slave, hence !

[*Exeunt Prospero, and Caliban, severally.*]

*Enter* DORINDA.

DOR. Oh, sister ! what have I beheld !

MIR. What is it moves you so ?

DOR. From yonder rock,  
As I my eyes cast down upon the seas,  
The whistling winds blew rudely on my face,  
And the waves roared ; at first, I thought the war  
Had been between themselves, but straight I spied  
A huge great creature.

MIR. O, you mean the ship ?

DOR. Is't not a creature then ?—It seemed alive.

\* An inflamed tumour.

MIR. But what of it?

DOR. This floating ram did bear his horns  
 above,  
 All tied with ribbands, ruffling in the wind :  
 Sometimes he nodded down his head awhile,  
 And then the waves did heave him to the moon,  
 He clambering to the top of all the billows ;  
 And then again he curtsied down so low,  
 I could not see him : Till at last, all side-long,  
 With a great crack his belly burst in pieces.

Mir. There all had perished,  
 Had not my father's magic art relieved them.—  
 But, sister, I have stranger news to tell you :  
 In this great creature there were other creatures ;  
 And shortly we may chance to see that thing,  
 Which you have heard my father call a man.

DOR. But what is that ? For yet he never  
 told me.

MIR. I know no more than you :—But I have  
 heard  
 My father say, we women were made for him.

DOR. What, that he should eat us, sister ?

MIR. No, sure ; you see my father is a man, and yet  
 He does us good. I would he were not old.

DOR. Methinks, indeed, it would be finer, if  
 We two had two young fathers.

MIR. No, sister, no : If they were young, my  
 father  
 Said, we must call them brothers.

DOR. But, pray, how does it come, that we two  
 are  
 Not brothers then, and have not beards like him ?

MIR. Now I confess you pose me.

DOR. How did he come to be our father too ?

MIR. I think he found us when we both were  
 little,  
 And grew within the ground.

DOR. Why could he not find more of us? Pray,  
sister,

Let you and I look up and down one day,  
To find some little ones for us to play with.

MIR. Agreed! but now we must go in. This is  
The hour wherein my father's charm will work,  
Which seizes all who are in open air:  
The effect of this great art I long to see,  
Which will perform as much as magic can.

DOR. And I, methinks, more long to see a man.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II. SCENE I.

*The scene changes to the wilder part of the Island.  
It is composed of divers sorts of trees and barren  
places, with a prospect of the sea at a great  
distance.*

*Enter STEPHANO, MUSTACHO, and VENTOSO.*

VEN. The runlet of brandy was a loving runlet  
and floated after us out of pure pity.

MUS. This kind bottle, like an old acquaintance,  
swam after it. And this scollop-shell is all our  
plate now.

VEN. 'Tis well we have found something since  
we landed.

I prythee fill a soop, and let it go round.—  
Where hast thou laid the runlet?

MUS. In the hollow of an old tree.

VEN. Fill apace! we cannot live long in this  
barren island, and we may take a soop before death,  
as well as others drink at our funerals.

MUS. This is prize brandy; we steal custom,  
and it costs nothing. Let's have two rounds more.

VEN. Master, what have you saved ?

STEPH. Just nothing but myself.

VEN. This works comfortably on a cold stomach.

STEPH. Fill us another round !

VEN. Look ! Mustacho weeps. Hang losses, as long as we have brandy left !—Prythee, leave weeping.

STEPH. He sheds his brandy out of his eyes : He shall drink no more.

MUS. This will be a doleful day with old Bess. She gave me a gilt nutmeg at parting ; that's lost too ; But, as you say, hang losses ! Prythee, fill again.

VEN. Beshrew thy heart, for putting me in mind of thy wife ; I had not thought of mine else. Nature will shew itself ; I must melt. I prythee, fill again ! My wife's a good old jade, and has but one eye left ; but she will weep out that too, when she hears that I'm dead.

STEPH. Would you were both hanged, for putting me in thought of mine !

VEN. But come, master, sorrow is dry. There's for you again.

STEPH. A mariner had e'en as good be a fish as a man, but for the comfort we got ashore. O ! for an old dry wench, now I am wet.

MUS. Poor heart, that would soon make you dry again. But all is barren in this isle : Here we may lie at hull, till the wind blow nor' and by south, ere we can cry, a sail ! a sail ! a sight of a white apron : And, therefore, here's another scoop to comfort us.

VEN. This isle's our own, that's our comfort ; for the Duke, the Prince, and all their train, are perished.

MUS. Our ship is sunk, and we can never get home again : We must e'en turn savages, and the next that catches his fellow may eat him.

VEN. No, no, let us have a government ; for if we live well and orderly, heaven will drive shipwrecks ashore to make us all rich : Therefore let us carry good consciences, and not eat one another.

STEPH. Whoever eats any of my subjects, I'll break out his teeth with my sceptre ; for I was master at sea, and will be Duke on land : You, Mustacho, have been my mate, and shall be my viceroy.

VEN. When you are Duke, you may chuse your viceroy ; but I am a free subject in a new plantation, and will have no Duke without my voice : And so fill me the other soop.

STEPH. [*whispering.*] Ventoso, dost thou hear ? I will advance thee. Prythee, give me thy voice.

VEN. I'll have no whisperings to corrupt the election ; and, to show that I have no private ends, I declare aloud, that I will be viceroy, or I'll keep my voice for myself.

MUS. Stephano, hear me ! I will speak for the people, because there are few, or rather none, in the isle, to speak for themselves. Know, then, that to prevent the farther shedding of christian blood, we are all content Ventoso shall be viceroy, upon condition I may be viceroy over him. Speak, good people, are you well agreed ? what ! no man answer ? Well, you may take their silence for consent.

VEN. You speak for the people, Mustacho ! I'll speak for them, and declare generally with one voice, one and all, that there shall be no viceroy but the Duke, unless I be he.

MUS. You declare for the people, who never saw your face ? Cold iron shall decide it !

[*Both draw.*]

STEPH. Hold, loving subjects ! We will have no civil war during our reign. I do hereby

appoint you both to be my viceroys over the whole island.

BOTH. Agreed, agreed !

*Enter TRINCALO, with a great bottle, half drunk.*

VEN. How ! Trincalo, our brave boatswain !

MUS. He reels : Can he be drunk with sea-water ?

TRIN. [*sings.*] I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here I shall die ashore.

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral ; but here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*]

*Sings.*

The master, the swabber, the gunner, and I,

The surgeon, and his mate,

Loved Mall, Meg, and Marrian, and Margery,

But none of us cared for Kate.

For she had a tongue with a twang,

Would cry to a sailor, Go hang !—

She loved not the savour of tar, nor of pitch,

Yet a tailor might scratch her where'er she did  
itch.

This is a scurvy tune too ; but here's my comfort again. [*Drinks.*]

STEPH. We have got another subject now :  
Welcome, welcome, into our dominions !

TRIN. What subject, or what dominions ?  
Here's old sack, boys ; the King of good fellows  
can be no subject. I will be old Simon the King.

MUS. Ha, old boy ! how didst thou 'scape ?

TRIN. Upon a butt of sack, boys, which the  
sailors threw overboard.—But are you alive, ho !  
for I will tippie with no ghosts, till I'm dead.  
Thy hand, Mustacho, and thine, Ventoso ; the  
storm has done its worst.—Stephano alive too !  
give thy boatswain thy hand, master.



VEN. You must kiss it then ; for I must tell you, we have chosen him Duke, in a full assembly.

TRIN. A Duke ! where ? What's he Duke of ?

MUS. Of this island, man. Oh, Trincalo, we are all made : The island's empty ; all's our own, boy ; and we will speak to his grace for thee, that thou mayest be as great as we are.

TRIN. You great ! what the devil are you ?

VEN. We two are viceroys over all the island ; and, when we are weary of governing, thou shalt succeed us.

TRIN. Do you hear, Ventoso ? I will succeed you in both places before you enter into them.

STEPH. Trincalo, sleep, and be sober ; and make no more uproars in my country.

TRIN. Why, what are you, sir ? what are you ?

STEPH. What I am, I am by free election ; and you, Trincalo, are not yourself : but we pardon your first fault, because it is the first day of our reign.

TRIN. Umph ! were matters carried so swimmingly against me, whilst I was swimming, and saving myself for the good of the people of this island ?

MUS. Art thou mad, Trincalo ? Wilt thou disturb a settled government, where thou art a mere stranger to the laws of the country ?

TRIN. I'll have no laws.

VEN. Then civil war begins.

[*Vent. and Must. draw.*  
STEPH. Hold, hold ! I'll have no bloodshed ; my subjects are but few : Let him make a rebellion by himself ; and a rebel, I, Duke Stephano, declare him.—Viceroys, come away !

TRIN. And Duke Trincalo declares, that he will make open war wherever he meets thee, or thy viceroys.  
[*Exeunt Steph., Must., and Vent.*

*Enter CALIBAN, with wood upon his back.*

TRIN. Ha! who have we here?

CAL. All the infections that the sun sucks up from fogs, fens, flats, on Prospero fall, and make him by inch-meal a disease. His spirits hear me, and yet I needs must curse; but they'll not pinch, fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i'the mire, nor lead me in the dark out of my way, unless he bid them. But for every trifle he sets them on me: Sometimes, like baboons, they mow and chatter at me, and often bite me; like hedge-hogs, then, they mount their prickles at me, tumbling before me in my barefoot way. Sometimes I am all wound about with adders, who, with their cloven tongues, hiss me to madness,—Hah! yonder stands one of his spirits sent to torment me.

TRIN. What have we here, a man, or a fish? This is some monster of the isle. Were I in England as once I was, and had him painted, not a holiday fool there but would give me sixpence for the sight of him. Well, if I could make him tame, he were a present for an Emperor.—Come hither, pretty monster: I'll do thee no harm. Come hither!

CAL. Torment me not; I'll bring thee wood home faster.

TRIN. He talks none of the wisest; but I'll give him a dram o' th' bottle, that will clear his understanding. Come on your ways, master monster, open your mouth. How now, you perverse moon-calf! what, I think you cannot tell who is your friend.—Open your chops, I say.

*[Pours wine down his throat.]*

CAL. This is a brave god, and bears celestial liquor. I'll kneel to him.

TRIN. He is a very hopeful monster.—Monster, what say'st thou? art thou content to turn civil

and sober, as I am! for then thou shalt be my subject.

CAL. I'll swear upon that bottle to be true; for the liquor is not earthly. Did'st thou not drop from heaven?

TRIN. Only out of the moon; I was the man in her, when time was.—By this light a very shallow monster.

CAL. I'll shew thee every fertile inch i' th' isle, and kiss thy foot: I pr'ythee be my god, and let me drink. *[Drinks again.]*

TRIN. Well drawn monster, in good faith.

BAL. I'll shew thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries; I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.—A curse upon the tyrant whom I serve! I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee.

TRIN. The poor monster is loving in his drink.

CAL. I pri'thee, let me bring thee where crabs grow; and I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts, shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how to snare the marmozet: I'll bring thee to clustered filberts. Wilt thou go with me?

TRIN. This monster comes of a good-natured race.—Is there no more of thy kin in this island?

CAL. Divine, there is but one besides myself; my lovely sister, beautiful and bright as the full moon.

TRIN. Where is she?

CAL. I left her clamb'ring up a hollow oak, and plucking thence the dropping honey-combs.—Say, my King, shall I call her to thee?

TRIN. She shall swear upon the bottle too. If she proves handsome, she is mine.—Here, monster, drink again for thy good news; thou shalt speak a good word for me. *[Gives him the bottle.]*

CAL. Farewell, old master, farewell, farewell!

*Sings.*

No more dams I'll make for fish ;  
Nor fetch in firing, at requiring ;  
Nor scrape trencher, nor wash dish :  
Ban, ban, Cackaliban,  
Has a new master, get a new man.

Hey-day ! freedom, freedom !

TRIN. Here's two subjects got already, the monster and his sister: Well, Duke Stephano, I say, and say again, wars will ensue, and so I drink. [*Drinks.*] From this worshipful monster, and mistress monster, his sister, I'll lay claim to this island by alliance.—Monster, I say, thy sister shall be my spouse. Come away, brother monster ; I'll lead thee to my butt, and drink her health. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Cypress Trees and a Cave.*

*Enter PROSPERO alone.*

PROS. 'Tis not yet fit to let my daughters know,  
I keep the infant duke of Mantua  
So near them in this isle ;  
Whose father, dying, bequeathed him to my care,  
Till my false brother, when he designed to usurp  
My Dukedom from me, exposed him to that fate  
He meant for me.  
By calculation of his birth, I saw  
Death threat'ning him, if, till some time were past,  
He should behold the face of any woman :  
And now the danger's nigh.—Hippolito !

*Enter HIPPOLITO.*

HIP. Sir, I attend your pleasure.

PROS. How I have loved thee, from thy infancy,  
Heaven knows, and thou thyself canst bear me  
witness ;  
Therefore accuse not me for thy restraint.

HIP. Since I knew life, you've kept me in a rock ;

And you, this day, have hurried me from thence,  
Only to change my prison, not to free me.  
I murmur not, but I may wonder at it.

PROS. O, gentle youth ! fate waits for thee  
abroad ;

A black star threatens thee, and death unseen  
Stands ready to devour thee.

HIP. You taught me  
Not to fear him in any of his shapes :—  
Let me meet death rather than be a prisoner.

PROS. 'Tis pity he should seize thy tender  
youth.

HIP. Sir, I have often heard you say, no  
creature liv'd

Within this isle, but those which man was lord of.  
Why, then, should I fear ?

PROS. But here are creatures which I named  
not to thee,

Who share man's sovereignty by nature's laws,  
And oft depose him from it.

HIP. What are those creatures, sir ?

PROS. Those dangerous enemies of men, called  
women.

HIP. Women ! I never heard of them before.—  
What are women like ?

PROS. Imagine something between young men  
and angels ;

Fatally beauteous, and have killing eyes ;  
Their voices charm beyond the nightingale's ;  
They are all enchantment : Those, who once  
behold 'em,

Are made their slaves for ever.

HIP. Then I will wink, and fight with 'em.

PROS. 'Tis but in vain ;  
They'll haunt you in your very sleep.

HIP. Then I'll revenge it on 'em when I wake.

PROS. You are without all possibility of revenge ;

They are so beautiful, that you can ne'er attempt,  
Nor wish, to hurt them.

HIP. Are they so beautiful ?

PROS. Calm sleep is not so soft, nor winter suns,  
Nor summer shades so pleasant.

HIP. Can they be fairer than the plumes of  
swans ?

Or more delightful than the peacock's feathers ?  
Or than the gloss upon the necks of doves ?  
Or have more various beauty than the rainbow ?—  
These I have seen, and, without danger, wond'ered  
at.

PROS. All these are far below them : Nature  
made

Nothing but woman dangerous and fair.  
Therefore if you should chance to see them,  
Avoid them straight I charge you.

HIP. Well, since you say they are so dangerous,  
I'll so far shun them, as I may with safety  
Of the unblemished honour which you taught me.  
But let them not provoke me, for I'm sure  
I shall not then forbear them.

PROS. Go in, and read the book I gave you last.  
To-morrow I may bring you better news.

HIP. I shall obey you, sir. [*Exit Hip.*]

PROS. So, so ; I hope this lesson has secured  
him,

For I have been constrained to change his lodging  
From yonder rock, where first I bred him up,  
And here have brought him home to my own cell,  
Because the shipwreck happened near his mansion.  
I hope he will not stir beyond his limits,  
For hitherto he hath been all obedience :  
The planets seem to smile on my designs,

And yet there is one sullen cloud behind :  
I would it were dispersed.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA.*

How, my daughters !  
I thought I had instructed them enough :  
Children ! retire ; why do you walk this way ?

MIR. It is within our bounds, sir.

PROS. But both  
Take heed, that path is very dangerous.  
Remember what I told you.

DOR. Is the man that way, sir ?

PROS. All that you can imagine ill is there.  
The curled lion, and the rugged bear  
Are not so dreadful as that man.

MIR. Oh me, why stay we here then ?

DOR. I'll keep far enough from his den, I  
warrant him.

MIR. But you have told me, sir, you are a man ;  
And yet you are not dreadful.

PROS. Ay, child ! but I  
Am a tame man ; old men are tame by nature,  
But all the danger lies in a wild young man.

DOR. Do they run wild about the woods ?

PROS. No, they are wild within doors, in  
chambers,  
And in closets.

DOR. But, father, I would stroak them, and  
make them gentle ;  
Then sure they would not hurt me.

PROS. You must not trust them, child : No  
woman can  
Come near them, but she feels a pain, full nine  
months.

Well, I must in ; for new affairs require my  
Presence. Be you, Miranda, your sister's guardian.  
*[Exit Pros.]*

DOR. Come, sister, shall we walk the other way ?  
The man will catch us else : We have but two  
legs,

And he, perhaps, has four.

MIR. Well, sister, though he have ; yet look  
about you,

And we shall spy him ere he comes too near us.

DOR. Come back ! that way is towards his  
den.

MIR. Let me alone ! I'll venture first, for sure  
he can

Devour but one of us at once.

DOR. How dare you venture ?

MIR. We'll find him sitting like a hare in's  
form,

And he shall not see us.

DOR. Ay, but you know my father charged us  
both.

MIR. But who shall tell him on't ? we'll keep  
each other's counsel.

DOR. I dare not, for the world.

MIR. But how shall we hereafter shun him, if  
We do not know him first ?

DOR. Nay, I confess I would fain see him too.

I find it in my nature, because my father has for-  
bidden me.

MIR. Ay, there's it, sister ; if he had said no-  
thing, I had been quiet. Go softly, and if you see  
him first, be quick, and beckon me away.

DOR. Well, if he does catch me, I'll humble  
myself to him, and ask him pardon, as I do my  
father, when I have done a fault.

MIR. And if I can but escape with life, I had  
rather be in pain nine months, as my father  
threatened, than lose my longing. [*Exeunt.*]



And yet there is one sullen cloud behind :  
I would it were dispersed.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA.*

How, my daughters !  
I thought I had instructed them enough :  
Children ! retire ; why do you walk this way ?

MIR. It is within our bounds, sir.

PROS. But both  
Take heed, that path is very dangerous.  
Remember what I told you.

DOR. Is the man that way, sir ?

PROS. All that you can imagine ill is there.  
The curled lion, and the rugged bear  
Are not so dreadful as that man.

MIR. Oh me, why stay we here then ?

DOR. I'll keep far enough from his den, I  
warrant him.

MIR. But you have told me, sir, you are a man ;  
And yet you are not dreadful.

PROS. Ay, child ! but I  
Am a tame man ; old men are tame by nature,  
But all the danger lies in a wild young man.

DOR. Do they run wild about the woods ?

PROS. No, they are wild within doors, in  
chambers,  
And in closets.

DOR. But, father, I would stroak them, and  
make them gentle ;  
Then sure they would not hurt me.

PROS. You must not trust them, child : No  
woman can  
Come near them, but she feels a pain, full nine  
months.

Well, I must in ; for new affairs require my  
Presence. Be you, Miranda, your sister's guardian.

*[Exit Pros.]*

DOR. Come, sister, shall we walk the other way ?  
The man will catch us else : We have but two  
legs,

And he, perhaps, has four.

MIR. Well, sister, though he have ; yet look  
about you,

And we shall spy him ere he comes too near us.

DOR. Come back ! that way is towards his  
den.

MIR. Let me alone ! I'll venture first, for sure  
he can

Devour but one of us at once.

DOR. How dare you venture ?

MIR. We'll find him sitting like a hare in's  
form,

And he shall not see us.

DOR. Ay, but you know my father charged us  
both.

MIR. But who shall tell him on't ? we'll keep  
each other's counsel.

DOR. I dare not, for the world.

MIR. But how shall we hereafter shun him, if  
We do not know him first ?

DOR. Nay, I confess I would fain see him too.

I find it in my nature, because my father has for-  
bidden me.

MIR. Ay, there's it, sister ; if he had said no-  
thing, I had been quiet. Go softly, and if you see  
him first, be quick, and beckon me away.

DOR. Well, if he does catch me, I'll humble  
myself to him, and ask him pardon, as I do my  
father, when I have done a fault.

MIR. And if I can but escape with life, I had  
rather be in pain nine months, as my father  
threatened, than lose my longing. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE III.

*Enter HIPPOLITO.*

HIP. Prospero has often said that nature makes  
Nothing in vain : Why then are women made ?  
Are they to suck the poison of the earth,  
As gaudy coloured serpents are ? I'll ask  
That question, when next I see him here.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA peeping.*

DOR. O sister, there it is ! it walks about  
Like one of us.

MIR. Ay, just so, and has legs as we have too.

HIP. It strangely puzzles me : Yet 'tis most  
likely

Women are somewhat between men and spirits.

DOR. Hark ! it talks :—sure this is not it my  
father meant,

For this is just like one of us : Methinks,  
I am not half so much afraid on't as  
I was ; see, now it turns this way.

MIR. Heaven ! what a goodly thing it is !

DOR. I'll go nearer it.

MIR. O no, 'tis dangerous, sister ! I'll go to it.  
I would not for the world that you should venture.  
My father charged me to secure you from it.

DOR. I warrant you this is a tame man ; dear  
sister,

He'll not hurt me, I see it by his looks.

MIR. Indeed he will ! but go back, and he shall  
eat me first :

Fie, are you not ashamed to be so much inquisitive ?

DOR. You chide me for 't, and would give  
yourself ?

MIR. Come back, or I will tell my father.  
Observe how he begins to stare already !  
I'll meet the danger first, and then call you.

DOR. Nay, sister, you shall never vanquish me  
in kindness.

I'll venture you no more than you will me.

PROS. [*within.*] Miranda, child, where are you ?

MIR. Do you not hear my father call ? Go in !

DOR. 'Twas you he named, not me ; I will but  
say my prayers,

And follow you immediately.

MIR. Well, sister, you'll repent it. [*Exit Mir.*]

DOR. Though I die for 't, I must have th' other  
peep.

HIP. [*Seeing her.*] What thing is that ? Sure 'tis  
some infant of

The sun, dressed in his father's gayest beams,  
And comes to play with birds : My sight is  
dazzled,

And yet I find I'm loth to shut my eyes :

I must go nearer it ;—but, stay a while ;

May it not be that beauteous murderer, woman,

Which I was charged to shun ? Speak, what art  
thou,

Thou shining vision ?

DOR. Alas, I know not ; but I'm told I am

A woman. Do not hurt me, pray, fair thing.

HIP. I'd sooner tear my eyes out, than consent  
To do you any harm ; though I was told

A woman was my enemy.

DOR. I never knew

What 'twas to be an enemy, nor can I e'er

Prove so to that, which looks like you : For  
though

I've been charged by him—whom yet I ne'er dis-  
obeyed,—

To shun your presence, yet I'd rather die

Than lose it ; therefore, I hope you will not have  
the heart

To hurt me : Though I fear you are a man,

VEN. You must kiss it then ; for I must tell you, we have chosen him Duke, in a full assembly.

TRIN. A Duke ! where ? What's he Duke of ?

MUS. Of this island, man. Oh, Trincalo, we are all made : The island's empty ; all's our own, boy ; and we will speak to his grace for thee, that thou mayest be as great as we are.

TRIN. You great ! what the devil are you ?

VEN. We two are viceroys over all the island ; and, when we are weary of governing, thou shalt succeed us.

TRIN. Do you hear, Ventoso ? I will succeed you in both places before you enter into them.

STEPH. Trincalo, sleep, and be sober ; and make no more uproars in my country.

TRIN. Why, what are you, sir ? what are you ?

STEPH. What I am, I am by free election ; and you, Trincalo, are not yourself : but we pardon your first fault, because it is the first day of our reign.

TRIN. Umph ! were matters carried so swimmingly against me, whilst I was swimming, and saving myself for the good of the people of this island ?

MUS. Art thou mad, Trincalo ? Wilt thou disturb a settled government, where thou art a mere stranger to the laws of the country ?

TRIN. I'll have no laws.

VEN. Then civil war begins.

*[Vent. and Must. draw.]*

STEPH. Hold, hold ! I'll have no bloodshed ; my subjects are but few : Let him make a rebellion by himself ; and a rebel, I, Duke Stephano, declare him.—Viceroys, come away !

TRIN. And Duke Trincalo declares, that he will make open war wherever he meets thee, or thy viceroys.

*[Exeunt Steph., Must., and Vent.]*

*Enter CALIBAN, with wood upon his back.*

TRIN. Ha! who have we here?

CAL. All the infections that the sun sucks up from fogs, fens, flats, on Prospero fall, and make him by inch-meal a disease. His spirits hear me, and yet I needs must curse; but they'll not pinch, fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i'the mire, nor lead me in the dark out of my way, unless he bid them. But for every trifle he sets them on me: Sometimes, like baboons, they mow and chatter at me, and often bite me; like hedge-hogs, then, they mount their prickles at me, tumbling before me in my barefoot way. Sometimes I am all wound about with adders, who, with their cloven tongues, hiss me to madness,—Hah! yonder stands one of his spirits sent to torment me.

TRIN. What have we here, a man, or a fish? This is some monster of the isle. Were I in England as once I was, and had him painted, not a holiday fool there but would give me sixpence for the sight of him. Well, if I could make him tame, he were a present for an Emperor.—Come hither, pretty monster: I'll do thee no harm. Come hither!

CAL. Torment me not; I'll bring thee wood home faster.

TRIN. He talks none of the wisest; but I'll give him a dram o' th' bottle, that will clear his understanding. Come on your ways, master monster, open your mouth. How now, you perverse moon-calf! what, I think you cannot tell who is your friend.—Open your chops, I say.

*[Pours wine down his throat.]*

CAL. This is a brave god, and bears celestial liquor. I'll kneel to him.

TRIN. He is a very hopeful monster.—Monster, what say'st thou? art thou content to turn civil

and sober, as I am! for then thou shalt be my subject.

CAL. I'll swear upon that bottle to be true; for the liquor is not earthly. Did'st thou not drop from heaven?

TRIN. Only out of the moon; I was the man in her, when time was.—By this light a very shallow monster.

CAL. I'll shew thee every fertile inch i' th' isle, and kiss thy foot: I prythee be my god, and let me drink.

*[Drinks again.]*

TRIN. Well drawn monster, in good faith.

BAL. I'll shew thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries; I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.—A curse upon the tyrant whom I serve! I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee.

TRIN. The poor monster is loving in his drink.

CAL. I prythee, let me bring thee where crabs grow; and I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts, shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how to snare the marmozet: I'll bring thee to clustered filberts. Wilt thou go with me?

TRIN. This monster comes of a good-natured race.—Is there no more of thy kin in this island?

CAL. Divine, there is but one besides myself; my lovely sister, beautiful and bright as the full moon.

TRIN. Where is she?

CAL. I left her clamb'ring up a hollow oak, and plucking thence the dropping honey-combs.—Say, my King, shall I call her to thee?

TRIN. She shall swear upon the bottle too. If she proves handsome, she is mine.—Here, monster, drink again for thy good news; thou shalt speak a good word for me.

*[Gives him the bottle.]*

CAL. Farewell, old master, farewell, farewell!

*Sings.*

No more dams I'll make for fish ;  
Nor fetch in firing, at requiring ;  
Nor scrape trencher, nor wash dish :  
Ban, ban, Cackaliban,  
Has a new master, get a new man.

Hey-day ! freedom, freedom !

TRIN. Here's two subjects got already, the monster and his sister: Well, Duke Stephano, I say, and say again, wars will ensue, and so I drink. [*Drinks.*] From this worshipful monster, and mistress monster, his sister, I'll lay claim to this island by alliance.—Monster, I say, thy sister shall be my spouse. Come away, brother monster ; I'll lead thee to my butt, and drink her health. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Cypress Trees and a Cave.*

*Enter PROSPERO alone.*

PROS. 'Tis not yet fit to let my daughters know,  
I keep the infant duke of Mantua  
So near them in this isle ;  
Whose father, dying, bequeathed him to my care,  
Till my false brother, when he designed to usurp  
My Dukedom from me, exposed him to that fate  
He meant for me.  
By calculation of his birth, I saw  
Death threat'ning him, if, till some time were past,  
He should behold the face of any woman :  
And now the danger's nigh.—Hippolito !

*Enter HIPPOLITO.*

HIP. Sir, I attend your pleasure.

PROS. How I have loved thee, from thy infancy,  
Heaven knows, and thou thyself canst bear me  
witness ;  
Therefore accuse not me for thy restraint.



HIP. Since I knew life, you've kept me in a rock ;

And you, this day, have hurried me from thence,  
Only to change my prison, not to free me.

I murmur not, but I may wonder at it.

PROS. O, gentle youth ! fate waits for thee  
abroad ;

A black star threatens thee, and death unseen  
Stands ready to devour thee.

HIP. You taught me  
Not to fear him in any of his shapes :—

Let me meet death rather than be a prisoner.

PROS. 'Tis pity he should seize thy tender  
youth.

HIP. Sir, I have often heard you say, no  
creature liv'd

Within this isle, but those which man was lord of.  
Why, then, should I fear ?

PROS. But here are creatures which I named  
not to thee,

Who share man's sovereignty by nature's laws,  
And oft depose him from it.

HIP. What are those creatures, sir ?

PROS. Those dangerous enemies of men, called  
women.

HIP. Women ! I never heard of them before.—  
What are women like ?

PROS. Imagine something between young men  
and angels ;

Fatally beauteous, and have killing eyes ;

Their voices charm beyond the nightingale's ;

They are all enchantment : Those, who once  
behold 'em,

Are made their slaves for ever.

HIP. Then I will wink, and fight with 'em.

PROS. 'Tis but in vain ;  
They'll haunt you in your very sleep.

HIP. Then I'll revenge it on 'em when I wake.

PROS. You are without all possibility of revenge ;

They are so beautiful, that you can ne'er attempt,  
Nor wish, to hurt them.

HIP. Are they so beautiful ?

PROS. Calm sleep is not so soft, nor winter suns,  
Nor summer shades so pleasant.

HIP. Can they be fairer than the plumes of  
swans ?

Or more delightful than the peacock's feathers ?

Or than the gloss upon the necks of doves ?

Or have more various beauty than the rainbow ?—

These I have seen, and, without danger, woud' red  
at.

PROS. All these are far below them : Nature  
made

Nothing but woman dangerous and fair.

Therefore if you should chance to see them,

Avoid them straight I charge you.

HIP. Well, since you say they are so dangerous,  
I'll so far shun them, as I may with safety

Of the unblemished honour which you taught me.

But let them not provoke me, for I'm sure

I shall not then forbear them.

PROS. Go in, and read the book I gave you last.  
To-morrow I may bring you better news.

HIP. I shall obey you, sir. [*Exit Hip.*]

PROS. So, so ; I hope this lesson has secured  
him,

For I have been constrained to change his lodging

From yonder rock, where first I bred him up,

And here have brought him home to my own cell,

Because the shipwreck happened near his mansion.

I hope he will not stir beyond his limits,

For hitherto he hath been all obedience :

The planets seem to smile on my designs,

And yet there is one sullen cloud behind :  
I would it were dispersed.

*Enter MIRANDA and DORINDA.*

How, my daughters !  
I thought I had instructed them enough :  
Children ! retire ; why do you walk this way ?

MIR. It is within our bounds, sir.

PROS. But both  
Take heed, that path is very dangerous.  
Remember what I told you.

DOR. Is the man that way, sir ?

PROS. All that you can imagine ill is there.  
The curled lion, and the rugged bear  
Are not so dreadful as that man.

MIR. Oh me, why stay we here then ?

DOR. I'll keep far enough from his den, I  
warrant him.

MIR. But you have told me, sir, you are a man ;  
And yet you are not dreadful.

PROS. Ay, child ! but I  
Am a tame man ; old men are tame by nature,  
But all the danger lies in a wild young man.

DOR. Do they run wild about the woods ?

PROS. No, they are wild within doors, in  
chambers,  
And in closets.

DOR. But, father, I would stroak them, and  
make them gentle ;  
Then sure they would not hurt me.

PROS. You must not trust them, child : No  
woman can  
Come near them, but she feels a pain, full nine  
months.

Well, I must in ; for new affairs require my  
Presence. Be you, Miranda, your sister's guardian.  
[*Exit Pros.*

DOR. Come, sister, shall we walk the other way ?  
The man will catch us else : We have but two  
legs,

And he, perhaps, has four.

MIR. Well, sister, though he have ; yet look  
about you,

And we shall spy him ere he comes too near us.

DOR. Come back ! that way is towards his  
den.

MIR. Let me alone ! I'll venture first, for sure  
he can

Devour but one of us at once.

DOR. How dare you venture ?

MIR. We'll find him sitting like a hare in's  
form,

And he shall not see us.

DOR. Ay, but you know my father charged us  
both.

MIR. But who shall tell him on't ? we'll keep  
each other's counsel.

DOR. I dare not, for the world.

MIR. But how shall we hereafter shun him, if  
We do not know him first ?

DOR. Nay, I confess I would fain see him too.  
I find it in my nature, because my father has for-  
bidden me.

MIR. Ay, there's it, sister ; if he had said no-  
thing, I had been quiet. Go softly, and if you see  
him first, be quick, and beckon me away.

DOR. Well, if he does catch me, I'll humble  
myself to him, and ask him pardon, as I do my  
father, when I have done a fault.

MIR. And if I can but escape with life, I had  
rather be in pain nine months, as my father  
threatened, than lose my longing. [*Exeunt.*]

MIR. Yes, but there is  
Some difference betwixt my Ferdinand,  
And your Hippolito.

DOR. Ay, there's your judgment :  
Your's is the oldest man I ever saw,  
Except it were my father.

MIR. Sister, no more ;  
It is not comely in a daughter, when  
She says her father's old.

DOR. But why do I  
Stay here, whilst my cold love perhaps may want  
me ?

I'll pray my father to make yours cold too.

MIR. Sister, I'll never sleep with you again.

DOR. I'll never more meet in a bed with you,  
But lodge on the bare ground, and watch my  
love.

MIR. And at the entrance of that cave I'll lye,  
And echo to each blast of wind a sigh.

*[Exeunt severally, looking discontentedly on one  
another.]*

ARIEL. Harsh discord reigns throughout this  
fatal isle,  
At which good angels mourn, ill spirits smile.  
Old Prospero, by his daughters robbed of rest,  
Has in displeasure left them both unblest.  
Unkindly they abjure each other's bed,  
To save the living and revenge the dead.  
Alonzo, and his son, are pris'ners made,  
And good Gonzalo does their crimes upbraid.  
Antonio and Gonzalo disagree,  
And would, though in one cave, at distance be.  
The seamen all that cursed wine have spent,  
Which still renewed their thirst of government ;  
And wanting subjects for the food of power,  
Each would, to rule alone, the rest devour.  
The monsters Sycorax and Caliban,

More monstrous grow by passions learned from  
man.

Even I, not framed of warring elements,  
Partake and suffer in these discontents.  
Why should a mortal by enchantments, hold  
In chains a spirit of ethereal mould ?  
Accursed magic we ourselves have taught,  
And our own power has our subjections wrought !  
[Exit.

---

ACT V. SCENE I.

*Enter PROSPERO, and MIRANDA.*

PROS. You beg in vain ; I cannot pardon him ;  
He has offended heaven.

MIR. Then let heaven punish him.

PROS. It will, by me.

MIR. Grant him, at least, some respite for my  
sake.

PROS. I, by deferring justice, should incense  
The deity against myself and you.

MIR. Yet I have heard you say, the powers  
above

Are slow in punishing ; and should not you  
Resemble them ?

PROS. The argument is weak.  
But I want time to let you see your errors ;  
Retire, and, if you love him, pray for him !

[*He's going.*

MIR. And can you be his judge and executioner ?

PROS. I cannot force Gonzalo or my brother,  
Much less the father to destroy the son ;  
It must be then the monster Caliban,  
And he's not here ; but Ariel strait shall fetch him.

*Enter ARIEL.*

ARIEL. My potent lord, before thou call'st, I  
come  
To serve thy will.

PROS. Then, spirit, fetch me here my salvage  
slave.

ARIEL. My lord, it does not need.

PROS. Art thou then prone to mischief, wilt  
thou be  
Thyself the executioner?

ARIEL. Think better of thy airy minister,  
Who, for thy sake, unbidden, this night has flown  
O'er almost all the habitable world.

PROS. But to what purpose was all thy  
diligence?

ARIEL. When I was chidden by my mighty lord,  
For my neglect of young Hippolito,  
I went to view his body, and soon found  
His soul was but retired, not sallied out:  
Then I collected  
The best of simples underneath the moon,  
The best of balms, and to the wound applied  
The healing juice of vulnerary herbs.  
His only danger was his loss of blood,  
But now he's waked, my lord, and just this hour  
He must be dressed again, as I have done it.  
Anoint the sword which pierced him with this  
Weapon-salve,\* and wrap it close from air, till  
I have time to visit him again.

PROS. Thou art my faithful servant;  
It shall be done: be it your task, Miranda,  
Because your sister is not present here:  
While I go visit your dear Ferdinand,  
From whom I will a while conceal the news,  
That it may be more welcome.

\* See vol. iii., page 38.

MIR. I obey you !  
 And with a double duty, sir : For now,  
 You twice have given me life.

PROS. My Ariel, follow me ! *[Exeunt severally.]*

## SCENE II.

HIPPOLITO *discovered on a couch*, DORINDA *by him*.

DOR. How do you find yourself ?

HIP. I'm somewhat cold ;  
 Can you not draw me nearer to the sun ?  
 I'm too weak to walk.

DOR. My love, I'll try !

*[She draws the chair nearer the audience.]*

I thought you never would have walked again ;  
 They told me you were gone to heaven ;  
 Have you been there ?

HIP. I know not where I was.

DOR. I will not leave till you promise me you  
 Will not die again.

HIP. Indeed, I will not.

DOR. You must not go to heaven, unless we go  
 Together ; for I have heard my father say,  
 That we must strive to be each other's guide,  
 The way to it will else be difficult,  
 Especially to those who are so young ;  
 But I much wonder what it is to die.

HIP. Sure 'tis to dream, a kind of breathless  
 sleep,

When once the soul's gone out.

DOR. What is the soul ?

HIP. A small blue thing, that runs about within  
 us.

DOR. Then I have seen it in a frosty morning,  
 Run smoking from my mouth.



HIP. But, dear Dorinda,  
What is become of him who fought with me ?

DOR. O ! I can tell you joyful news of him ;  
My father means to make him die to-day,  
For what he did to you.

HIP. That must not be,  
My dear Dorinda ; go, and beg your father,  
He may not die ; it was my fault he hurt me,  
I urged him to it first.

DOR. But if he live, he'll never leave killing  
you.

HIP. O no ! I just remember when I fell asleep,  
I heard him calling me a great way off,  
And crying over me as you would do ;  
Besides, we have no cause of quarrel now.

DOR. Pray, how began your difference first ?

HIP. I fought with him for all the women in  
the world.

DOR. That hurt you had was justly sent from  
heaven,  
For wishing to have any more but me.

HIP. Indeed I think it was, but I repent it ;  
The fault was only in my blood, for now  
'Tis gone, I find I do not love so many.

DOR. In confidence of this, I'll beg my father  
That he may live ; I'm glad the naughty blood,  
That made you love so many, is gone out.

HIP. My dear, go quickly, lest you come too late.

[*Exit Dor.*]

*Enter MIRANDA at the other door with HIPPOLITO's  
sword wrapt up.*

HIP. Who's this, who looks so fair and beautiful,  
As nothing but Dorinda can surpass her ?  
O ! I believe it is that angel-woman,  
Whom she calls sister.

MIR. Sir, I am sent hither

To dress your wound ; how do you find your strength ?

HIP. Fair creature, I am faint with loss of blood.

MIR. I'm sorry for't.

HIP. Indeed, and so am I,  
For if I had that blood, I then should find  
A great delight in loving you.

MIR. But, sir,  
I am another's, and your love is given  
Already to my sister.

HIP. Yet I find,  
That, if you please, I can love still a little.

MIR. I cannot be unconstant, nor should you.

HIP. O my wound pains me.

MIR. I am come to ease you.

*[She uncraps the sword.]*

HIP. Alas ! I feel the cold air come to me ;  
My wound shoots worse than ever.

*[She wipes and anoints the sword.]*

Does it still grieve you ?

HIP. Now methinks, there's something  
Laid just upon it.

MIR. Do you find no ease ?

HIP. Yes, yes, upon the sudden, all the pain  
Is leaving me. Sweet heaven, how I am eased !

*Enter FERDINAND and DORINDA to them.*

FERD. *[to Dor.]* Madam, I must confess my life  
is yours,  
I owe it to your generosity.

DOR. I am o'erjoyed my father let's you live,  
And proud of my good fortune, that he gave  
Your life to me.

MIR. How ? gave his life to her !

HIP. Alas ! I think she said so, and he said,  
He ow'd it to her generosity.

FERD. But is not that your sister with Hippolito?

DOR. So kind already?

FERD. I came to welcome life, and I have met  
The cruellest of deaths.

HIP. My dear Dorinda with another man?

DOR. Sister, what bus'ness have you here?

MIR. You see I dress Hippolito.

DOR. Y'are very charitable to a stranger.

MIR. You are not much behind in charity,  
To beg a pardon for a man, whom you  
Scarce ever saw before.

DOR. Henceforward let your surgery alone,  
For I had rather he should die, than you  
Should cure his wound.

MIR. And I wish Ferdinand had died before  
He owed his life to your entreaty.

FERD. [*to Hip.*] Sir, I am glad you are so well  
recovered.

You keep your humour still to have all women?

HIP. Not all, sir; you except one of the  
number,

Your new love there, Dorinda.

MIR. Ah, Ferdinand! can you become in-  
constant?

If I must lose you, I had rather death

Should take you from me, than you take yourself.

FERD. And if I might have chosen, I would have  
wished

That death from Prospero, and not this from you.

DOR. Ay, now I find why I was sent away,  
That you might have my sister's company.

HIP. Dorinda, kill me not with your unkindness;  
This is too much, first to be false yourself,  
And then accuse me too.

FERD. We all accuse  
Each other, and each one denies their guilt:

I should be glad it were a mutual error ;  
 And, therefore, first to clear myself from fault,  
 Madam, I beg your pardon, while I say,  
 I only love your sister. [To Dor.]

MIR. O, blest word !

I'm sure I love no man but Ferdinand.

DOR. Nor I, heaven knows, but my Hippolito.

HIP. I never knew I lov'd so much ; before  
 I feared Dorinda's constancy, but now  
 I am convinced that I loved none but her ;  
 Because none else can recompense her loss.

FERD. 'Twas happy, then, we had this little  
 trial ;

But how we all so much mistook I know not.

MIR. I have only this to say in my defence ;  
 My father sent me hither to attend  
 The wounded stranger.

DOR. And Hippolito  
 Sent me to beg the life of Ferdinand.

FERD. From such small errors left at first un-  
 heeded,

Have often sprung sad accidents in love.—  
 But see, our fathers and our friends are come  
 To mix their joys with ours.

*Enter PROSPERO, ALONZO, ANTONIO, and GON-  
 ZALO.*

ALON.[*to Prosp.*] Let it no more be thought of ;  
 Your purpose, though it was severe, was just.  
 In losing Ferdinand I should have mourn'd,  
 But could not have complained.

PROS. Sir, I am glad  
 Kind heaven decreed it otherwise.

DOR. O, wonder !  
 How many goodly creatures are there here !  
 How beauteous mankind is !

HIP. O, brave new world,

That has such people in't !

ALON. [*to Ferd.*] Now all the blessings  
Of a glad father compass thee about,  
And make thee happy in thy beauteous choice.

GON. I've inward wept, or should have spoken  
ere this.—

Look down, sweet heaven ! and on this couple  
drop

A blessed crown : for it is you chalked out  
The way, which brought us hither.

ANT. Though penitence,  
Forced by necessity, can scarce seem real,  
Yet, dearest brother, I have hope my blood  
May plead for pardon with you : I resign  
Dominion, which, 'tis true, I could not keep,  
But heaven knows too, I would not.

PROS. All past crimes  
I bury in the joy of this blessed day.

ALON. And, that I may not be behind in justice,  
To this young Prince I render back his Dukedom,  
And as the Duke of Mantua thus salute him.

HIP. What is it that you render back ? methinks  
You give me nothing.

PROS. You are to be lord  
Of a great people, and o'er towns and cities.

HIP. And shall these people be all men and  
women ?

GONZ. Yes, and shall call you lord.

HIP. Why, then, I'll live no longer in a prison,  
But have a whole cave to myself hereafter.

PROS. And, that your happiness may be com-  
plete,

I give you my Dorinda for your wife :  
She shall be yours for ever, when the priest  
Has made you one.

HIP. How can he make us one ? Shall I grow  
to her ?

PROS. By saying holy words you shall be  
joined  
In marriage to each other.

DOR. I warrant you, those holy words are  
charms :

My father means to conjure us together.

PROS. My Ariel told me, when last night you  
quarrelled, *[To his daughters.]*

You said you would for ever part your beds.

But what you threatened in your anger, heaven

Has turned to prophecy ;

For you, Miranda, must with Ferdinand,

And you, Dorinda, with Hippolito,

Lie in one bed hereafter.

ALON. And heaven make  
Those beds still fruitful in producing children,  
To bless their parents' youth, and grandsires'  
age.

MIR. *[to Dor.]* If children come by lying in a  
bed,

I wonder you and I had none between us.

DOR. Sister, it was our fault ; we meant, like  
fools,

To look 'em in the fields, and they, it seems,

Are only found in beds.

HIP. I am o'er-joyed,

That I shall have Dorinda in a bed ;

We'll lie all night and day together there,

And never rise again.

FERD. *[Aside to him.]* Hippolito ! You yet  
Are ignorant of your great happiness ;  
But there is somewhat, which, for your own and  
fair

Dorinda's sake, I must instruct you in.

HIP. Pray teach me quickly,  
How men and women, in your world, make love ;  
I shall soon learn, I warrant you.

*Enter ARIEL, driving in STEPHANO, TRINCALO, MUSTACHO, VENTOSO, CALIBAN, and SYCORAX.*

PROS. Why, that's my dainty Ariel ; I shall miss thee,

But yet thou shalt have freedom.

GON. O look, sir, look ! The master and the sailors—

The boatswain too—my prophecy is out,  
That if a gallows were on land, that man  
Could ne'er be drowned.

ALON. Now, blasphemy ; what, not one oath ashore !

Hast thou no mouth by land ? Why star'st thou so ? *[To Trincalo.]*

TRIN. What ! more Dukes yet ? I must resign my Dukedom ;

But 'tis no matter, I was almost starved in't.

MUS. Here's nothing but wild salads, without oil, or vinegar.

STEPH. The Duke and Prince alive ! Would I had now

Our gallant ship again, and were her master :  
I'd willingly give all my island for her.

VEN. And I my viceroyship.

TRIN. I shall need no hangman ; for I shall e'en hang myself, now my friend Butt has shed his last drop of life. Poor Butt is quite departed.

ANT. They talk like madmen.

PROS. No matter, time will bring 'em to themselves,

And now their wine is gone, they will not quarrel.  
Your ship is safe and tight, and bravely rigg'd,  
As when you first set sail.

ALON. This news is wonderful.

ARIEL. Was it well done, my Lord ?

PROS. Rarely, my Diligence.

GON. But pray, sir, what are those misshapen creatures ?

PROS. Their mother was a witch ; and one so strong,  
She would control the moon, make flows and ebbs,  
And deal in her command without her power.

SYC. O Setebos ! these be brave sprites indeed.

PROS. Go, sirrah, to my cell ! and, as you hope  
For pardon, trim it up. [To Cal.]

CAL. Most carefully. I will be wise hereafter.  
What a dull fool was I, to take those drunkards  
For gods, when such as these were in the world ?

PROS. Sir, I invite your Highness and your train  
To my poor cave this night ; a part of which  
I will employ, in telling you my story.

ALON. No doubt it must be strangely taking,  
sir.

PROS. When the morn draws, I'll bring you to  
your ship,  
And promise you calm seas, and happy gales.  
My Ariel, that's thy charge : Then to the elements  
Be free, and fare thee well !

ARIEL. I'll do it, master.

PROS. Now, to make amends  
For the rough treatment you have found to-day,  
I'll entertain you with my magic art.  
I'll, by my power, transform this place, and call  
Up those, that shall make good my promise to you.

SCENE II.—*Changes to the Rocks, with the arch of  
Rocks, and calm Sea. Music playing on the  
Rocks.*

PROS. Neptune, and your fair Amphitrite, rise ;  
Oceanus, with your Tethys too, appear ;  
All ye Sea-Gods, and Goddesses, appear !  
Come, all ye Tritons ; all ye Nereids, come,  
And teach your saucy element to obey :



For you have Princes now to entertain,  
And unsoiled beauties, with fresh youthful lovers.

NEPTUNE, AMPHITRITE, OCEANUS, and TETHYS,  
*appear in a chariot drawn with sea-horses ; on  
each side of the chariot, Sea-Gods and God-  
desses, Tritons, and Nereids.*

ALON. This is prodigious !

ANT. Ah ! what amazing objects do we see !

GON. This art doth much exceed all human  
skill.

*Song.*

AMPH. My lord, great Neptune, for my sake,  
Of these bright beauties pity take ;  
And to the rest allow  
Your mercy too.  
Let this enraged element be still.  
Let Æolus obey my will :  
Let him his boisterous prisoners safely  
keep  
In their dark caverns ; and no more  
Let them disturb the bosom of the  
deep,  
Till these arrive upon their wished-  
for shore.

NEPT. So much my Amphitrite's love I prize,  
That no commands of her's I can de-  
spise.

Tethys no furrows now shall wear,  
Oceanus no wrinkles on his brow,  
Let your serenest looks appear !  
Be calm and gentle now.

NEPT. { Be calm, ye great parents of the floods  
and the springs,  
and AMPH. { While each Nereid and Triton plays,  
revels, and sings.

OCEAN. Confine the roaring winds, and we  
Will soon obey you cheerfully.

[*Here the Dancers mingle with the Singers.*

*Chorus* { Tie up the winds, and we'll obey ;  
*of TRIT.* { Upon the floods we'll sing and play,  
*& NER.* { And celebrate a halcyon day. [*Dance.*

NEPT. Great nephew, Æolus, make no noise,  
Muzzle your roaring boys.

[*Æolus appears.*

AMPH. Let 'em not bluster to disturb our ears,  
Or strike these noble passengers with  
fears.

NEPT. Afford 'em only such an easy gale,  
As pleasantly may swell each sail.

AMPH. While fell sea-monsters cause intestine  
jars,

This empire you invade by foreign  
wars.

NEPT. But you shall now be still,  
And shall obey my Amphitrite's will.

ÆOLUS { You I'll obey, who at one stroke can  
*descends.* { make,  
                  { With your dread trident, the whole  
                  { earth to quake.

Come down, my blusterers, swell no  
more,

Your stormy rage give o'er.

Let all black tempests cease,

And let the troubled ocean rest ;

Let all the sea enjoy as calm a peace,

As where the halcyon builds her  
quiet nest.

[*Winds from the four corners appear.*

To your prisons below,

Down, down you must go !

You in the earth's entrails your revels  
may keep ;

But no more till I call shall you trouble  
the deep. *[Winds fly down.]*

Now they are gone, all stormy wars shall  
cease ;

Then let your trumpeters proclaim a  
peace.

AMPH. Tritons, my sons, your trumpets sound,  
And let the noise from neighbouring  
shores rebound.

Chorus. { Sound a calm.  
Sound a calm.  
Sound a calm.  
a calm.  
Sound a calm.

*[Here the Tritons, at every repeat of "Sound a calm,"  
changing their figure and postures, seem to sound  
their wreathed trumpets made of shells.]*

*[A short symphony of music, like trumpets, to  
which four Tritons dance.]*

NEPT. See, see, the heavens smile ; all your  
troubles are past,  
Your joys, by black clouds, shall no  
more be o'ercast.

AMPH. On this barren isle ye shall lose all  
your fears,  
Leave behind all your sorrows, and  
banish your cares.

BOTH. { And your loves and your lives shall in  
safety enjoy ;  
No influence of stars shall your quiet  
destroy.

Chorus { And your loves, &c.  
of all. { No influence, &c.

*[Here the Dancers mingle with the Singers.]*

OCEAN. We'll safely convey you to your own  
happy shore,

And your's and your country's soft  
peace we'll restore.

TETHYS. To treat you, blest lovers, as you sail  
on the deep,

The Tritons and sea-nymphs their  
revels shall keep.

{ On the swift dolphins' backs they  
shall sing and shall play ;

BOTH. { They shall guard you by night, and  
delight you by day.

Chorus { On the swift, &c.

of all. { And shall guard, &c.

[Here the Dancers mingle with the singers.

[A dance of twelve Tritons.

MIR. What charming things are these ?

DOR. What heavenly power is this ?

PROS. Now, my Ariel, be visible,  
And let the rest of your aerial train  
Appear, and entertain them with a song,  
And then farewell, my long-loved Ariel.

SCENE changes to the Rising Sun, and a number  
of Aerial Spirits in the air ; Ariel flying from the  
Sun, advances towards the Pit.

ALON. Heaven ! What are these we see ?

PROS. They are spirits, with which the air  
abounds

In swarms, but that they are not subject  
To poor feeble mortal eyes.

ANT. O wondrous skill !

GON. O power divine !

ARIEL, and the rest, sing the following song.

Where the bee sucks, there suck I ;

In the cowslip's bed I lie ;

There I couch when owls do cry.

On the swallow's wings I fly,  
After summer merrily.  
Merrily, merrily shall I live now,  
Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.

*Song ended, ARIEL speaks, hovering in the air.*

ARIEL. My noble master!  
May theirs and your blest joys never impair!  
And, for the freedom I enjoy in air,  
I will be still your Ariel, and wait  
On airy accidents that work for fate.  
Whatever shall your happiness concern,  
From your still faithful Ariel you shall learn.

PROS. Thou hast been always diligent and kind.  
Farewell, my long-loved Ariel! thou shalt find  
I will preserve thee ever in my mind.  
Henceforth this isle to the afflicted be  
A place of refuge, as it was to me:  
The promises of blooming spring live here,  
And all the blessings of the ripening year.  
On my retreat let heaven and nature smile,  
And ever flourish the Enchanted Isle. [*Exeunt.*]

## EPILOGUE.

Gallanta, by all good signs it does appear,  
That sixty-seven's a very damning year,  
For knaves abroad, and for ill poets here.

Among the Muses there's a gen'ral rot,  
The rhyming monsieur, and the Spanish plot :  
Defy or court, all's one, they go to pot.

The ghosts of poets walk within this place,  
And haunt us actors wheresoe'er we pass,  
In visions bloodier than King Richard's was.

For this poor wretch he has not much to say,  
But quietly brings in his part o'th' play,  
And begs the favour to be damned to-day.

He sends me only like a sh'riff's man here,  
To let you know the malefactor's near,  
And that he means to die *en cavalier*.

For if you should be gracious to his pen,  
Th' example will prove ill to other men,  
And you'll be troubl'd with them all again.

---



## ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA.

---

### Vol. I.

Prefatory Memoir, page v., line 16.—For 1744 read 1780.

Page lvii.—Upon the commotions which preceded the Restoration, and particularly upon Sir George Booth's insurrection, Sir William Davenant fell into fresh troubles, and underwent another imprisonment, from which, however, he was speedily released. — *Whitelocke's Mem.*, p. 682. He complimented General Monk upon his good designs, and his great capacity, in a short poem, and his Majesty, King Charles the Second, upon his return, in a very long one.

Page 84. — *Charles Davenant.*—Charles Davenant, the eldest son of Sir William, was born, it has been conjectured, some time in 1656. He was sent to the Grammar School of Cheame, in the county of Surrey. It is said he was scarcely twelve when his father died. He became a Fellow Commoner of Baliol College in Midsummer Term 1671, but left the university without taking a degree. His play of *Circe*, written when he was about nineteen, was well received, 1675, and frequently acted afterwards with just applause. He had a considerable share in this theatre in right of his father, but he turned his attention to other pursuits. He applied himself to the study of Civil Law, in which he had the degree of Dr conferred upon him by the University of Cambridge. He was elected with James St Amand, Esq., to represent the burgh of St Ives in Cornwall, in the first Parliament of King James II., summoned to meet 19 May 1685; and about the same time was jointly empowered, with the Master of the Revels, to inspect all plays, to preserve the stage from immorality. He had also been appointed a Commissioner of the Excise, and so continued from 1683 to 1689. "His thorough acquaintance with the laws and constitution of the kingdom, joined to his great skill in figures, and his happiness in applying that skill according to the principles advanced by



Sir William Petty, for the perfecting Political Arithmetic enabled him to enter deeply into the management of affairs, and procured him great success as a political writer."—*Oldmixon's History of the Stuarts*, vol. ii. p. 217. His merit as a political writer has been always acknowledged. He died 6th Nov. 1714.—*Help to History*, vol. iii., p. 236.

Among the legacies left by the Duchess of Shrewsbury who died in July 1720, there is:—

"To Mrs Davenant, Daughter of the late Duke, £100."

Her Grace was Adelhida, daughter of the Marquis of Faliotti, in Italy, descended by her mother from Sir Robert Dudley, the celebrated son of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, and created Duke of Northumberland abroad. By her, his only wife, the Duke of Shrewsbury had no issue, and, dying on the 1st of February 1717-18, his Marquisate and Dukedom became extinct. The Earldom of Shrewsbury, however, devolved upon the next heir male, and is at present the premier Earldom in this country.

Mrs Davenant is presumed to have been a natural daughter of the Duke and the wife of Dr Davenant.

It may be well to note that the Duchess' brother, Ferdinando, Marquis de Paleotti, was executed at Tyburn, 17th March 1718, for the murder of his footman.

"We hear, that upon the Dutchess of Richmond's presenting an humble petition to her Majesty, setting forth the most deplorable circumstances of six daughters of the late Dr Davenant (who were left quite destitute of all manner of subsistence, by their brother's leaving the kingdom), her Majesty, with great goodness, recommended their miserable condition to the King; and his Majesty, out of his Royal Bounty, was graciously pleased to order each of them a pension of £50 a-year."—[20 May 1732.]—*Newspaper*.

Fletcher's Comedy of the Woman Hater was revived by Sir William Davenant, who wrote a new Prologue in Verse, which is printed in the folio edition of his works, p. 249.

"12 Sept. 1667.—To the Duke's house, where 'Tu quoque' was the first time acted, with some alterations of Sir W. Davenant's; but the play is very silly, methinks; for I, and others that sat by me, Mr Povey and Mr Progers, were weary of it; but it will please the citizens."—*Pepys*.

This play was written by John Cooke, and first printed in 1614, having been published by the Dramatist, Thomas Heywood. It was called "Greene's Tu quoque," on account of the celebrity of the actor, Thomas Greene, in the part of Bubble. It was afterwards known as the City Gallant, the second title being made the first. It is reprinted in Dodsley's Old Plays.

Vol. II. page 9, *Poppæa* (Platonic Lovers).

*Poppæa*, the wife of Nero, is said to have invented the mask to guard her complexion from the sun.

lb., p. 57. *The Tub*. See Mayno's City-Match, A. 5, S. 3. Also note to Timon of Athens in Stevens' edition of Shakespeare, 1778, vol. 8.

Vol. II. p. 121, *Brasil Pole* (The Wits).

"Your sticks ought to be heavy, made of Brasile, Lignum Vitæ, or some other weighty wood, which at the broad end must be tipt with ivory."—"Of Billiards," in *Complent Gamester*, 1710.

"Drake resolved to build his pinnaces in this convenient Port, which they finished in seven days, by the help of some large trees growing there near forty yards about, being white, and as heavy as brasil-wood."—*Life of Sir Francis Drake*.

Vol. III. p. 15, *The Unfortunate Lovers*.

"11 Sep. 1667.—To the Duke of York's playhouse, and there saw part of 'The Ungratefull Lovers,' and sat by Beck Marshall, whose hand is very handsome."—*Pepys*. There is no such play as the Ungrateful Lovers—evidently a mistake for "The Unfortunate Lovers."

"8 April 1668.—With Lord Brouncker to the Duke of York's playhouse, where we saw 'The Unfortunate Lovers,' no extraordinary play, methinks."—*lb.*

"3 Dec. 1668.—So to the office, where we sat all the morning; and at noon home to dinner, and then abroad again, with my wife, to the Duke of York's Playhouse, and saw 'The Unfortunate Lovers'—a mean play, I think, but some parts very good, and excellently acted."—*lb.*

Vol. III. p. 196, *Captain Cooke*. Entertainment at Rutland House.

12 Aug. 1660.—*Pepys*.—"After sermon, a brave anthem of Captain Cooke's, which he himself sung, and the King was well pleased with it."

"13 Feb. 1666-7.—To Dr Clerke's, by invitation. Here was his wife painted, and her sister Worshipp, a widow now, and mighty pretty, in her mourning. Here was also Mr Pierce and Mr Floyd, Secretary to the Lords Commissioners of Prizes, and Captain Cooke to dinner, an ill and little mean one, with foul cloth and dishes, and everything poor. Discoursed most about plays and the opera, where, among other vanities, Captain Cooke had the arrogance to say that he was fain to direct Sir W. Davenant in the breaking of his verses into such and such lengths, according as would be fit for musick, and how he used to swear at Davenant, and command him that way, when W. Davenant would be angry, and find fault with this or that note—a vain coxcomb he is, though he sings and composes so well. Dr Clerke did say that Sir W. Davenant is no good judge of a dramattick poem, finding fault

with his choice of Henry the 5th, and others, for the stage, when I do think, and he confesses, 'The Siege of Rhodes' as good as ever was writ. Cooke gone, Dr Clarke fell to reading a new play, newly writ, of a friend's of his; but, by his discourse and confession afterwards, it was his own."—*Pepys*.

Volume V. page 8, *The Man's the Master*.

"26 March 1668.—To the Duke of York's house, to see the new play, called 'The Man is the Master,' where the house was, it being not one o'clock, very full. But my wife and Deb. being there before, with Mrs Pierce and Corbet and Betty Turner, whom my wife carried with her, they made room; and there I sat, it costing me 8s. upon them in oranges, at 6d. a-piece. By and by the King came; and we sat just under him, so that I durst not turn my back all the play. This play is a translation out of French, and the plot Spanish, but not anything extraordinary at all in it, though translated by Sir W. Davenant, and so I found the King and his company did think meanly of it, though there was here and there something pretty: but the most of the mirth was sorry, poor stuffe, of eating of sack posset and slabbering themselves, and mirth fit for clowns; the prologue but poor, and the epilogue little in it but the extraordinariness of it, it being sung by Harris and another in the form of a ballad."—*Pepys*.

From this opinion, however, he was subsequently induced to depart.

"7 May 1668.—To the Duke of York's house, and there saw 'The Man's the Master,' which proves, upon my seeing it again, a very good play."

Volume V. p. 396, *Tempest*.

*The Tempest, or The Enchanted Island. A Comedy. As it is now acted at his Highness the Duke of York's Theatre. London: Printed by T. N. for Henry Herringham, at the Blew Anchor, in the Lower Walk of the New-Exchange. 1674.*

P. 402, *Beard*. There is a mezzotint engraving of a scene from the English opera, "Love in a Village," by Finlayson, after Zoffany, 1 March 1768, in which Beard appears as Squire Hawthorn in the act of singing "Let gay ones and great," the others being Sam Foote in the character of Justice Woodcock, and Dunstall in that of Hoop.

One of the "London sights" alluded to by Trincalo were the two Indians brought away from Virginia by Captains Amidas and Barlow, of Raleigh's first expedition (27 April 1584), who discovered Virginia.

92  
1718



